



CHAOTIC SWORD GOD

BOOK 01

Xin Xing Xiao Yao

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Chaotic Sword God

(混沌剑神)

by

Xin Xing Xiao Yao

(心星逍遥)

Synopsis

Jian Chen, the publicly recognized number one expert of the Jianghu. His skill with the sword went beyond perfection and was undefeatable in battle, After a battle with the exceptional expert Dugu Qiubai who had gone missing over a hundred years ago, Jian Chen succumbed to his injuries and died.

After death, Jian Chen's spirit was transmigrated into a completely foreign world. Following an extremely fast growth, his enemies piled up one after another before becoming gravely injured once more. On the gates of death, his spirit had mutated, and from that moment henceforth, he would tread on a completely different path of the art of the sword to become the sword god of his generation.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Pipipingu @ [Gravity Tales](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1: Jian Chen

Within a seemingly endless chain of mountain ranges, there were two sword-shaped mountain peaks well over a thousand feet tall and a hundred meters apart from each other as it towered under the vast ocean of clouds.

Both of these sword-shaped mountains were extremely precipitous and looked as if two gods had once stabbed their swords into the world. No matter where one looked, there was no way to climb up these mountains.

At the very top of these peaks, there was only less than a hundred meters between one peak to the next. There was a faint amount of fog that hampered the visibility of the area to a confusing degree. However, despite the hazy visibility, one would still be able to faintly make out two people standing at the very top of the mountain peaks calmly and motionlessly as if they were stone statues. Only their clothes and wind had fluttered with the fierce gale of wind that blew across the sky.

Between these two people, one of them was a youth that was no older than 20 years old. This youth was incredibly handsome with a flawless facial appearances. It could be said that his appearances was simply unrivaled throughout the world and was a natural lady killer. His rather ordinary-looking eyes contained a unique amount attractiveness and fascination to them and seemed as if it could steal the soul of whomever.

The youth had long black hair with a length that reached his waist without being tied up in any way, allowing it to float freely

in the fierce wind as if it was dancing. On his back was a single long sword that was wrapped up in a thick white layer of cloth. On the exquisite sword hilt that stuck out from the cloth, one could make out the two words “Light Wind”. What was most puzzling about the sword however was the fact that there had been no ropes binding it to the youth at all. It seemed as if it was stuck to the back of the youth without any chance of falling—clearly a very hard display to explain.

This youth’s name was Jian Chen, the number one expert with a name that shook the Heavens and the Jianghu with the moniker of “Sword God”. His quick sword techniques had long since reached perfection and could be considered the sword master of the generation. Despite being only 20 or so years old, he had already reached a realm of great heights.

The details regarding Jian Chen were relatively unknown to the people of the Jianghu. Aside from that he was an orphan with no affiliations to any school or sect, there was nothing else known about him. His history was essentially a riddle, and the strong style of martial arts and the exquisite sword style he used had been an utter mystery on where to learn it.

And on the other sword-shaped peak a hundred meters away was a single large man wearing black robes. This was an elderly man who looked to be around 50 to 60 years old with hair that was tied up in the same fashion of the neck of a crane. Both of his elderly eyes lit up with a lively spirit that seemed to shine with a light that lit up the entire area. His gaze had been like a sharp sword that would make anyone unwilling to look straight at him. In his hand was a black and thick long sword. But what was most surprising was that this giant sword had no edge to it.

This elderly man was the legendary figure that had disappeared from the Jianghu over a hundred years ago: Dugu Qiubai. But that was only a nickname of his since no one had any idea on what his true name or identity was. The reason for this was because over a hundred years ago, he had defeated every single ‘unparalleled’ super-experts. Nowadays, the amount of people that knew anything about Dugu Qiubai and were still alive were far and few. But even now, the splendid light he had cast in his former days had been passed on from generation to generation. A hundred years later, his strength was surely much stronger than before; meaning that there was no one that knew just how strong Dugu Qiubai had become.

Silently, Dugu Qiubai stared at the 20 or so years old Jian Chen from a hundred meters away. His eyes were extremely terrifying and seemed to contain a sharp sword-like glare that seemed as if it could freeze someone at times.

“Jian Chen, despite being so young, you have a strength that is no weaker than mine. Your achievements in the way of the sword is something that even I can only hope to attain. But unfortunately, you’ve killed my one dear disciple, leaving me no choice but to take revenge. No matter what, I will act in place of my disciple for the sake of justice today.” Dugu Qiubai’s spoke darkly. His previously calm voice had already started to fill up with a bloodlust that would cause people to tremble and shake.

But Jian Chen’s face remained calm as ever as he stared back at Dugu Qiubai impassively. His white robes fluttered gently into the air while the hair that dangled at his waist was sent dancing in the wind freely.

“I cannot be blamed for that. It was your disciple that decided to offend me first. It could only be blamed on his lack of skill that he was killed by my own sword.” Jian Chen’s lips opened and closed gently as the words came flowing out from his mouth.

Laughing angrily, Dugu Qiubai spoke, “A lack of skill? Very well then! Then today I will see just how experienced you are. Let this old man see where you will be able to execute me with your Light Wind Sword.”

As he spoke, Dugu Qiubai waved his Heavy Iron Sword. Immediately, a strong amount of Sword Qi began to escape the sword before shooting straight for Jian Chen a hundred meters away with the speed of a lightning bolt.

Unsheathing his sword with an impassive face, Jian Chen quickly drew out the long sword that had been on his back to his hand. This double-edged sword was about 1.3 meters long and two fingers wide with a white light. Stabbing forward with the sword, an even more fierce amount of Sword Qi appeared from the sword and shot towards the jet of Sword Qi from Dugu Qiubai with a speed almost impossible to see with the naked eye.

“Bang!”

The two rays of Sword Qi collided with a loud explosion that rocked the eardrums. A large wave of Qi scattered away from the epicenter with great speeds, scattering the lingering wisp of mist and clouds nearby.

Straight away, Jian Chen and Dugu Qiubai flew straight for each other, leaving the twin peaks they had initially been standing on. As they reached the midway point of the two peaks, they began to engage each in a fierce battle midair.

The two men had strikes that were impeccably fast and the sounds made from their weapons striking against each other had been an endless stream of metallic rings. A sharp amount of Sword Qi shot out from all directions from the two and left giant holes in the landscape around them. As a result, countless of rocks had been sent cascading down a thousand meters below.

Within several breaths worth of time, Jian Chen and Dugu Qiubai had already exchanged several hundred blows at lightning quick speeds. Afterwards, the two men had leapt back to their respective mountain peaks. Each person were in a worse-for-wear state and had more than enough tears in their previously perfect clothing.

With a serious expression that seemed to grow even more grim each second, Dugu Qiubai growled, “What a fast sword, it is no wonder that no one in the Jianghu is able to break past your sword. But, it is powerless against this old man.” Dugu Qiubai paused for a moment before continuing to say, “If we continue on like this, the victor of this match will be hard to determine. We may as well use our strongest strike to find out the victor.” With that, Dugu Qiubai suddenly exploded with power that seemed as if it was a single giant sword that pierced into the skies.

Growing serious as well, Jian Chen too began to spike with a

large amount of power that was by no means weaker than Dugu Qiubai.

The power of the two men continued to escalate with an earth-shattering amount of force that filled the entire area. Soon enough, the power of the two began to cover the both of them and all over the entire mountains. Even the clouds themselves had a hole in them from the power exuded by the two. A fierce gale began to scream and whistle with an ear-piercing sound that was reminiscent of a ghost wailing into the winds. Down in the forests below, countless of animals began to let out terrified sounds as they began to scuttle away from the area as far as their limbs could take them. The strength of the two men on the peaks continued to escalate as they prepared to unleash their strongest strike.

“Kacha!” “Kacha!”

Not too far away in the mountains, several small trees were unable to withstand the power of the two. Snapping and breaking into several pieces, they were sent flying into the air and far away from the place.

While Jian Chen and Dugu Qiubai’s strength continued to rise, a stream of Qi began to stream around them in a single revolution. Any trees or pieces of grass in the area had been pressed down against the ground in the face of their might, and several of the larger trees had even begun to shake back and forth.

At the same time, a dazzling glow of white light appeared in Jian Chen’s Light Wind Sword while a jet-black light appeared in Dugu Qiubai’s Heavy Iron Sword.

The Qi circulating around the two men began to grow stronger and stronger until there was a rich white glow that surrounded Jian Chen completely, and a deep black glow that surrounded Dugu Qiubai inside. The both of them had disappeared into their respective colors while all that was left to see was two balls of light shining with the exact opposite colors of each other.

“Yin!”

Jian Chen’s Light Wind Sword had already been filled with a resplendent glow and had started to shake with a powerful Sword Qi that would cause anyone to feel frightened. His black hair had fluttered crazily in the winds while the white robe he wore fluttered with it. His entire body floated in midair, and a single look was all it took for him to be identified as a war god with an indomitable strength.

As the two men’s strength continued to climb up to the peak, the two men suddenly let out a furious roar that shook the heavens like a bolt of lightning and pierced the ear drums. Straight away, a beautiful bright white light and a dark black light shot towards each other with incredible speed. In the instant where the two would collide against each other...

There had been no sound as one would expect. When everything had calmed down, one could see that Jian Chen and Dugu Qiubai had changed spots. Each one were now on the other mountain peak away from each other with an equally pal face. A steady stream of blood could be seen flowing from Jian Chen’s chest, staining his pure white robes instantly. In that split-instance

where the two sides had crossed paths, Dugu Qiubai's sword had pierced through Jian Chen's heart.

As for Dugu Qiubai, he had lost his entire right arm, meaning that he would not be able to wield a sword any longer. The Heavy Iron Sword that had been in it had long since dropped down a thousand meters into the cliffs below. At the time where he had pierced Jian Chen's heart, he had lost his right arm in exchange.

Standing silently on top of the mountain peak, a stream of fresh blood began to slowly leak from his mouth. His white face continued to grow paler and paler before it became as pale as paper. His heart had been pierced by Dugu Qiubai's sword, meaning that he was doomed to be stuck in an impasse where death was inevitable.

"Hahaha..." Suddenly, Dugu Qiubai began to laugh from the mountain peak he was standing on. "Jian Chen, with your talent, you would most likely be able to defeat me given several years. But how unfortunate it is for you that your strength is lacking from mine. In the end, you were still defeated by my hand." As he spoke, Dugu Qiubai sighed shortly. "Ai...for an old man like me to see to the funeral of a genius, what a sorrowful matter. But however, I must do what I must to avenge my disciple."

Sensing that he was slowly being cut away from the power of life, Jian Chen began to close his eyes. At that moment, he was at peace with himself. Death to him was no important manner. After all, after traveling so many years in the Jianghu, Jian Chen had killed many men and death had long since dulled his emotions. The only emotion he had felt in his heart was that he would have no more

chances to explore the pinnacle of the way of the sword.

Just as Jian Chen submitted himself to a realm of calm, a sudden but strange feeling appeared within Jian Chen's mind. In that crucial moment, Jian Chen's spirit seemed to have harmonized with his long sword. He was the sword, and the sword was him; there had been no difference between the two of them. It was almost as if the sword had already become a part of his soul.

At the same time, a powerful and pure amount of world energy began to descend from the skies before flowing into his mind one stream after another. As it entered, it began to perfectly harmonize with his soul, and as the energy of the world continued to pour into him, Jian Chen could distinctly feel that his own "spirit" began to grow at an accelerated rate. Simultaneously, his soul began to leave his body and into the boundless mountains and fields ahead. At this very moment, everything within five thousand meters could be distinctly seen in Jian Chen's mind. He could even see a single mosquito on the ground living as it pleased without a problem.

At the verge of his death, he had somehow managed to breakthrough....

Chapter 2: Changyang Xiang Tian

Suddenly, the sword in Jian Chen's hand started to control itself; it was as if the longsword had a mind of its own. Unexpectedly, the sword shot toward Dugu Qiubai like a bolt of lightning, traveling at a very high speed.

The speed of the longsword was almost inconceivable. Dugu Qiubai only reacted when the sword had reached his throat. The sword was infused with an extraordinarily fierce sword qi. Dugu Qiubai widened his eyes in fear just as the longsword pierced through his neck. After finishing the strike, mist appeared from the hilt of the sword. The mist swirled around in midair momentarily before the sword returned to Jian Chen's hand.

A fist-sized hole slowly appeared in the middle of Dugu Qiubai's throat. The sword tip had expanded as it pierced through Dugu Qiubai's neck, enlarging the wound. If not for that, it would have been impossible for a sword that thin to create a wound of that size.

Dugu Qiubai's eyes were wide open as he stared at the sword, not believing what he saw. After all, he had just witnessed an impossible feat. He slowly opened his mouth to say something, but unfortunately, his throat had already been impaled, rendering him speechless. With a final look of disbelief and terror, he slowly crumpled to the floor, never to stand again.

Jian Chen clasped his sword silently before looking at the collapsed Dugu Qiubai; a gasp was threatening to escape from his own mouth. He didn't think that in this final hour of life he would

make a breakthrough into the realm of the Sword God. But however it was for naught, as he himself was close to death as well.

Inwardly sighing, Jian Chen's eyes slowly began to dim. Even though the breakthrough empowered his body, it was very hard to escape death, especially when one's innards are skewered.

Soon after, Jian Chen followed Dugu Qiubai's footsteps into the afterlife, his body falling to the ground, proceeding into the abyss.

After Jian Chen had fallen, the area in which he and Dugu Qiubai had fallen started to shake. So much so, that the two sword-like mountain peaks emitted a loud sound that shook the heavens and split the two mountains in half. Countless boulders and stones tumbled down the mountainside, creating an avalanche in all directions. The sky turned purple and green and the heavens and earth were illuminated. The colors danced and mixed to form a beautiful picture, and it was a shame that neither Jian Chen nor Dugu Qiubai were alive to see it, or the series of events which would follow afterwards...

.....

Inside a spacious and luxurious mansion, was a room decorated with great splendor. Outside this room, a large group of people had gathered. A young male paced relentlessly in front of the doors, his face was filled with anxiety and worry. He looked to be thirty years of age, and he gave off a majestic aura. Although he had aged a little, one could still see the handsome youth that he once was. He was wearing a gold lined silver chang pao, which added to his handsome appearance, and he was surrounded by an aura similar

to that of a host. His face was resolute, even his eyebrows were knitted together, almost forming a single lump.

Three meters outside of the room, a group of 30 people, ranging from young to old, were all lined up nervously. The elders of the group looked to be 60 to 70 years old already, with white hair all over their wrinkled faces. However, despite their age, their eyes could still make people shiver and quake in fear from the godly lights that flickered within. Judging by the glow from their eyes, the amount of fear they could inflict on others was so much that people wouldn't take them to be frail old men at all, but rather robust and healthy middle aged men with the strengths of a tiger and dragon combined. The rest of the men were all around 30 to 40 years old, with imposing auras and eyes that revealed nothing. It was obvious with only one glance that this was not a group of normal people.

And within the room in front of them, the sounds of a woman crying in pain could be heard.

“Madam, keep on pushing, the baby is almost out. I repeat, the baby is almost out...” An elderly but impatient voice could be heard through the pain-filled echoes. Those who could hear the voice could tell the owner of the voice was an elderly woman.

Outside the room, the middle aged man who was anxiously pacing about, abruptly froze in place and spoke with a sense of urgency, “Ai...this has been going on for an entire day and night already, how has Yun'er not given birth? If this drags on for any longer, I'm afraid even Yun'er will face an unfavorable situation.” Even the man's voice was filled with never ending anxiety.

“My lord, please don’t worry too much. Madam Yun’er will definitely be fine. You forget that Madam Yun’er is a bright Saint Master.” A white haired elder spoke with a tone of confidence, but even his face could not hide the look of worry on it.

“Ai...” The lord clad in a white chang pao began to sigh again repeatedly; the worry and anxiety on his face did not decrease even the slightest amount.

Eventually, after the men outside had waited for two more hours, an excited voice came from within the room. “My lord, my lord! Madam Yun’er has given birth! She has given birth and is safe! And so is the boy!” The amount of emotion in the voice was stirring up excitement throughout the house.

Upon hearing that, the middle age man that was waiting anxiously became slack-jawed; the wariness in his face had been completely wiped out and replaced with an expression of joy and emotions. He was so emotionally moved that he couldn’t find the right words to say, and blew open the doors so quickly that it was as if they didn’t exist in the first place. His speed was almost inconceivable; no ordinary man could possess enough strength to pull off the same amount of speed he had just displayed.

The middle aged man immediately flashed over to the bedside and sat down beside it. His face was full of concern as he looked at the woman who was reclining on top of it. “Yun’er, how are you feeling; you have to be all right!” Despite his excitement, his voice was gentle and was brimming with concern.

On top of the bed was a woman who was in the peak of her 20's. Her appearance was so beautiful, it could cause an entire state to fight and collapse upon itself for her hand. Her exhausted and pale face was drenched in sweat, but still managed to retain a divine look.

The female looked up with a tired expression at the man by her side and smiled, "My dear husband, I am fine. Please just allow me to see my baby."

"Oh! Yes! Right away! As long as Yun'er is fine." The man started to smile with joy, but he turned around and looked at the bundled up child in the midwife's arms. Right as he was about to speak, the eyebrows on the midwife knitted together and stared with rapt attention at the infant she was holding. Her arms continued to rock the bundle as she muttered, "Cry baby, go on and cry. What child are you that you do not cry? How odd, I have delivered many babies, and although the numbers have not reached over a thousand babies, I have helped given birth to over 900. However, this is the first time I have seen a freshly delivered baby that does not cry."

But at the same time she spoke, the men who were outside all piled into the room, each one of them had a smile on their faces. One after another each person began to congratulate the woman on the bed.

The middle aged man was still smiling greatly and spoke to the woman, "Yun'er, you should rest up first. I'll bring the child over in a second." The man then got up and walked towards the midwife, "What's wrong? Could it be there's some sort of problem

with the child?" His voice had dropped down slightly; sometimes, some children would be born with diseases. This occurrence wasn't uncommon, and would actually happen often. He was already afraid that his newly born child had some sort of problem.

Hearing his question, the midwife's face went sour as she looked at him, and said respectfully, "My lord, the young lord has no problems that I am aware of, but according to my 10 years of experience, every newborn child will start to cry. But this young lord is different; look here, ever since his birth, he hasn't uttered even a single peep of sound. This is an extremely strange situation."

The man's forehead creased in thought as he looked at the bundled infant. The infant's eyes were bright and showed no impurities within them as it looked all over the place. One moment he would look over here, and the next moment he would look over there. He was very cute in this way, and just by looking at him you would think there were no problems with him.

However, the man didn't notice that the infant's bright eyes didn't have a single impurity in the vast abyss of his pupils. In fact, it had seemed like his eyes held a profoundness that shook the man's inner self, though he himself didn't believe it.

Then as he put his hand on top of the infant, he saw a fine layer of yellow light suddenly float around his palm.

Seeing the middle aged man's movement, the midwife's face became uneasy. She was only a small midwife, one of society's lowest class, but even she was afraid if there was a problem with

the child. If there was one, then the man would blame her, and she would not be able to recover from it. Despite the fact that this situation was not related to her in anyway, she wouldn't have the power to say otherwise.

The man quickly took his hand back, his own heart was finally at ease. A smile returned to his face once more as he laughed, "The child is safe and sound, I can't find even a single problem." He took the bundle from the midwife with another laugh.

Upon hearing this, the midwife let out a breath of air in relief. With her heart rate slowly going back to normal, even she started to laugh in excitement, "What the lord says is correct, perhaps this is a representation of the young lord's future. He will surely become a strong and unique individual as he grows."

As he listened to the midwife, knowing that this was an extraordinarily vague thing to say, he still couldn't help but laugh, "Yes yes yes, I can only hope so. Someone come here! Let us reward Mother Hong with a hundred gold coins!"

The midwife's face grew joyously and immediately said with emotion, "I give the lord many thanks, many many thanks indeed!"

The father brought the infant to his mother on the bed and smiled, "Yun'er, look! This is our child, look how cute he is!"

Yun'er held onto the child tenderly and gave him a kiss on the forehead and spoke happily, "Dear husband, since our child is a

boy, then as per our agreement beforehand, we shall call him Changyang Xiang Tian.”

Laughing, the husband said, “Not bad, I hereby officially declare that this child’s name will be Changyang Xiang Tian! Come all! I invite all of my guests here today, tomorrow there will be a feast in my son’s honor! We shall celebrate greatly....”

In a flash, a year had already passed. In front of a small lake, the figure of a child that wasn’t even one meter tall stood about with a blank expression. Both of his eyes were staring attentively at the rock garden in the middle of the lake. The little boy was wearing a gorgeous set of clothes, but the expression on his face was unusually complex in a way that was strange to see on a one year old boy.

To be precise, this boy was Changyang Xiang Tian. And in this moment inside of his mind, a hair raising scene was constantly playing. Just as if watching a movie reel, all he could see were pictures of mountain ranges that looked like two giant swords. Another image of a handsome young man of 20 years old with a sword came to his mind, along with the hundred year old battle hardened figure of Dugu Qiubai. Finally at the time of his immediate death, he remembered the breakthrough he had experienced that had allowed him to reach into the realm of the “Sword God”. After that, he remembered stabbing Dugu Qiubai through the neck, ending in their mutual destruction...

Chapter 3: Refining The Body

Xiang Tian looked at his tiny body and gasped; the look on his face could only be described as complex. Over the past year, he had lost count of how often moments of his past life had flashed before his eyes. The memories were so fresh in his mind, it was almost as if everything happened only yesterday; as if engraved into the very depths of his soul.. No matter what he did, he couldn't forget the memories, but he understood now; he was called Jian Chen in his past life. After his death, he had carried with him the mysteries of his memory and soul, and had been reincarnated.

He retained all of his memories even after his reincarnation, so even after being born, he already knew how to talk. And according to the conversations from the people at his bedside, he had a rough idea of what type of household he was in. More importantly, he had learned that he was no longer in the same world as before. This was a new world that Jian Chen had never heard of.

Even the mansion Jian Chen lived in had a name—Changyang Mansion. The mansion belonged to one of Luo'er City's top 4 families, each had a foothold of power and influence. His own father was actually the leader of the Changyang clan named Changyang Ba. His mother was named Bi Yuntian and was the fourth concubine for the clan leader. Although she wasn't the primary wife, she still had a considerable amount of power in the family because she held the title of a Radiant Saint Master.

Even though Jian Chen didn't understand what a Radiant Saint Master was, he did understand that it was because his mother was a Radiant Saint Master that her status was high in the clan, and there were many that respected her.

In regards to Jian Chen himself, he was the Changyang clan's fourth young lord, and had a majestic status within the clan. Jian Chen also had 2 elder brothers and an elder sister. The first brother was Changyang Hu, the sister was Changyang Mingyue, and the second brother was Changyang Ke. The four of them shared the same father, but each had a different mother. Excluding Changyang Hu, Changyang Mingyue and Changyang Ke had met with him multiple times and were both only a few years older than him. The eldest of the siblings was Changyang Ming Yue, who was 4 years old; 3 years older than Jian Chen. Changyang Ke was 2 years older than him. Aside from them 4 however, there were still many other children in the family.

At this time, an elderly housekeeper came up from behind Jian Chen and spoke softly, "4th young lord, it's getting late, and your mother is looking for you."

Jian Chen was immediately jolted back to reality. Looking at the sky, he had come to the sudden realization that the sky was dimming, an indication of the impending night. Unconsciously, Jian Chen had been standing there for the whole afternoon. "I understand, Chang Bai. I will go back in a second."

Chang Bai was the housekeeper for the Changyang clan and essentially took care of every single matter within the family. Because of this, his status within the clan was fairly high. Although he was only a housekeeper, he had garnered a good amount of respect, practically the same amount as the head of the house himself had.

A smile adorned Chang Bai's face as he watched Jian Chen with high expectations. Even when Jian Chen was only half a year old, he hadn't needed the help of others to walk, and quickly learned how to speak within 8 months. Not only could he speak clearly, but he could even communicate with others. With these two achievements alone, Jian Chen had already been called a genius, and many were eagerly awaiting to see how he would grow up.

At night, Jian Chen accompanied his mother, Bi Yuntian, to eat dinner in the dining hall. The dining hall they both sat in was special; only the head of the house, his concubines, and his children could eat there.

When Bi Yuntian and Jian Chen arrived at the dining hall, three beauties were already sitting at the circular dinner table. Each one of them looked to be in their 20s, and two of them each held a child in their arms. One of the children was a boy, and the other was a girl. The boy was around 3-4 years old, and was healthy but chubby. He was the third son and young lord of Changyang Ba-Changyang Ke.

The moment Changyang Ke saw Jian Chen, hostility and hatred swelled up in his eyes. It was clear to see that he was brimming with the intent to start something, and one could tell that he held a bias against Jian Chen.

The four ladies could all sense the hostility radiating from Changyang Ke towards Jian Chan, but none of them spared a second thought about it. In their minds, this was merely a small matter between children, and definitely not something that would be of great matter.

The other child was a 4-5 year old girl with two ponytails. Her bright eyes looked at the still hostile Changyang Ke and laughed. With her two dimples that appeared with each laugh, she looked exceptionally cute. Although she was underaged now, it was certain that after she grew older, she would have beauty that could rival the gods. This child was the second born of Changyang Ba, as well as the sole female child—Changyang Mingyue.

“Fourth brother, you’re here! Come and sit!” Upon seeing Jian Chen, the smile on her face had become even more splendid, as she waved him over.

Jian Chen nodded towards Changyang Mingyue as a greeting, and sat down with his mother at the dinner table.

Bi Yuntian began to pamper Jian Chen, softly saying, “Xiang’er, say hello to your aunts and siblings.”

Without any other choice, Jian Chen looked at the pampered ladies, “Hello eldest aunt, second aunt, third aunt, second sister, and third brother.” Ever since his mother had discovered that he could speak efficiently, she had been ecstatically teaching him the basic rules of etiquette. With Jian Chen’s “go with the flow” mindset, he didn’t object to her teachings. It would prove beneficial to him in the long run as well in this new world.

When he had first arrived in this strange new place, he had struggled intensely with this new body. Since he was reincarnated with his old memories, he still felt like Jian Chen. Deep within his

soul, he did not think this new life was his, but as time went on, he gradually accepted his new body and life. No matter what though, Bi Yuntian was still his mother. Although it was a mystery on how he managed to retain his memories, they had been from a place on another world. It had no relationship to this new world, so Jian Chen had decided to hide away the memories in the deepest part of his mind. It was time to accept his new life and give it everything he had.

The three ladies all smiled at Jian Chen. One of the ladies wearing golden robes laughed, “Sister Yun Er, it would appear that Xiang Tian is getting more and more intelligent. Ai... it’s getting harder and harder to only see him as a one year old child. I truly am envious of you for having such an intelligent child.” The lady who spoke was the second wife of Changyang Ba and mother to Changyang Mingyue–Bai Yushuang,

“That’s right, younger sister Yun Er, what second sister said is correct. Each and every day, I grow even more fond of Xiang Tian.” Sitting next to Jian Chen with a tranquil look was another one of the 4 ladies. She was the third wife–Yu Feng Yan.

“Xiang Tian is certainly a child genius. To be able to walk at 6 months and speak at 8, these are feats that no other child his age would be able to replicate. I find myself anxious to see how much Saint Energy he has when he undergoes the test in 2 years, though I do sincerely hope that he will give us all a pleasant surprise when the time comes.” The next lady who spoke was significantly older, and seemed much more temperamental than the others. She was the first wife–Ling Long.

The moment Ling Long finished her sentence, a deep manly voice spoke out, “I agree. I look forward to when Xiang Tian reaches his 3rd year for this pleasant surprise as well.” A 30 year old man entered the dining hall, carrying himself with the manner of a master. With a white chang pao decorated with golden outlines, and a head of black hair that reached his shoulders, the man gave off a relaxed atmosphere.

“Husband!”

“Father!”

Immediately after seeing the man, the 7 people at the table all stood up at once and called out one after the other. Jian Chen was no exception, and softly cried out.

This young man was indeed the head of the Changyang clan, Changyang Ba.

Changyang Ba strolled down to the dinner table and sat down with a gentle smile on his face. With a look at Jian Chen, he asked, “Xiang’er, are you feeling happy living here still?”

Jian Chen nodded his head, “Yes!”

A smile curled up on Changyang Ba’s face, “Xiang’er, if you ever feel closed in this stuffy old house, feel free to explore the outside and experience it for yourself!”

“I know, father!” Jian Chen replied.

Changyang Ba was indescribably happy at how intelligent Jian Chen was and how much he differed from any other one year old, .

The family dinner went by joyously and the meal was consumed quickly. Afterwards, Jian Chen returned to his room alone. Based on his age, he should have been sleeping in the same room as his mother, but he had requested that he wanted his own room. Regarding this request, Jian Chen had been firm, and wouldn't be persuaded otherwise. Bi Yuntian had ended up accepting his request.

And so that night, Jian Chen sat crossed-legged on his bed, with both of his hands on his knees. The palms of his hands were facing upwards, as was his face, as he silently went through the motions of practicing the first principle of Azulet Sword Law.

Azulet Sword Law; this was what Jian Chen had been studying for 20 years in his previous world and had become the strongest weapon in his arsenal. It was a type of cultivation that was both rare and formidable; it had principles that were profound and also contained many strong techniques.

The Azulet Sword Law was something that Jian Chen had stumbled upon when he was a child. He had accidentally fallen off of a cliff while playing in the mountains, and somehow managed to survive the fall by landing in a pool of water. When he had awoken, he had found himself trapped in a cavern with fish as his only source of food. After finding the manual, he had dedicated himself to learning it, and finally succeeded after 10 years. With his

breakthrough, he was able to jump out of the cavern and return to the lands above.

Jian Chen was a war orphan who had been taken in by his great grandfather and grandmother. 10 years had past while he was trapped in the cave, so when he had returned to the village, his great grandparents had already passed away from old age a long time ago. After paying his respects to them, the now alone Jian Chen left his little mountainside village to travel the world by himself.

Jian Chen had accepted what life had given him in his past life, and he had accepted this new life as well. With this acceptance, he had started cultivating and refining his body for half a year, ready to regain his strength.

Chapter 4: Further Training

The Azulet Sword Law was divided into 12 different layers. The first layer was cultivating the body. A common saying was that if one wanted strong martial arts, then one must first have a strong body. After all, martial arts relied on the efficient use of the body; hence why the first layer of Azulet Sword Law was pertaining to the body.

Most martial artists relied on strengthening their bodies in order to improve their own strength. Therefore they would strengthen their bodies and end up with bulging muscles everywhere. It was clear to the naked eye how strong someone was by build alone. Some people had even built their bodies to the point of their bones being as hard as reinforced steel bars.

To Jian Chen, this type of method to train the body would only ruin the body and would only narrow the potential of the human body. So although this method would increase one's strength past a normal persons, at the same time, it would bring about a large amount of damage to the body. The people who trained this way generally had a short life span. When they were in the elderly phase, diseases and impairment within the body would happen at a higher frequency for them.

The wandering martial artists of the world have many different sects with their own way of cultivating the body but to Jian Chen, these methods were mediocre. These were not the right paths to takes; even the Shaolin way of [Yijin Jing](#) was no exception.

Even though the principles of Yijin Jing were beautiful in how it

cultivated the inner strength and how it also strengthened the outer muscles, but Yijin Jing's way of strengthening the body was still the same. It didn't strengthen the very core of a human and only focused on external force only. This could not be considered the pinnacle of cultivating the body if it did not target the entire body.

The methods written in Azulet Sword Law were truly profound and magical. By absorbing both the Qi of the heavens and the earth and then transforming it, one could incorporate it within the bones of the body. This allowed every organ and even every single cell in the body to be strengthened to their limits. The original frailty would be cast away and the body would reach the most optimal state while giving the body endless amounts of benefits like a longer lifespan. When one practiced the later methods, your corporeal body would reach new heights in strength; and as Azulet Sword Law indicated, if one could reach the highest levels of cultivating the body, then they could even live as long as the heavens and the earth.

However this method was associated with one's own strength. If one's Qi was stronger than the physical body, then Azulet Sword Law would use that Qi and incorporate that into the body to become stronger. In the case that one's physical body and one's Qi strength were both at an equilibrium, then one would have to make a breakthrough to reach the next level. Only with this cycle would one be able to continuously improve their entire body without limits.

Jian Chen was slowly absorbing the world's Qi in a neverending stream and was circulating it in a cycle throughout his body. Then under Jian Chen's control, the Qi would be incorporated into his

cells and organs.

Ever since he had arrived at this strange new world, one of the few things that had excited Jian Chen was the World Essence. The World Essence was extremely dense, perhaps a hundred times more dense than the Qi back in his world. Compared to the previous world, Jian Chen had nowhere to go but the old mountain range where he had died. One world was paradise, the other world was hell, the difference was simply that clear to see, so Jian Chen was extremely happy about that.

However what Jian Chen couldn't understand was the difference between the World Essence of this world and the World Essence of his past world. While both were the same in feeling, Jian Chen was carefully discovering that the World Essence had an extra type of energy. This type of energy was a small part of the World Essence and was interconnected as if blended together so that they could not be separated.

When he had absorbed this new type of energy into his body, nothing negative happened. So because of that, Jian Chen had not tried to remove the clearly different energy from the World Essence. However, Jian Chen was now curious in the matter, thoughts and ideas were swirling around his head, but this new energy was not that simple to be figured out so easily.

After the never ending World Essence had been absorbed into his body, Jian Chen could clearly feel every single artery and cell in his body become stronger. The World Essence that was taken into his body was like a giant health tonic that made his body feel alive as it absorbed it. His body was like a giant thirsty tiger that wanted

more and more. While at the same time, Jian Chen was feeling a pleasurable sensation from all over, and felt free from worry as the feeling carried him away.

In a flash, another year had gone by. Jian Chen had been in this strange world for 2 whole years now. During those 2 years, Jian Chen didn't take a single step outside of the Changyang mansion. Everyday during his free time, Jian Chen was alone in his room practicing the first principle of Azulet Sword Law-body cultivation.

Perhaps it was because this World Essence was a hundred times denser than the World Essence in his past world, but in one year Jian Chen had already reached major success in cultivating his body. At the current moment without a doubt, If an average person swung an average sword at him, then his body would not be scratched at all. He had trained his body so much that even a single cut would not be made.

Of course, this was only what Jian Chen had thought of himself, he wouldn't dare try it out on himself personally.

In this past year, Jian Chen's body was developing at such a fast rate, it was inconceivable. In a single year, he had already reached a height of 1.2 meter, an abnormal height for a 2 year old. This height had actually made him look to be closer to 5 or 6 years old instead.

Because of this, everyone in the Changyang mansion had been alarmed beyond belief, although many of them still had vast expectations for him. Expectations hoping that he would be a

genius with unlimited potential, but everyone would have to wait for when he turned 3 in order to confirm anything.

Regarding this expectation put on him, Jian Chen couldn't help but feel helpless. He didn't understand that the reason why his body had grown so fast was due to practicing Azulet Sword Law because back in his previous world, he did not have Azulet Sword Law by his age.

Although he still accompanied his mother Bi Yuntian to the dining hall, but as usual he had still shut himself off in his room every night. Sitting on the bed with crossed legs and his hands on his knees, he would close his eyes and face the sky once more.

But this time, Jian Chen wasn't cultivating his body, but instead he was pondering. It had been 2 years since he arrived at this world, and in those 2 years, he had never seen the outside world from beyond Changyang mansion. He spent the majority of his days locked up to cultivate his body. Up until now, he still did not understand much about this world. Outside of Changyang mansion, he practically knew nothing about this world, even what the outside world looked like.

He understood in his heart that in everyone else's eyes, he was a 2 year old boy. A 2 year old boy would generally be happily cherished by his parents while growing up carefreely. Jian Chen however, would not be in that situation at all.

As he was thinking on his bed, Jian Chen finally decided that tomorrow morning, he would ask his parents. It was important for him to know and understand what the outside world was like in

this world.

After thinking it out, Jian Chen slowly opened his eyes and got off the bed. Tonight, he would not be cultivating his body on top of his bed as usual, but instead he would stand in the central point of his room with his eyes closed.

In Jian Chen's mind, a pair of mysterious footsteps began to appear. Then a picture appeared inside of Jian Chen's mind. Just like a movie reel, the picture never seemed to stop, but all he could see was a figure wearing a white chang pao. It was a young man holding a sword that was quickly pacing through a mysterious land. He was walking so fast, that a regular person would have a hard time seeing him clearly. Because the young man was walking far too quickly despite the small amount of room he was in, a series of after images were trailing behind him.

This figure was the previous incarnation of Jian Chen, and the steps that were appearing were actually symbolizing Azulet Sword Law, truly a mysterious image.

As the morning daylight shone through a crack of a window into his room, Jian Chen suddenly opened his eyes as he stood in the middle of the room. In this hour, he had finally moved; his legs moved so fast that it was practically a blur. For his legs to maintain this type of speed for some time, even most martial artists wouldn't be able to keep up in this condition.

Jian Chen's legs were moving in a mysterious way as he walked about in a certain trajectory. As he moved around his room quickly, his legs had whipped up a small whirlwind due to the

extremely fast paced movement he was making.

Although this event did not go on for long, Jian Chen stopped moving, as his face was turning paler by the second. Slowly gasping for breath, both of Jian Chen's legs couldn't help but shiver and quake as he paused.

Jian Chen slowly walked to his window and sat down next to it. Bending his lower back, both of his arms massaged his legs continuously. Pursuing the mysterious footsteps for that one moment had caused his legs to become incomparably weak. He couldn't even use the smallest amount of power in his legs anymore.

Jian Chen shook his head helplessly, no matter what type of martial art to cultivate himself, the first thing he had to do was attain a better build. Not only that but the more profound a martial art was, the higher its requirement. When it came to the exercise of following the footsteps, if he did not have a strong physical physique and a strong Qi, then he would not have been able to last very long. Of course, normal practitioners would not be able to hold up for as long as he had, and if they had tried, then they would have exerted their body beyond what it could take and damage it.

It was not easy to acquire a profound ability after all.

Sitting by his bed after massage his legs, he waited for his leg to be returned to their original state before sitting cross-legged on the bed again. Once more he began to absorb the spiritual Qi from the world and absorb it into his body.

The night went by quickly and in a flash the sky was filled with the colors of the day. And at that moment, a sound could be heard coming outside of Jian Chen's room.

"Fourth master, it's daytime, time to get up!". came the obviously feminine cry.

Hearing the sound, Jian Chen slowly opened his eyes and cried out in his childish voice, "I know, sister Hong Hua, I'm already awake!" With that said, he climbed down from his bed.

Yet at this time, the door was opened, and two girls around the age of 18 came walking in. Both of them were carrying a small serving tray with a basin on it. Rolled around the basin was a new clean and tidy towel meant for him to wash his face with. The other tray had also another basin for Jian Chen to wash his teeth in to prepare himself for the day.

Chapter 5: Tian Yuan Continent

“Sister Hong Hua, sister Dong Mei, thank you for your troubles.” Looking at the the 18 year old girls, Jian Chen thanked the two quietly.

These two maids were the servants of the Changyang family and were specifically meant to cater to the everyday needs of Jian Chen. Since Jian Chen was always by himself in his room, his mother Bi Yuntian had hired two servant girls to wait upon him.

Hearing Jian Chen, the two girl laughed sweetly and then said, “Fourth master, by all means, don’t be so polite. We are just doing what we are supposed to do.”

“That’s right, fourth master, please refrain from being so courteous in the future. If the elders hear about the treatment you’re giving us, then we may be penalized harshly.” The other servant girl had said.

Jian Chen smiled, “Don’t worry, I wouldn’t talk like this if others were around.” Jian Chen was extraordinarily intelligent, and the Changyang mansion had strict rules regarding statuses. If the fourth master was to be heard saying such words, then it would be sure that the two girls would not be punished lightly.

After washing his face, Jian Chen departed from his room and walked toward his mother’s room as usual. The distance between the two wasn’t far; it was only 20 meters away from his own room.

Shortly after entering the room, Jian Chen saw his mother at the dressing table putting on makeup with the help of her own two servant girls standing next to her.

“Xiang’er, you’re here earlier than usual today.” With a glance at Jian Chen, a gentle smile full of love and adoration could be seen.

Seeing that expression of love on her face, Jian Chen’s own heart became soft. In his previous world, Jian Chen had lost both parents when he was small and thus had never known about motherly love, or even experienced it. But when he had come to this world, he had clearly felt the power of this motherly love. And so because of that, he had started to treasure this feeling of love slowly over time.

Jian Chen walked up to the side of his mother and rubbed his stomach and said with an embarrassed laugh, “Your son is hungry!” After the rigorous exercise from last night, he had been feeling the slight pangs of hunger.

Bi Yuntian placed a gentle hand on top of Jian Chen’s head and laughed, “Then in a moment mother will take you to the dining hall to eat.”

“Yea!” Jian Chen nodded his head, a look of satisfaction on his face. In his heart, he secretly enjoyed the loving concern his mother had shown him.

Pausing for another second, Jian Chen opened his mouth again, “Mother!”

Bi Yuntian looked at Jian Chen warmly and said, “Xiang’er, if you have something you want to say, say it!”

Jian Chen hesitated for a second before recollecting his inner thoughts. Looking at his mother again, he said, “Mother, could you please tell your child what the outside world is like.”

Hearing Jian Chen, Bi Yuntian was clearly shocked by his question. Opening her mouth, she asked, “Xiang’er, could it be you’re interested in the outside world?”

“Your son is only curious!” He answered.

Bi Yuntian laughed, “Xiang’er, the outside world is extremely vast and also extremely complicated. The matters of the outside world could not be made clear through words alone. If you want to learn about it, then it would be best if you went to the library and read a few books on it.” Even as she voiced her answer, Bi Yuntian’s face had looked a little bit helpless. “But Xiang’er, you still don’t know how to read, even if you go to the library, you wouldn’t be able to read any of the words.”

“Mother, then why don’t we bring some people to teach me how to read?” Jian Chen’s voice contained some dissatisfaction.

Giggling, Bi Yuntian said, “Xiang’er, you are only 2 years old. Your mother has never heard or seen a 2 year old child learn how to read before. Even in the entire Tian Yuan continent, this type of situation has never happened before. Generally speaking, the

earliest any child has ever started to learn to read was when they were around 4 to 5 years old.”

Jian Chen understood instantly, “Mother, your son wants to learn to read. Could you please find some people to try and teach me still?”

Bi Yuntian was speechless, but a happy smile crept up on her face nonetheless. “Xiang’er, learning to read is an exhausting task as well as being extremely boring. You must understand that there are many different words in the continent. This isn’t something that can be learned quickly, are you sure you want to start learning now?”

Jian Chen nodded his head in confirmation, “I am!”

Hearing Jian Chen’s answer, Bi Yuntian’s smile became even more splendid. With a happy laugh, she said, “If this is what Xiang’er’s request is, then mother will support you entirely.” Turning her head, she called out, “Xiao Liu! In a moment, go to Lore City and hire the most prestigious teacher and bring him to the mansion so he can teach my Xiang’er how to read”!

“Yes, my lady!” The servant girl who was combing Bi Yuntian’s hair agreed respectfully.

“Xiang’er, it’s been a decent amount of time, let us go to the dining halls before the both of us starve.”

The day went by quickly, and when the second day came, the teacher Bi Yuntian had hired arrived at the mansion and began to teach him to read.”

And so from that moment on, Jian Chen would spend his daytime earnestly studying how to read. Since he retained some mental fortitude and knowledge from his memories of the past. Learning the written language of this new world was not all that difficult. Combined with the teacher who was putting his heart and soul in teaching him as well as his amazing memorization capabilities, learning to read was extremely fast and easy for him. In just a short span of three months, he had already mastered the most basic words of the continent.

Jian Chen’s learning rate had made the teacher exclaim in astonishment. Immediately after Bi Yuntian had learned that he had learned most of the written language in three months, she couldn’t believe it. In the end, she had put Jian Chen in a test before she could accept the fact. If one wanted to read and write most of the words used in the continent to the extent Jian Chen had, then one needed to spend at least 2 years. To have Jian Chen accomplish this in 3 months while it took most 2 years, not even any of the geniuses could claim to have accomplished this feat.

This achievement quickly reached the ears of Jian Chen’s father. Changyang Ba had then personally paid a visit to Jian Chen about it.

“Xiang’er, you have endured much in such a short amount of time, it’s time to relax for now. Let your father give you a reward; since you have painstakingly learned to read in these past few

months, I don't know what reward Xiang'er would want though." Changyang Ba's face contained a smile as he looked down at Jian Chen as he spoke. Having such a genius for a son, he was extremely proud of himself and cared much more for Jian Chen than any other child automatically.

Hearing this, Jian Chen's eyes brightened and thought for only a few seconds before responding, "Father, would you allow your son to go to the library and read some of the books there so I can get some experience and learn even more."

Changyang Ba's eyes brightened as he looked at Jian Chen with gratification. With a loud laugh, he said, "This is no problem at all, Xiang'er. You have a heart that desires to improve itself, and your father is proud of this. I approve of your request, the library will be free to you whenever you desire."

"Thank you father!" Jian Chen's face exuded a happy expression. To be able to enter the library was an achievement that Jian Chen could truly be happy about. After all, he had understood that the library wasn't a place anyone could walk in freely. One had to be 6 years old or older and had to be directly descended from the Changyang clan in order to enter. Of course, if one received the permission from the clan leader then the requirements could be waived.

Soon after, Changyang Ba began to dote upon Jian Chen for a while before departing from his room. After he had left, Jian Chen wasn't able to sit in his room any longer. Immediately exiting his room, he headed toward the direction of the library. After studiously learning how to read for 3 months, it all led up to this

moment of being able to enter the library and look up information pertaining to the outside world. Even if there wasn't much details on the outside world in the books, Jian Chen could always go ask his mother. But the books definitely had more details than his mother as well as being quite comprehensive. As a result, Jian Chen had placed more importance on the books.

The location of the library had already been answered for Jian Chen a long time ago; it was in the back of his family's courtyard in a large pagoda. When Jian Chen entered the courts in the back, he immediately felt the presence of many experts concealed in every directions and were staring at him with viper like eyes.

With his head high and proud, Jian Chen pretended that he didn't sense the experts and walked further into the tower. If he let other people know that he could sense people that were looking at him from concealed areas, then a series of troublesome questions would follow. He was a 2 year child after all without any knowledge about martial arts.

Changyang Mansion had many direct descendants, but not many people were heading toward the library. So the only people Jian Chen had seen were the guards that protected the area, and almost no other clan member.

Jian Chen quickly reached the doors to the tower before stopping to lift his head up to see the extremely large board hung above the doors of the tower. The words "Book Pavilion" were written in fancy writing, with 2 guards standing below it. When he looked at the two guards, he could tell these guards were definitely not lacking in strength.

Waiting for the gates to open, Jian Chen then walked in directly without being obstructed by the two guards. They were almost like woodcarvings that stood motionlessly on the side with their backs straight. Even when Jian Chen had appeared, the two did not even greet him.

As Jian Chen entered the inner tower, a long and narrow corridor greeted his eyes. It was daytime on the outside, and light shined down beautifully, leaving a sight like none other. On the walls of the corridor, a bright moon pearl was hung and gave off a light to illuminate the hallway.

The length of the corridor was quite long, before finally splitting into two paths. Jian Chen estimated that both paths followed the opposite sides of the tower before finally rejoining again after a distance.

“Fourth master, the clan leader has said you have the authority to access the left side of the tower.” An elderly voice called out. Coming out from the shadows slowly was a tall figure.

Jian Chen turned around after hearing this; although the light in this part of the tower was dim, he could clearly make out the appearance of the figure in the midst of the shadows. It was an elderly figure with white hair and wrinkles all over. Wearing a silver chang pao that was devoid of any other colors, even still he was relatively normal looking, no one would suspect he wasn't anything more than an ordinary elderly man.

No matter how much Jian Chen looked at the old man, he couldn't see anything but mediocrity. Although he still didn't dare underestimate the old man. It was his inner instincts that told him that this old figure was an expert with extraordinary strength. The strongest man he had seen since he had entered this world was his father Changyang Ba, but it was impossible to measure his father to what Jian Chen was feeling from this old man.

Chapter 6: Saint's Test

Although Jian Chen could see through his frail appearance and find the true strength of the old man, he remained motionless and did not reveal anything on his face. With a silent nod to show his thanks, he stepped by the old man and proceeded down the left corridor.

Arriving at the end of the corridor, Jian Chen's eyes began to shine brightly as he walked into a large room. The light in this room was exceptionally bright, so much so that it was comparable to the light outside. Many neat and tidy bookshelves that contained thousands of books lined the walls of the library.

Jian Chen slowly tilted his head to look at the ceiling. He knew that the reason why the light was so bright was due to the ceiling. He had no idea what material the ceiling was made from, but it was strangely emitting a strong glow. Although the light was somewhat intense, it was not to the point of irritating the eyes.

Although the ceiling had piqued his interest, he wasn't willing to squander time by trying to figure it out. Walking up to a bookshelf, he finally grabbed a book and started flipping through it.

The book had fairly clear descriptions written inside, despite it not being as thick as the others. It had taken Jian Chen 3 hours to completely read through the book. Because of this, he had finally gained some insights regarding this strange world.

This continent was called the Tian Yuan continent and was fairly

big. There were numerous countries of various sizes and even more cities of all sizes. The biggest cities were known as the Capitals and each one stretched across countless miles, and each of these Capitals were ruled by a city ruler. Each ruler was also in charge of several million up to ten million guardian soldiers.

However, within the entire Tian Yuan continent, there were only 7 Capitals while 3 of the 7 were controlled by a single strong empire. Among the strongest empires were the Karl Empire and the Felicity Empire who both controlled two Capitals each. It was the Holy Empire that controlled the first 3 Capitals.

Under the Capitals were the King Cities, but the King Cities were smaller than the Capitals by a huge amount. Practically every kingdom had at the very least one King City and each King City had a million guardian soldiers. Under the King Cities were the First Class Cities which had 800,000 guardian soldiers. The Second Class Cities had 400,000 guardian soldiers each. Under the Second Class Cities were the varying villages which all had their own guardian soldiers but their numbers wouldn't reach over 50,000. Even their strength and numbers varied greatly.

The Tian Yuan continent had people that all practiced something called the "Saint Force". When their Saint Force reached the 10th level, then based on the expert's ideology, the saint force will condense into a Saint's Weapon. There were over 1000 shapes and each were completely dependent on the expert's ideology.

As a result of the Saint Weapon forming from the "Saint Force", once it formed, it formed a special link with the expert. Some people with an outstanding gift would receive a Saint Weapon with

a special attribute. These attributes were classified as Earth, Wind, Water, Fire, Light, and Dark. Among these elements, light and dark were rarely seen, but were still extremely powerful.

The light element was extremely strong in the healing aspect, and those who had light attributed Saint Weapons were given the title of Immortals in the Tian Yuan continent. They were given this title due to the fact that while on the battlefield, they could easily restore any damage taken. On the battlefield, if they were not killed in one strike, then they would be nearly impossible to defeat.

Those with the dark element had a corrosive nature. Not only was this a troublesome element, but those with dark attributes were also in demand. At night, they could come and go as they pleased, earning them the titles of Night Lords, for the night was under their command.

The rest of the 4 elements each had their own corresponding strengths. The amount of power they had depended on one's own strength and judgement. Of course in the Tian Yuan continent, those who had a Saint Weapon with an attribute was 1 in 10 compared to those who didn't have an attribute. On a battlefield, those with an attribute were often harder to fight against than those who didn't.

The Saint Weapons were the strongest of weapons. In a war, Saint Weapons could be freely summoned at will and provide assistance to their masters to help overcome their limits. At the same time, a Saint Weapon and its master's life were intertwined. Whatever injury the Saint Weapon sustained would then be

equally reflected back to the master. Also, if the Saint Weapon ever broke, then the master would receive a fatal wound as well. If the situation was grave, then even a wound may cause death.

However, Saint Weapons were extremely hard to break. As long as the Saint Weapon was stronger than the opposing force, then it would not be harmed in any way.

After a Saint Weapon takes shape, then this new way of cultivation would absorb the Qi from the world to become stronger. This method would improve one's own strength as well.

Once the Saint Weapon was formed, then the expert would be called a "Saint". In the Tian Yuan continent, the Saints are classified into 9 different levels: Saint, Great Saint, Saint Master, Great Saint Master, Earth Saint Master, Heaven Saint Master, Saint Ruler, Saint King and Saint Emperor. Within each of the levels, they are further separated into 3 levels: Lower, Middle, and Upper.

Within the Tian Yuan continent, there lies a mountain range that was spread out across the continent called the Mountain Range of Magical Beasts. The range was filled with countless magical beasts. The further you went in, the stronger the beasts would get.

These magical beasts were also separated into 9 levels. The class 1 beasts were equivalent to a Saint, while the class 2 beasts was equivalent to a Great Saint. Continuing on with this, a class 8 beast was on par with a Saint King and finally, a class 9 beast was equivalent to a Saint Emperor.

At the same time, the Tian Yuan continent had a very prominent profession called the Mercenary. According to this book, the Tian Yuan continent had many mercenaries. These mercenaries would accomplish a variety of tasks for money, although many mercenaries would enter the Mountain Range of Magical Beasts to hunt monsters and sell the monster cores for money.

Although the dangers were big, the rewards were just as generous due to monster cores being highly valued in the continent. The higher grade a monster core was, the higher priced it was. There were some high ranked monster cores that could not be bought with money alone.

Monster cores were one of the most desired items in the continent. Inside the center of a monster core was a large amount of pure energy and could be absorbed by humans for a faster training speed. Absorbing the energy from a monster core was ultimately faster than trying to absorb the World Essence into one's body. However, using the monster cores to increase the cultivation speed wasn't a method the general populace could do without having plenty of money.

Other than a few odd things, Jian Chen was finally beginning to understand many things about this world. This world was exceptionally cruel and wars happened everywhere. The people of this world were more dangerous in comparison to his old world. If one wasn't strong enough, then they would find it hard to survive. Most of the people on the continent were practitioners as well, although the average practitioner would be of average strength. The average person wouldn't be able to cultivate their Saint Force to the 10th level and be able to condense it into a Saint's Weapon.

If these people don't have the proper training and support, then they would remain at the lowest levels similar to a peasant in the mountains.

After finishing the books, Jian Chen finally understood the new world to a better degree. Saint Weapons, elements and attributes, magical beasts, monster cores and mercenaries, everything was a new experience to Jian Chen that gave his heart a thrill. He was looking forward to the new world and desperately wished to leave the Changyang mansion immediately. To be able to experience the outside world would be a refreshing change of pace.

However, Jian Chen knew that he would not be able to fulfill his desires in the upcoming years. His parents would never allow a three year old child to leave their home for the outside world. Even if he could leave his home, he would have no way of defending himself.

After a long period of time, Jian Chen decided to put even more effort into his training. Aside from his daily meals, everyday was spent training alone within his room. He still hadn't completed the basics of the cultivation stage of Azulet Sword Law, so the World Essence he had been absorbing was distributed equally throughout his body, entering each cell and strengthening his body.

It was only when his body could no longer be strengthened by the World Essence would Jian Chen be able to break through to the second stage, where he would start the formal training of his True Qi. Currently, Jian Chen still had the physique far beyond that of a normal person, however some regions of his body where Qi previously gathered in his past world were still empty.

In his previous world, Jian Chen had managed to finish the cultivation stage within a single year. Since this World Essence was stronger by at least twofold, even though it was taking him more than 2 years to make a breakthrough, his body was getting stronger and stronger, giving his current body the potential to be even stronger than his previous body.

Although Jian Chen normally spent the entire day hiding in his room to cultivate, neither of his parents had outwardly expressed any sort of bafflement or concern. The reason for this was because in the Changyang mansion, the parents would generally teach the children a method of breathing and let them train for a year. By the third year, these children would take a test to see how strong their Saint Power was and evaluate their potential as well as their aptitude. When Jian Chen was 2 years old, Bi Yuntian had taught him the same breathing method as the other children had learned. However, Jian Chen had taken this breathing exercise and tossed it into the depths of his mind, for Jian Chen had felt that this sort of training was like giving an adult a child's toy to play with.

As a result, Jian Chen had locked himself in his room. People passing by had only thought that Jian Chen was practicing the breathing method, and paid no attention to him.

The following morning, Jian Chen had finally finished last night's cultivation exercise. Today was a special day for him, since it was his 3rd birthday. At the same time, today would be the day that he would undergo the very same test as any other 3 year old in the Tian Yuan continent—the Saint's Test.

Accompanying his mother Bi Yuntian to the dining halls, Jian Chen was then later taken to the Changyang clan's official main hall.

The Changyang mansion covered a large amount of area, and compared to the area Jian Chen was used to, he had only experienced a small portion of the land. Walking along the road, Jian Chen looked at the mansion without stopping. In his first 3 years, Jian Chen had spent the vast majority of his time within his own room and cultivated, very rarely did he stroll around the mansion.

Within the Changyang mansion, a large group of uniformed patrolmen were walking around the area. Many sharp eyes were staring all around from hidden areas, and despite it being the daytime, they still did not show the slightest sense of relaxation.

As Jian Chen walked past a series of training grounds, a young, but soft shout had gotten his attention from the inside. A mere glance inside would show a small group of 10 year olds being taught some martial art drills by a middle aged man.

Jian Chen understood in his heart that these children were disciples born directly into the family line. The Changyang clan had about 1000 clansmen. Although half of them were guardsmen and servants, the other half were members that were born from within the clan line.

Walking past the training grounds, Bi Yuntian led her son to the middle of an official looking hallway. This was where Jian Chen would undergo the Saint's Test.

Chapter 7: Forgotten Genius

Even though the outside hall was vast, the interior of the Changyang main hallways were even larger. Currently there were dozens of people strewn about, among them were a few middle-aged men who were dressed differently that stood out from the rest.

Bi Yuntian led Jian Chen to their seats in the front of the hallway. Those who had wanted to sit at the front had to have a high status in the clan, and since Jian Chen was the fourth son of the clan leader, he had the right to sit at the front. However, his own seat wasn't created yet, so he had to share a single chair with his mother.

The lovable Jian Chen sat down on his mother's lap gently and didn't say anything.

In a flash, a line of people came streaming into the hall one by one before stopping in front of their seats. Among the newcomers was Jian Chen's third aunt carrying her child along.

"Hey...fourth brother, today is the day you take the Saint Test. You have to work hard so you don't let second sister down." Changyang Mingyue's pretty face smiled at Jian Chen as she spoke in a soft but enthusiastic voice. Although she was soft spoken, everyone in the hall had clearly heard who and what she was talking about.

"Ming Yue!" Her mother looked at her sharply as she spoke with

soft rebuke.

Changyang Mingyue laughed and stuck her tongue out at Jiang Chen. Without any further words, she peacefully sat down right next to her mother's side as her bright eyes blinked rapidly as she sized up the other people in the hall.

Soon enough, everybody in the hall were all seated while they all looked at Jian Chen from time to time with looks of expectations shown clearly on their faces. The reason why many people were gathered was due to Jian Chen's Saint Test.

If it was any other child of the clan, then there would not had been such a massive turnout for the Saint Test. But Jian Chen wasn't a regular child with no status; he was the child to the clan leader of the Changyang clan as well as having an innate talent blessed by the heavens. The whole clan had practically placed all of their expectations on this child, hence why when it was Jian Chen's turn to undergo the Saint Test, every clan member would be there.

After all, Jian Chen had many different achievements under his belt, and the Saint Test would be another important milestone for him.

When everyone had settled down, Jian Chen's father Changyang Ba stepped towards the middle of the hall and sat down on the throne that signified his status as the clan leader with a great blade right next to him.

Changyang Ba's eyes stopped on Jian Chen for only a second but Jian Chen could see the faintest of smiles on it. Immediately afterwards, a voice spoke out, signifying the start of Jian Chen's Saint Test.

"De Shu, I'm sorry to have you take control of the Saint Test ceremony." Changyang Ba said politely towards the elder.

The elder looked to be around 60 to 70 years old white haired man who wore gray clothing. Although his face was full of wrinkles, his eyes were bright and filled with excitement.

The old man laughed, "The clan leader is too modest." Walking towards the center now, he carried a smile on his face as he looked at Jian Chen before calling out in a friendly tone, "Fourth Master, if you please!"

Bi Yuntian looked at Jian Chen with a great look of affection and whispered, "Xiang'er, please go to where De Shu is standing so he can test for your Saint Force."

"Okay!" Jian Chen said lightly. The clever child got off of his seat and with his small paces, he slowly approached to where the Elder De stood.

Without further ado, De Shu lifted his right hand where a small silver ring began to glow with a dazzling white light. Waving it over, the smallest of trembles could be heard coming from the ground before slowly increasing in sound. Right where there was nothing in front of them, a white stone half a meter large suddenly

appeared. It was clear to see that the white stone had been polished countless of times; the entire rectangular shaped rock, the width and thickness was both at a meter long.

Looking at the newly emerged white stone, Jian Chen's eyes blinked in surprise, he had felt quite curious about this stone but De Shu's right hand had also caught his interest. He stared intensely at the ring on his middle finger, it was the ring he had seen from the books.

The Space Ring was made from rare but special materials, and could store items within the space of the ring. The smallest object it could store was a meter cubed, while the biggest object it could store was a hundred meters cubed. One could store and take out any inanimate object as they pleased. This was an item that was so expensive in the Tian Yuan continent that the common person would not be able to afford it.

Seeing Jian Chen looking at the Space ring adorned on his middle finger, De Shu laughed. Whenever he had summoned the white stone for the Saint Test, everyone around would give him the same exact look. In fact, he had seen the look so many times, he had lost count.

“Fourth master, please place a hand on the Saint Stone.” De Shu smiled.

The Saint Stone is a special rock that could measure the amount of Saint Force within a person's body. Within the large Tian Yuan continent, there are many different items that could measure one's personal strength. The Saint Stone used colors to represent a

person's strength—Red, Orange, Yellow, Green, Cyan, Blue, and Purple.

Having the stone flash red meant that the person was still below a Saint in strength while an orange color meant that the person was at the same level as a Saint. The yellow color represents a Great Saint and blue meant the person was an Earth Saint Master. Lastly, a purple color represented a Heaven Saint Master. Any rank higher than the Heaven Saint Master like a Saint Ruler, Saint King, and Saint Emperor could not be ranked by the Saint Stone.

Hearing De Shu, Jian Chen focused back on the task and extended his hand onto the white stone called the “Saint Rock”.

At that moment, everyone's eyes were focused on the Saint Rock. They all stood up in anticipation, anxious to find out how strong the gifted Jian Chen would be.

When Jian Chen placed his hand on the Saint Rock, De Shu extended his own arm to activate the Saint Rock through seemingly magical means.

Immediately, Jian Chen could only feel an odd type of energy pulse from the stone and into his arm. While the energy felt odd to him, it entered his body quite gently where it slowly circulated around before pulsing back out from his body and into the stone.

De Shu stared at the Saint Rock for any change in color, but after a short period of time, there was no change at all. Not even a single shade of color other than its original one could be seen.

“How is this possible, the Saint Rock doesn’t even have a sliver of color reflected!” De Shu couldn’t help but cry out in alarm. The smile that had been on his face slowly disappeared from his face and turned to look at Jian Chen’s own face with an odd expression. Neither of the two could believe what was going on.

Taking note of the look of shock on De Shu’s face and the still white Saint Rock, everyone subconsciously came to a realization. Their faces couldn’t help but slowly change as they looked at their neighbors, then back at the front. Blinking once, the look of abject bewilderment was noticeable on most people’s face while some people even sighed with looks of pity.

Changyang Ba’s face grew ugly while even Bi Yuntian’s face drained of color. Neither of the two looked as if they were refusing to believe the news.

De Shu gave a gulp, this result was unbelievable to even him. Immediately starting up the Saint Rock again, he had hoped that it was a mistake the first time. But alas, the tree had bore no fruit, and the rock no color.

Again, this result was inconceivable to De Shu. The fourth master had been called a gifted genius since he was born, but it had seemed as if he was nothing more than a cripple who couldn’t cultivate or use Saint Force at all.

De Shu couldn’t help but give a disappointed sigh as he looked at the silent Jian Chen with a complicated look. He turned around to

face Changyang Ba, “Clan leader, the results are in. The Fourth master is unable to cultivate the Saint Force in any way.”

Upon hearing this declaration, Bi Yuntian’s face grew even more pale to the point that it was almost devoid of color. Looking at Jian Chen dumbfounded, she muttered, “That’s...that’s...not possible... how can Xiang’er...be a cripple...?” Right as she finished, her eyes rolled to the back of her head and crumpled down to the ground from her chair. For her son that was widely regarded as a genius to suddenly be found as a cripple, she couldn’t handle this shocking news at all. No mother in the continent would be able to, let alone a member of a very prestigious clan.

As everyone that had gathered around heard the results, they all gasped and looked at Jian Chen with pity and disappointment. Jian Chen’s aunts Yu Feng Yan and Ling Long on the other hand, let loose a breath of air. Seeing the mother and son’s unfortunate situation, the two aunts couldn’t help but rejoice silently to themselves.

“Ah, fourth sister...fourth sister, what’s wrong? Fourth sister, please wake up! Fourth Sister, please...please wake up!” Rushing to her side, Bai Yushuang anxiously tried to awaken the unconscious Bi Yuntian, but to no avail.

Hearing Bai Yushuang’s frantic yells, Changyang Ba immediately bounded over to Bi Yuntian and began to cry out, “Shuang Er, bring Yun Er to her bed!”

Even Jian Chen had rushed to his mother’s side without paying attention to anyone else. His right hand was already pressed

against his mother's wrist to check for her pulse. It took a few precious seconds, but he had eventually confirmed that his mother was in no immediate danger.

Jian Chen looked at his disappointed father amongst the crowd, and even he had felt helpless secretly. With a small sigh, he followed Bai Yushuang who was carrying his mother out of the hall.

“Ai...” Watching Jian Chen leave, Changyang Ba's face clearly had a look of extreme disappointment. He had placed high hopes on Jian Chen before, but as the expectations were very high, so was the later disappointment. With this result in the end, his fourth son Xiang Tian was merely a cripple.

“Clan head, don't pay too much attention to this. Although the fourth master cannot cultivate Saint Force, it doesn't mean he isn't a genius in other aspects or fields.” A young male clan member tried to console him.

Changyang Ba waved his hand and said sadly, “Let's not mention this topic anymore. Everyone is dismissed.” Finishing his sentence, Changyang Ba stood up to leave the hall. Although he had acknowledged the fact that Jian Chen could be a genius in the other fields as said earlier, but Saint Force was the most important factor in this world, after all, strength is what mattered in the end.

The fact that the fourth son of the leader of the Changyang clan was a cripple spread throughout the Changyang mansion like wildfire. Some people regarded this new piece of information with joy while others were grievous. One thing was sure however;

Xiang'er's status in the clan would rapidly drop after this affair.

In a wide spacious room, Jian Chen sat quietly by the bedside. His tranquil face was dipped downwards and what he was thinking about was unknown to everyone else. His mother Bi Yuntian still hadn't woke up, her eyes were still shut as she laid in bed. Aside from Jian Chen and some servant girls, only his third aunt Bai Yushuang and his second sister Changyang Mingyue were in the room.

Chapter 8: Disaster

Looking at the mute Jian Chen, Changyang Mingyue blinked a few times. She walked up to Jian Chen's shoulder and said, "Fourth brother, please don't feel too sad. If anyone in the future bullies you, tell your older sister and I'll beat them up." Changyang Mingyue thought that Jian Chen was feeling sad because he was a cripple and that he didn't have the ability to defend himself from anyone that would mock him.

Hearing what Ming Yue had said, Jian Chen couldn't help but lift his head to smile at Changyang Mingyue, "Don't worry second sister, I won't be an easy person to bully."

Only Jian Chen understood that it wasn't because he was unable to cultivate Saint Force, it was due to the fact that he had been incorporating the Saint Force into the cells of his body. Because of this, his body was essentially an empty shell, with no Saint Force remaining in his body. If he hadn't used this method, then today's Saint Test would have had a different result.

It was unfortunate that Jian Chen wouldn't be able to explain this situation to people. Even if he wanted to, he wouldn't be able to explain how he came about this method. Not to mention that if he were to talk about Azulet Sword Law, then Jian Chen feared that the the history of both the technique and himself would become a great problem.

Although Jian Chen had understood that because of this situation, his status within the clan had taken a major hit. He didn't care at all for that however and had secretly wanted a

situation like this to happen. If things had progressed as well as they did just now, then in the future he would be able to leave the Changyang mansion with more ease. If he had still been stuck with the label of a genius, then departing from the mansion would not be as easy. At the very least, as long as he didn't have their approval, they would ignore his trips in and out of the mansion.

“Xiang'er...Xiang'er...” A voice came calling out from the bed, Jian Chen's mother had finally awakened.

Right after hearing his mother call his name, Jian Chen's mind was jolted back to consciousness. He immediately turned around to look at her, “Mother, your son is here, everything is fine now.”

Bi Yuntian had a complicated look on her face as she gasped, “Your mother is fine, but Xiang'er...ai....” As she spoke, a myriad of expressions were shown on her face ranging from sorrow, sadness, and even pain.

“Fourth sister, please don't trouble yourself too much. Xiang Tian has been highly intelligent since birth, so although it is regretful that he cannot cultivate Saint Force, but in my opinion, Xiang Tian is not so simple. After all, no child in the clan is smarter than him.” Bai Yu Shuan was trying to console the still grievous Bi Yuntian.

Bi Yuntian lifted her head slowly, “I had already understood this fact,.” Looking at Jian Chen, she gently started to caress the back of Jian Chen's head. “Xiang'er, don't feel sad, what your second aunt said is correct. Although you cannot cultivate Saint Force, you are still a very intelligent child, we still don't know in what areas you

would be best suited for.”

Jian Chen hesitated when he heard his mother speak, even though his mother was awake, he was not feeling all that much better. In reality, he had really wanted to tell the truth to the people there, his mother most definitely. He wanted to say that he wasn't a cripple that couldn't cultivate Saint Force, but Jian Chen chose to endure this. “Mother, don't worry, your son won't disappoint you.” Compared to his mother's love for him, Jian Chen had utterly cherished it.

He would later spend the whole day by the bedside of his mother before leaving at night. Periodically, Changyang Ba would drop in to see his wife but he would then leave just as quickly as he came. When it came to Jian Chen, Changyang Ba's attitude towards him had been completely different these days in comparison to before. With each passing time, Jian Chen could clearly see that Changyang Ba had been treating Jian Chen with a colder expression.

In the blink of an eye, four years had passed after Jian Chen's Saint Test. During the days that he wasn't busy, Jian Chen would shut himself in his room to continue training. The amount of training he needed nowadays was considerably longer than in the past; so much longer, that sometimes, Jian Chen would not be seen walking out of his room for the entire day.

In those four years, Jian Chen's status in the clan had dropped immensely as expected. Changyang Ba had been treating him more coldly now, and no one had ever bothered to take the initiative to seek him out first. It was vastly different than from his mother

who saw him everyday, her love had never wavered at all.

Early one day, Jian Chen slowly opened his eyes from his crossed-legged position once more to show that he had finished last night's training. Immediately extending both arms palmside up, a light round ball gradually came into view. He flipped the beautiful ball into the air from his hands and watched it fall towards the ground where it came to a stop as both his hands were focused on it.

Hearing only the slightest of sounds, Jian Chen clapped his tiny hands together as if they were 2 steel plates and started to do pushups on the normally soft ground, occasionally bringing his head so close to the ground he could kiss it and even left an imprint on the ground afterwards.

Looking at his own hard work with a joyous smile, Jian Chen laughed. Half a year after the Saint Test, Jian Chen had already finished the cultivation stage of the first principle of the Azulet Sword Law. This meant that he officially started to cultivate the Saint Force without having to assimilate it into his own body. His cultivation rate was extremely fast, so fast that in the span of a just few years, he had already reached an astounding result. As he was now, he could use the Saint Force that was stored inside of him to reinforce his hands so that they could break through stone without effort.

Early in the morning, Jian Chen walked out of his room to wander around the Changyang Mansion alone. However, a group of patrolmen were walking around at the time spotted him, with each member having a different expression on their faces. Some had a mocking look, while some looked at him with disdain, but

very few looked at him with pity. The fact that Jian Chen was a cultivation cripple had long ceased to be a secret within the clan, and so even the guards that patrolled the mansion had started to look at him differently.

But Jian Chen turned a blind eye towards them. His stomach was growling from hunger, and so Jian Chen had decided with a small sigh that it was time to head towards the kitchens.

It had been a long time since he had accompanied his mother to the dining halls to eat together. Nowadays, he would go to the kitchens himself to eat breakfast, and would only eat lunch and dinner together with his mother and some of his aunts.

When Jian Chen reached the kitchens, over a hundred servants could be seen running about. The kitchen was a tremendous mess due to the stove where it stood like a smoking hot steamer basket.

“Oh! Isn’t this the fourth master? The fourth master has come to the kitchens! Ai, this isn’t the proper place for someone as pampered as fourth master to be. The kitchens are for lowly servants like us, so why have you come here?” The teasing voice of a 20 year old servant came calling out. Judging by his odd tone of voice, it was clear to tell that he was mocking Jian Chen.

Another voice continued straight after the first servant, “If my guess is correct, then fourth master came down to the kitchens to get some steamed buns. But that’s weird, why isn’t the fourth master eating at the dining halls with the rest of the clan? Has he wronged himself and so wanted to eat the steamed buns from the kitchens? These steamed buns are only fit for us lowly servants

and guards to eat however.” Another 30 year old servant continued to sneer at Jian Chen.

Upon hearing the two people talk, the other servants in the kitchen all started to look at the spectacle. Both of these servants had the support of some of the superiors; for example, the 20 year old servant was not only introduced by Changyang Ba’s first wife Ling Long, but he was also the servant of Jian Chen’s eldest aunt. Rumors had it that Ling Long had hired him because he was a family relative, but because his body had lacked the power, he could only work in the kitchens.

As for the 30 year old servant that spoke second, his brother is the group leader of the Changyang mansion guards.

Hearing the two servants mock him, Jian Chen could only narrow his eyes slightly as anger flashed through his eyes. Biting back any sort of rebuke, he moved towards the giant steamer basket and held his hand out to take off the lid of it before all of a sudden, two giants hands came out of nowhere and quickly moved the steamer basket away from him.

“I should really bring these steamed buns to the guards right away, our honored guards haven’t yet eaten breakfast yet after all.” Whisking away the basket, the servant muttered out loud as he exited from the kitchens, “What a crying shame, the fourth lady gave birth to a good for nothing cripple.”

At that last remark, Jian Chen went rigid. At last, the anger within his heart had finally broke free! Without saying a word, his legs blurred as both of his legs stamped across the ground.

Reaching the servant with the steamer basket within a few seconds, he raised one fist and brought it down onto the servant's back!

“Bang!”

Completely caught off guard, the servant carrying the steamer basket was sent staggering to the ground. The basket he had carried dropped to the floor and with a great big smash, the nice and plump steamed buns scattered across the floor in four directions one by one.

Everyone in the kitchen stared at this unforeseen event with a shocked look. Seeing where Jian Chen now stood, no one could believe what they saw. No one had saw clearly how fast or even when Jian Chen had moved. For the 7 year old fourth master to have brought down the 30 year old servant with a single punch to his knees, it was inconceivable. Although the steamer basket had been dropped and the food wasted, everyone was still amazed by this show in front of them.

“Hahaha, Brother Qiu Er Lao, you really amaze me. Even though you are an expert that has reached the 3rd layer of Saint Force, yet you were knocked down by the fist of a little child! Did you waste too much energy with a girl last night to become this weak?” Looking at the servant at the ground, the first servant who had made fun of Jian Chen was now roaring with laughter at the second servant.

The servant called Qiu Er crawled up from the ground, his eyes burning with fury towards Jian Chen as the words of his younger

servant friend reached his ears. For a 7 year old child to push him down to the ground, especially a child that was a cripple in the ways of cultivation, this was the ultimate form of humiliation and shame for him. After all, although he had not yet condensed his Saint Force into a Saint Weapon, he was still a practitioner that had reached a level far above that of the cripple!

Shaking his head in rage, Qiu Er had forgotten in that moment that Jian Chen still held the status of being the fourth master. With a snarl, he jumped towards where Jian Chen stood and sent a punch towards his stomach.

Watching Qiu Er's fist get closer, Jian Chen had a look of disdain on his face. To him, this punch that he had thrown out was full of mistakes and openings, and so he dodged by moving to the side very slightly to avoid the fist. Throwing himself forward, Jian Chen's right leg arced in a beautiful way and kicked Qiu Er firmly on the nose.

“Ah!”

Qiu Er let loose a blood curling scream as he clasped his bloody nose with his hands. Even then, a small steady flow of blood leaked through his hands. Jian Chen's leg had not been merciful, Qiu Er's nose had been kicked in and broke. The acute pain in his face had already drained it of color.

Chapter 9: Revealed Strength

Qiu Er looked at Jian Chen with obvious anger in his eyes, making it seem as if he was a wild beast that wanted to take Jian Chen down.

“You little bastard, I’m going to teach you a lesson today!” Qiu Er roared angrily. He dashed towards Jian Chen and sent a kick towards his head. The kick was fairly fast, and if it connected, it definitely would not result in a small wound for any normal person. But since Jian Chen was still in the body of a child, a direct hit from such a strong kick had a high chance of killing him.

Assessing the strength of Qiu Er’s kick, the 20 year old servant’s face suddenly lost its humorous expression and became pale. Shouting out in alarm, he cried, “Brother Qiu Er, stop!” Jian Chen was still the fourth master as well as the son of Changyang Ba despite being a cripple, he still had some degree of respect around the Changyang Mansion. It was barely okay to mock him, but to raise a hand against the fourth master was unforgivable. Even if they had the support of any of the elders they would still incur a terrible punishment upon them.

Seeing the intensity of Qiu Er’s kick, Jian Chen’s face changed as well. His eyes grew cold as he leaned to the side again. Calmly staying outside the reach of Qiu Er’s kick, he didn’t retreat. Instead Jian Chen rapidly approached Qiu Er’s body, he placed his arm on Qiu Er’s still outstretched thigh while the other hand went to the other thigh. With a low growl, Jian Chen released all of the Saint Force he had stored in his body into his waist and surprisingly lifted the over a hundred pound Qiu Er above his tiny body.

Raising Qiu Er's body, Jian Chen didn't bother giving him time to retaliate, both his legs began to move across the ground as Jian Chen threw the heavy body of Qiu Er forward.

Qiu Er's body flew over 5 meters before slamming into a table meant for cutting vegetables. Coincidentally, underneath his falling body was a stack of iron skewers, falling down onto that would make him resemble a bizarre human porcupine.

Qiu Er fell on top of the skewers, and at least an inch of skin had been pierced through by them. Immediately, Qiu Er screamed in pain as the skin of his body was distorted and the pain in his nose was still piercing through his mind.

Every servant in the kitchen suddenly came to a standstill from the unbelievable event they had just watched. A single 7 year old not only fought back against a heavyweight person like Qiu Er, but he even defeated that person, who had reached the 3rd layer of Saint Force. If news of this got out, no one in the Changyang clan would be able to believe it.

Jian Chen looked at Qiu Er's suffering with cold eyes while making a mocking face at him. He didn't say anything, and decided to leave the kitchen instead, without taking even a single steamed bun with him.

After exiting the kitchens, Jian Chen slowly exhaled. He didn't think that even the servants in the kitchens would begin to mock the fourth master.

Throwing away the depression from his heart, Jian Chen began to stroll around the Changyang Mansion once more. With the mansion being so vast, Jian Chen had never once seen the entirety of it. Even the scenery around the place was nice to look at, as gardens surrounded every inch of the outside yards. There were many lakes as well as flower gardens that had very rare specimens that could not be seen anywhere else and they carried a sweet fragrance.

As the fourth master of the Changyang clan, Jian Chen was free to wander wherever he wanted. As he wandered to and fro, he would come across important roadways and buildings that had many experts concealed everywhere. When he saw those experts however, he had decided to think no more about it; after all, he knew that the Changyang clan is one of the four great clans of Lore City. Lore City was a First Class City, so the title of being a big clan was a prestigious one.

As he walked, he had unconsciously come to the middle of a calm flower garden. Jian Chen had not noticed that his third brother Changyang Ke had been carrying a wooden axe as he trained within the same flower garden. However, in the eyes of a battle hardened Jian Chen, it looked as if Changyang Ke was just recklessly swinging the axe around with no particular style in mind at all.

Although Jian Chen had studied the way of the sword in the past world, he had studied many different axe wielding experts and how they fought. So even Jian Chen was familiar with how one should use an axe, but the way Changyang Ke was handling it, Jian Chen was speechless. How could this be considered training?

Just as Jian Chen was about to turn around to leave, Changyang Ke noticed him out of the corner of his eye. Slowly ceasing his movements, Changyang Ke's face started to show signs of ill intent as he smiled.

"Fourth brother, come on over, your third brother has some candy for you to eat." Changyang Ke cried out to Jian Chen.

Hearing Changyang Ke's words, Jian Chen nearly tripped down onto the ground in disbelief. Secretly thinking to himself, he thought, "Even a 7 year old wouldn't fall for such a line." However, Jian had forgot to account for that aside from the experiences of his past world, he was still no better than a 7 year old child.

But he paid no mind to the words of Changyang Ke and continued to keep on walking without even turning his head back.

Seeing that Jian Chen was getting farther and farther away, Changyang Ke began to get angry. Throwing the wooden axe in his hands to the ground, he dashed towards Jian Chen and eventually caught up to him.

"Fourth brother, did you not hear me just now?" Changyang Ke blocked Jian Chen's path like a cork in a bottle, his face red with anger as he stared at Jian Chen.

"Is something wrong?" Jian Chen looked at Changyang Ke with a calm gaze while implying a hint of coldness in his question. Jian

Chen did not harbor any good sentiments towards his third brother. In the past two years, Changyang Ke would always look for some way to bully Jian Chen, and ever since the news of Jian Chen being a cripple, his actions became much more severe. If it wasn't for the fact that Jian Chen rarely went outside, the amount of times Changyang Ke bullied Jian Chen would have been increased tenfold. However, every time he had tried to bully Jian Chen, it would always result in failure and sometimes Jian Chen would also find a way to bully him back. This had created a sense of resentment within Changyang Ke's heart which made him seek revenge even more.

“Fourth brother, come accompany your third brother in practicing some martial arts.” While talking, Changyang Ke had already started dragging Jian Chen towards the place where he practiced and did not give Jian Chen a chance to respond. Changyang Ke was actually very excited at the moment, for although he was not a match for Jian Chen when comparing their intelligence, he did not think he would be weaker than Jian Chen in terms of strength. After all, his fourth brother was a cripple in terms of martial cultivation and could not even cultivate any Saint Force, in Changyang Ke's mind, this was the perfect opportunity to exact his revenge.

Not long after Jian Chen had been forcefully dragged by Changyang Ke to where he was practicing his martial arts, Changyang Ke picked up the wooden axe he had thrown to the side earlier and then said to Jian Chen, “Third Brother, are you ready? I am going to start attacking now.”

Seeing Changyang Ke's gentle smile, Jian Chen let a hint of playfulness appear within his eyes. Holding both of his palms in a

clueless manner, he asked, “Third Brother, you have a weapon in your hands, don’t tell me you want me to fight against you barehanded?”

Hearing his brother talk, Changyang Ke looked distracted for a second. Looking at the wooden axe in his own hands, he hesitated only for a second before tossing it towards Jian Chen, as he said, “Then I shall give you the axe fourth brother, and I will be the one that will fight bare handed.” Although the axe was wooden, it was still 10 pounds. Even for a 10 year old child, swinging this around would prove to be difficult. Changyang Ke had thought of this and threw it towards Jian Chen for this reason. He wanted to make Jian Chen humiliate himself while he would look like the gracious one.

Jian Chen took the wooden axe in front of him and started to inspect it. The axe was very crudely made, only the shape of the axe was there, while the blade of it was almost non existent. Even if he were to try to chop at a person, it would not cause significant harm. At the very most, the axe would only leave behind a sore bruise.

Seeing Jian Chen hold up the 10 pound axe with ease, Changyang Ke’s eyes revealed a trace of shock. He had not been expecting this change of events.

Jian Chen looked at Changyang Ke and gave a faint laugh, “Third brother, perhaps you should use this axe instead.” Right as he spoke, he tossed the axe back at Changyang Ke.

Catching the axe he had only just thrown at Jian Chen,

Changyang Ke began to feel suspicious, “Fourth brother, could it be you still wanted to fight me bare handed?”

Jian Chen began to laugh as he shook his head. Grabbing a nearby tree, he snapped off a branch one meter long. Shaving away the little twigs and leaves, Jian Chen was left with only a single branch.

“This will be my weapon!” Raising the branch, Jian Chen laughed gently.

Changyang Ke looked at the tiny stick that could be quickly turned into chopsticks in Jian Chen’s hand and laughed. He was no longer angry as the day that he would be able to beat Jian Chen with ease seemed to be getting closer and closer. The dream of being able to bully Jian Chen without taking any losses had finally come for Changyang Ke. This would make him extremely happy.

Changyang Ke clasped onto the axe firmly, “Then fourth brother, you’d best be careful. Your third brother will begin to attack!” Right after saying it, Changyang Ke immediately stormed towards Jian Chen with the axe held in both his hands before trying to bring it down onto Jian Chen.

This axe wasn’t able to inflict a fatal wound, so Changyang Ke didn’t bother to hold back and swung with all his might.

Jian Chen’s legs crossed forward each other as he dodged the axe. Swinging his tree branch with frightening speed, the branch had suddenly become more frightening in power. Even Jian Chen’s

demeanor had changed abruptly, as he pressed forward, the normally safe branch became a deadly sword in his hands.

Jian Chen was swinging the sword with unbelievable speed, leaving Changyang Ke with almost no room to counter when at last, the tree branch had already placed itself on Changyang Ke's throat.

“Third brother, you've lost!” With a playful banter, he returned the axe that Changyang Ke had dropped shortly in the middle of the match.

Changyang Ke could only stare at the tree branch at his neck with disbelief flashing across his eyes. He had not seen the tree branch move at all, by the time his eyes had saw a sign of movement, the match had already finished.

Still in shock, Changyang Ke shook his head. Grabbing the tree branch at his throat, he snapped it in two and cried out in disbelief, “That didn't count. It definitely didn't count! Fourth brother, you weren't fighting fair at all.”

Jian Chen laughed as he looked at the red faced Changyang Ke. “Third brother, you don't even know if I was fighting fair or not.” He said in a strange voice.

“That...that is...” Changyang Ke scratched at his cheek and stammered as he tried to think of an excuse. In the end, he still couldn't accept the result and said, “Either way, that match just now didn't count. Let's fight one more time!”

Jian Chen gathered the pieces of the tree branch that Changyang Ke had snapped with a laugh, “Okay, let us fight one more time then.” Without further ado, he walked 5 meters away from Changyang Ke.

Chapter 10: High Regards

Both of Changyang Ke's hands clenched his axe tightly, as he attentively looked at Jian Chen. Thanks to the lesson he had just learned, he wouldn't dare to underestimate Jian Chen a second time, so in this round, Changyang Ke moved around carefully.

Jian Chen began to laugh at Changyang Ke, causing him to scowl in confusion, "Third brother, can we start sparring now?"

Changyang Ke tightly gripped his axe; this time, he used his Saint Force to help him. Once again he charged at Jian Chen, but this time he was much faster.

Jian Chen casually waved around the less than half a meter long tree branch in his hands. He was feeling fantastic for some odd reason; it was almost as if the branch had some sort of secret connection with himself. At the same time, within Jian Chen's heart, he couldn't help but feel the same sensation he had in the previous world when he had been on the verge of death, where he could understand the amazing power of the Realm of the Sword God. During that moment, he had finally been able to control his sword with his "Spirit", and had sent it flying 100 meters straight through Dugu Qiubai's throat.

Thinking of that moment, Jian Chen sprung into action, as the tree branch in his hand was sent flying towards Changyang Ke.

"Whoosh!"

Bending to Jian Chen's will, the tree branch looked as if it was alive, and flew from his hands. Flying at incredible speeds towards Changyang Ke, the tree branch was enveloped by a faint white glow of light. A strong yet acute amount of Sword Qi was emitted from the tree branch, making it look like a bolt of lightning. With a brilliant flash of light, the branch had already reached Changyang Ke's stomach.

Immediately realizing the trajectory path, as well as the amount of Sword Qi on the tree branch, Jian Chen turned pale with fright. He frantically tried to stop the branch from reaching its destination. If the tree branch was not stopped, then it would have, without a doubt, pierced through Changyang Ke and kill him. Even if he wasn't immediately killed, Changyang Ke would still have suffered from a fatal wound, which would lead to a disaster for Jian Chen.

Right as the branch reached Changyang Ke's stomach, it began to slow, but not before piercing into his stomach just by a small amount. Looking closer, the tree branch had merely penetrated through the skin, but if Jian Chen had been a tiniest bit slower with his command for it to stop, then Changyang Ke would have been left with the branch straight through his body. Such a thought was too horrible for Jian Chen to imagine.

Wiping away the sweat on his forehead, Jian Chen noticed that there was still a thin line of his soul connected to the tree branch. Confirming once more with his soul that the branch had only pierced Changyang Ke's skin, Jian Chen let out a sigh of relief.

Feeling the slight pain from his stomach, the somewhat plump

Changyang Ke couldn't help but start to pale. When he looked down and saw the bloodstains on his stomach, his face changed drastically. A wail was heard as he started to cry, with teardrops falling in a never ending stream down his cheeks as if his eyes were fountains.

“Bl..blood...I'm bleeding! Waaah, fourth brother, you...you hit me! Waaaah, Mo...Mother, I'm going to tell my mother about this. Mother....fourth brother hit me...!” Changyang Ke immediately transformed into a child who only knew how to cry. Throwing down his wooden axe, he fled from the garden, bawling nonstop. Changyang Ke was barely 10 years old after all, he had not yet matured enough to withstand an ordeal like this.

Looking at the slowly fading away Changyang Ke, Jian Chen couldn't help but shake his head. As he walked out from the gardens by himself, he felt a small bit of fear in his heart. What type of strict punishment would he receive for this?

.....

“What? Chang Bai, are you playing a joke on me?” In a study room, the leader of the Changyang clan, Changyang Ba stood up from his chair in surprise. Focusing his attention on the elder in front of him, Changyang Ba couldn't help but be amazed by what he had just heard.

The elder that stood in front of Changyang Ba was the housekeeper of the Changyang Clan, Chang Bai.

Chang Bai nodded his head solemnly, “My lord, even I didn’t believe this matter at first, but dozens of the kitchen servants all saw it clearly. The fourth master really did beat one of the servants, as well as lift up a servant who weighed 100 pounds more than him, before tossing him five meters away. The most important part is that this very same servant is of the third Saint Force layer.”

Hearing Chang Bai, Changyang Ba’s eyes widened in awe from this piece of incredible news.

Chang Bai looked at the clan leader, and after some hesitation, continued to say, “My lord, I also received more information about this, but the fourth master was recently involved in a spar with the third master. Using a single tree branch, the fourth master was able to injure the third master!”

“What? Xiang’er and Ke Er fought, and Xiang’er was the victor?” With each passing second, Changyang Ba’s eyes widened more and more.

“That is correct my lord. The fourth master had used only a tree branch while the third master was using a wooden axe.” Chang Bai added.

“How is this possible!” Changyang Ba flew from his chair once more, “Xiang’er is unable to use the Saint Force, while Changyang Ke is 3 years older and is also at the third Saint Force layer. Combined with the fact that Ke Er practices martial arts everyday, how was he not able to beat Xiang’er?”

Taking out a tree branch from within his robes, Chang Bai held it out for Changyang Ba to take, “My lord, the fourth master had used this tree branch to beat the third master.”

Changyang Ba took the tree branch that was no thicker than his fingers. Inspecting it over, he noticed the tip of it had been dyed with blood.

Changyang Ba focused onto the dried up blood on the broken tip of the branch while concealing all sorts of emotions from his face, “Chang Bai, is Ke Er fine?”

“The third master is uninjured besides some broken skin.” Chang Bai replied.

Changyang Ba nodded his head slowly with a neutral face. Inspecting the tree branch even more closely, he started to grow more and more suspicious. Finally, he spoke, “Chang Bai, this tree branch is nothing special. In addition, the tip is not sharp at all. Based on Xian Er’s strength, it is impossible for a tree branch to injure Ke Er at all.”

Chang Bai nodded his head in agreement, his eye glistening with a single luster, “My lord, I just had an outrageous thought; what if the fourth master is not a cripple unable to cultivate Saint Force? Seeing the fourth master’s display of might today, perhaps the fourth master had already cultivated Saint Force to the fourth level? There would be no other way for the fourth master to beat the third master otherwise.”

Hearing Chang Bai, the clan leader's face grew bright with emotion. To treat his son who was regarded as a genius badly after being revealed as a cripple, this was Changyang Ba's biggest regret.

“Chang Bai, what you're saying is that Xiang'er is not only able to use Saint Force, but that he is actually a genius at it as well.” Changyang Ba's voice began to tremble with emotion. For a 7 year old to reach the fourth layer of Saint Force, this could only be accomplished by geniuses of the Tian Yuan continent. On average, by the time someone reached the fourth layer of Saint Force, they would be ** years old.

TL Note: Raws say **

Chang Bai nodded his head, “I have watched fourth master grow up since he was a child. He is an outstanding genius in my eyes, and I believe in him. I can tell that the fourth master will be able to surpass even me in the future .”

Changyang Ba started to tremble and shake as he listened, his eyes expressing rapt excitement and minor disbelief.

Chang Bai continued to speak, “Back when the fourth master was revealed to be a cripple unable to cultivate Saint Force, I had found it quite strange. I had always found this situation to be fishy, but I couldn't figure out exactly what was off until today. With the fourth master's two displays of strength today, I'm finally able to confirm my suspicions; the fourth master was never a cripple, but indeed a genius of cultivation.”

Changyang Ba deeply inhaled to calm down his increasing heart rate, but before he could say anything more, a clans member came running in and said to him respectfully, “My lord, the third master has been injured. The third lady wishes for the lord to come visit right away.”

“I understand, you may leave.” Changyang Ba waved his hand, dismissing the clan member indifferently.

“Yes my lord!” The clan member bowed respectfully before slowly exiting.

Changyang Ba looked back at the housekeeper, “Chang Bai, it would be best if we head on over while checking up on Xiang’er. He has been neglected for so long after all.” After he had spoke, he immediately paused gravely. “Chang Bai, the two servants that dared to bully Xiang’er in the kitchen, I’ll leave it to you to drive them away from my mansion. Hmph, those two lowly servants, to think that they could bully Changyang Ba’s son without consequences.”

Chang Bai laughed briefly, “My lord, those two servants have already long since been driven off. Although one of them was introduced by the first lady Ling Long, the other servant’s older brother is the leader of one of the team captains of the patrol guards. But since they dared to bully the fourth master, they no longer have any reason to stay behind in this mansion. Otherwise, I would not dare to show face around the Changyang Mansion ever again.”

.....

In a largely decorated room, the recently injured Changyang Ke lay on the bed. With a pale face, he stared at the freshly bandaged wound on his stomach.

Sitting at the edge of the bed was Changyang Ke's mother Yu Feng Han, with a look of distress as she tended to her son. Not too far away, Jian Chen and his mother Bi Yuntian, as well as first aunt Ling Long, second aunt Bai Yushuang, and second sister Changyang Mingyue all stood around the bed.

Yu Feng Han looked back at Bi Yuntian with an angry look, "Fourth sister, your treasured son is getting more and more outrageous. To have assaulted my Ke Er with such a dangerous weapon; it's a good thing my Ke Er is very strong and didn't suffer a deadly wound. Otherwise, who knows how this might have gone?"

Jian Chen scowled as he listened to her, not accepting her words even a tiny bit, "This can't be blamed on me, it was third brother who had asked me to spar with him. A small injury like this is unavoidable. Besides, I was not using a dangerous weapon, but a tree branch. If anyone is to blame, then it is third brother's lack of skill."

Yu Feng Han's face went ashen at Jian Chen's remarks; what he had said made perfect sense and she could not refute them in any way.

Just thinking about how she had been outspoken against by a

mere child, an unholy rage rose up within her. Along with the words, “If anyone is to blame, then it is third brother’s lack of skill.”, Yu Feng Han’s face went from green to white in rapid succession. These words meant that her son was no stronger than a cripple who could not even cultivate Saint Force at all.

Hearing that Yu Feng Han be beaten by a child, Bai Yushuang could not help but laugh merrily, while Ling Long sat there with an expressionless face.

Chapter 11: Kargath Academy

Bi Yuntian held Jian Chen's head in a loving way as she slowly walked forward, "Third sister, this was only some playful sparring between kids; not something we should worry about. It's pointless to get angry; in the end, the two of them are just children after all. Right now, we should instead concentrate on healing Ke Er's wounds."

At the words of Bi Yuntian, despite still being quite mad, all Yu Feng Han could do was fume silently. She was afraid that if she continued to nag everyone about the acts of such small children, her three sisters would begin to see her in a darker light.

Bi Yuntian walked up to where Changyang Ke reclined, closed her eyes and brought her two hands over the boys wounds. Her hands hovered there for a moment before letting off a faint white glow.

At that moment, Jian Chen's eyes sparkled with interest. He could clearly sense that a special power was gradually gathering in his mother's hands, forming that faint white glow. Moreover, this type of special power was the exact same power that he was able to contain inside the ball he had made earlier.

Jian Chen began to pay close attention to his mother's movements, and in doing so he suddenly realized that he was actually unsure if he was able to understand the very same method his mother was using to manipulate the energy. After all, he had discovered ages ago that this ability to integrate the strength of the world was complicated.

The white glow in Bi Yuntian's hands grew stronger and stronger, yet the light never hurt one's eyes. After a few deep breaths, she flicked her arms and the milky white light left her hands and floated down to Changyang Ke's stomach, slowly merging with the wound there. The white bandages that were already there obstructed Jian Chen's view of what exactly the white ball of energy was doing, and what changes were occurring.

After completing her task, Bi Yuntian let out a deep breath, "Third sister, Changyang Ke is fine, his injuries should be nonexistent now."

A happy smile finally appeared on Yu Feng Han's face. She thanked Bi Yuntian briefly before quickly stepping over to Changyang Ke's bedside. She gave a concerned look towards her son and asked, "Ke Er, how are you feeling? Does your wound still hurt?"

Changyang Ke raised his hand to rub at his stomach area, and laughed before starting to tear at his bandages, "Mother, your son is all right now. It's very comfortable."

After the bandages fell off, it was clear that the wound on Changyang Ke's stomach was nowhere to be seen. Only a small bloody scar remained, but other than that, the wound had ceased to exist.

Upon seeing this, Jian Chen suddenly understood. This type of mysterious energy was the unique energy that belonged to Radiant

Saints. Their energy had a special healing effect that could heal any injury, no matter how grave. Under the care of a Radiant Saint, any wound would be healed rapidly. Since his own mother was a Radiant Saint, she was able to use this healing power. Legends said that some very strong Radiant Saints were able to regrow someone's arm, as well as having the power to resurrect the dead!

Inside Jian Chen's head, he had a secret thought: If he was able to understand and absorb the energy of the Radiant Saint, then he may be able to be like his mother, and have the same amount of control a Radiant Saint had to heal wounds.

As he had this thought, Jian Chen couldn't help but feel impatient, and wanted to test it out. However, in the end he still endured the temptation, since his current situation was not appropriate for experimenting.

At that moment, the doors to the room opened wide. Jian Chen glanced at the people who walked in together; it was his father, Changyang Ba, and the Changyang clan's housekeeper, Chang Bai.

"How is Ke Er, his injuries are not that severe are they?" Changyang Ba asked with a voice of concern.

"I thank my lord for his concern, but fourth sister has already healed him, so Ke Er is fine now." Yu Feng Han's face showed a hint of a smile. Changyang Ba was showing some concern for his son, so she felt happy.

“Then everything is fine now! Changyang Ba nodded his head and looked at Jian Chen, “Xiang’er, how have these past few days been treating you?” Even when talking to Jian Chen, some concern was being shown as well.

“I thank father for his concerns, your son has been doing very well.” Jian Chen’s voice was very even. Ever since the end of the Saint Test, this was the first time Changyang Ba and Jian Chen had talked to each other.

Hearing Jian Chen’s voice sound so clipped with a sense of detachment, Changyang Ba couldn’t help but sigh to himself secretly. “Xiang’er, come accompany your father to the study room.” Changyang Ba then turned around to exit from the room.

In a flash, Jian Chen followed Changyang Ba and Chang Bai into the study room. Sitting down on a chair, Changyang Ba stared at Jian Chen for a moment, before asking him, “Xiang’er, I have heard that earlier this morning, you injured Qiu Er of the kitchen servants this morning.”

“That is true!” Jian Chen had already realized that his true strength had already been revealed, so there was no point in trying to hide it.

Changyang Ba’s eyes had a cheerful expression as he laughed and said gently, “Xiang’er, why don’t you tell your father, can you already cultivate Saint Force?”

Jian Chen nodded his head faintly and answered as neutrally as

before, “Yes!” He knew that there was no way he could conceal this fact, so he admitted it with straightforward answer.

Although he already could guess that Jian Chen could cultivate Saint Force, hearing the confirmation from Jian Chen’s own mouth made Changyang Ba feel even more emotional.

“Chang Bai, may I trouble you to test Xiang’er’s Saint Force again?” Changyang Ba was happy now, but he still spoke to Chang Bai politely, not at all having an attitude of the clan master asking for a housekeeper to do something.

But Chang Bai only laughed, and brought the hand with his Space Ring up, causing the Saint Stone to once more appear right in front of Jian Chen’s eyes. “Fourth master, please put your hand on top of the stone!” He said in a warm tone.

The moment Jian Chen put his hand on the Saint Stone, Chang Bai also activated it. In that instant, Jian Chen once again felt that mysterious power being emitted from the Saint Stone, entering his body through his arms. Within him, the power roamed around in a circle, before finally returning back to the Saint Stone. At the same time, the only thing that could be seen was the entire Saint Stone suddenly emitting a faint red glow.

Seeing the Saint Stone glow red, Changyang Ba’s face showed an excited expression. Even Chang Bai now had a faint smile, and he looked at Jian Chen with a gratified look in his eyes.

“Clan leader, based on the strength of the glow, fourth master

has already reached the fourth Saint Force layer.” Chang Bai said with a faint smile.

“The fourth layer...the fourth layer...” Changyang Ba gradually stood up from his chair, and in excitement, he wrung his hands together. Before this, he had already guessed such a result, but it had only been a guess. Now that he knew the actual situation, he felt a new feeling in his heart.

Jian Chen had already reached the fourth Saint Force layer at the age of seven. Perhaps this level was not very outstanding compared to the entire Tian Yuan Continent, but within Gesun Kingdom, this was enough to qualify as a first class genius. Moreover, his third brother, Changyang Ke, was three years older than Jian Chen, and yet his inner Saint Force power had just reached the fourth layer.

Chang Bai once again placed the Saint Stone within his Space Ring. With a gratified look, he smiled, “Fourth master, you really have not disappointed me.”

Changyang Ba quickly calmed down, and glanced at Jian Chen in a completely transformed light. His eyes were now filled with surprise, excitement, and gratitude.

By the time Jian Chen left the study room, it was already almost noon. Right after Jian Chen left, Changyang Ba looked at Chang Bai, and with a slightly doubtful tone he said, “Chang Bai, since Xiang’er has Saint Force, then how come last time he was tested, it wasn’t detected? It had even scared me into thinking that Xian Er was a cripple that could was not able to cultivate Saint Force.”

Chang Bai furrowed his brows, and after pondering for a bit, slowly said, "I'm not completely sure either. Perhaps the last Saint Test malfunctioned somehow. However, this is no longer of any importance!"

Changyang Ba nodded, "Currently, Xiang'er is only around seven years old, and he has already reached the fourth Saint Force level. If this continues, I predict that the latest that Xiang'er will break through the tenth Saint Force level is by the age of eighteen and condense his Saint Force into a Saint Weapon. Moreover, Xiang'er has always been an outstanding genius since he was young, so I want to quickly send him to Kargath Academy to study. What does Chang Bai think?"

Hearing these words, Chang Bai pondered for a bit, then replied, "Kargath Academy is the most famous academy in our Gesun Kingdom. However, the threshold to enter the academy is high. The person's strength must have reached the eighth Saint Force level, and his or her age cannot be over eighteen. If clan leader wants to quickly send fourth master to Kargath Academy, I'm afraid that is impossible in such a short period of time. Although the fourth master has already reached the fourth Saint Force level, the distance to the eighth Saint Force level will most likely take quite a long time. After all, the higher the Saint Force level, the harder it is to raise."

"I hope that Xiang'er can quickly train to the eighth Saint Force level within the next few years." Changyang Ba said softly.

Chang Bai smiled, "Don't worry, clan leader. I believe that fourth

master will reach the eighth Saint Force layer sooner or later. The only issue is time, since just now, when I assessed fourth master, I discovered that fourth master's Saint Force wasn't far from reaching the fifth layer."

Hearing these words, Changyang Ba was unable to contain his joy, as he mumbled, "I hope that Xiang'er will really surpass Chang Bai in the future, and become the clan's pillar of support."

Chang Bai stood on the side, smiling wordlessly. However, his eyes did not at all hide his expression of anticipation.

.....

After leaving the study room, Jian Chen immediately ran quickly back to his own room. He tightly closed his door, and he recalled the entire frightening scene of his fight with Changyang Ke.

Although Jian Chen knew that during his fight with Dugu Qiubai in his previous world, he had made a breakthrough and entered the Realm of the Sword God, but he didn't dare think that after his reincarnation he would still be able to accomplish it. Just thinking about that remarkable ability sent Jian Chen into a spiral of joy and excitement.

But when Jian Chen thought back to when the tree branch had mysteriously emitted Sword Qi, he started to feel some doubt. He no longer had the same strength he had from the previous world, so how was it possible for him to control an ordinary tree branch with the same Sword Qi?

As he contemplated this, Jian Chen decided to give it a try once more. Scanning the room, his eyes noticed a nearby wooden clothes rack. Snapping off a 2 foot wooden strip, Jian Chen would use it as a makeshift sword.

Holding the two foot wooden strip, Jian Chen slowly entered a state of tranquility. Deep in his mind, Jian Chen slowly began to convince himself that the wooden strip in his hand was not a wooden strip, but a sword instead. A sword for a god, a sword for a god that could overcome anything. Slowly as he harmonized with it, he could feel the grains in his hands, and see them very clearly within his own head so well, he could even understand their internal compositions.

Sucking a deep breath, he tried to quell the feelings of emotions within his heart. Taking hold of his emotions, the item in his hand flew into the air.

Right as Jian Chen's mind had reached this state, he had already established a connection between the wooden strip and his spirit. As the wooden strip separated from his hand, it floated by itself in midair while still being under Jian Chen's control. It slowly inched forward before emitting a white ray of light, revealing the sharp Sword Qi he was familiar with.

At this moment, Jian Chen had realized his soul had completely harmonized with the wooden strip, to the point that it had felt like his own arm that could easily be controlled with his will. At the same time, he had realized that the Sword Qi in the wooden strip had something to do with his soul.

With that realization, Jian Chen could only see a bright ray of light coming from the hovering wooden strip and flew around his body with a speed so fast, even Jian Chen couldn't see it clearly.

Jian Chen's heart pulsed quickly as his face revealed a look of extreme joy. He had not thought that the final moment of his life in the previous world would he be able to understand the Sword's Soul.

From that day on, the remarkable ability of the Sword's Soul was not only Jian Chen's strongest attack, but also a skill that could save his life.

Unknowingly, a few years passed. The current Jian Chen was already fifteen years old. During these past few years, Jian Chen had rarely gone outside, and spent every day in his room training the Azulet Sword Law. His strength had already been revealed, and he had even been recognized as a cultivating genius. Thus, his position in the Changyang household had changed; there was no longer a single person in the household that dared to look down on him. Moreover, Changyang Ba had been extremely caring to Jian Chen in pretty much every possible way. Among this, the happiest one was Bi Yuntian. Originally, her son that was deemed as a cripple unable to cultivate, but now he had transformed into a cultivating genius, especially since he had reached the fourth Saint Force layer at the age of seven. Anyone could imagine how happy Bi Yuntian was about her son being extraordinary.

However, Jian Chen discovered that since he had revealed his true strength, his eldest aunt Ling Long and third aunt Yu Feng

Han seemed to always look at him with an unfriendly expression. This situation was one that the Jian Chen with memories of his previous life was well aware of.

Within the past few years, Jian Chen had already reached the eighth Saint Force layer. Moreover, this was only because Jian Chen had purposely slowed down his pace. That was because during the past few years, Jian Chen had used almost half the time to familiarize himself with the sword laws from his previous world. Otherwise, he most likely would have broken through the eighth level ages ago. Because of this, Jian Chen was currently not far from reaching the ninth layer already.

Right now, within the Changyang household, Jian Chen's strength had already well surpassed his second sister Changyang Mingyue, and his third brother Changyang Ke. Although Changyang Mingyue was over three years older than Jian Chen, her Saint Force had stopped at the seventh layer. As for Changyang Ke, he had never really had any talent for cultivating, and his current seventeen year old self had only achieved the fifth Saint Force layer after much difficulty.

In the early morning, a large group of people gathered outside the great hall. Amongst this group were Jian Chen's parents, his three aunts, and even his third brother, Changyang Ke, and his second sister, Changyang Mingyue. Aside from them, a few of Changyang household's chief figures were also present. There was also a bird-type magical beast about 3 meters large that calmly sat on the ground, not too far from the crowd of people.

Today was the day that Jian Chen would leave for Kargath

Academy to study. The minimum standard to enter Kargath Academy was having achieved the eighth level. In addition, the person's age could not be over eighteen. Currently, Jian Chen met both of these standards. Moreover, today happened to also be the enrolling general assembly for Kargath Academy that only occurred once a year.

Bi Yuntian's face was covered in tears as she looked at Jian Chen. With a loving gaze, she said, "Xiang'er, you have to study diligently at the academy. Try to stay out of trouble, understand?" Bi Yuntian spoke with a tone filled with deep concern.

Jian Chen obediently nodded, and said, "Don't worry, Mother, I know what I should do."

Changyang Ba walked up to Jian Chen, and said, "Xiang'er, this Space Belt is something Father prepared especially for you. Although it isn't anything priceless, and the amount of space inside isn't very large, it can still store some small things. If you break through the tenth level by the time you turn eighteen and condense your Saint Force into a Saint Weapon, then Father will reward you with a Space Ring and a Monster Core." While speaking, a very exquisite belt had already appeared in his hands. Seeing the size of the belt, it was obvious that it had been specifically tailored for Jian Chen.

Seeing Changyang Ba be so concerned about Jian Chen, Linglong and Fenyan, who were standing nearby, couldn't help but show a trace of deep jealousy and dissatisfaction. However, currently, everyone's gazes were gathered on Jian Chen, and nobody had noticed them.

Jian Chen accepted the belt, and said with a strong self-confidence, “Father, I will definitely become a Saint soon.”

Changyang Ba expressed a trace of a smile, and he looked at Jian Chen with a gaze full of gratification.

“Fourth master, it’s getting late. We should go on our way.” At that moment, the housekeeper Chang Bai that was standing on the side, spoke up.

Jian Chen gave one final glance at his mother, and then walked over to Chang Bai without once turning his back, and said, “Chang Bai, let’s leave.”

Chang Bai reached out and lifted Jian Chen onto the back of the flying magical beast. Afterwards, he jumped on as well, sitting next to Jian Chen. Faintly smiling at Jian Chen, he said, “Fourth master, sit tight please.”

Afterwards, he only saw Chang Bai pat the magical beast’s back. In an instant, the flying magical beast seemed to have received a command, and stretched out its 10 meter long wings to fly up. It directly rose up into the air, and began to quickly fly off into the distance.

Chapter 12: Big Brother Changyang Hu

Sitting on top of the flying magical beast, Jian Chen's face did not reveal any sort of emotion, even though they were flying at an extreme speed 1000 feet high up into the air. Since the beast was flying at such high speeds, he could hear a ceaseless rumbling sound from the wind in his ears.

Looking at Jian Chen's passive face, Chang Bai couldn't help but nod in approval. Most children generally paled in extreme fear after flying on top of a magical beast for the first time. Some children trembled in fear the whole time, while a smaller amount even wet themselves, but very few people had achieved the same tranquility as Jian Chen.

Chang Bai thought back to when he had sent Changyang Hu to Kargath Academy a few years back. After sitting on the flying beast, Changyang Hu's entire body had shivered from fright as he grabbed hold of the feathers on the beast's neck.

"The fourth master does not seem to be like the others; it truly makes one wonder what sort of accomplishments he will succeed in the future." Chang Bai thought to himself.

Jian Chen stared at the flying magical beast below him and asked, "Chang Bai, what kind of beast is this, to be flying at such a fast speed?"

"This is only natural!" Chang Bai spoke in a majestic voice, "Fourth master, you shouldn't underestimate this magical beast.

This magical beast is called the Eagle Beast; it is a Class 4 magical beast which is the equivalent of a Great Saint Master. It can fly through the sky at extremely fast speeds, and even though it is barely Class 4, even someone of the same rank of Earth Saint Master would not be able to fight it when it is in the sky.”

“Then that would mean this Eagle Beast is very expensive.” Jian Chen said.

Chang Bai nodded, “That is natural as well. Flying magical beasts are very expensive; not only because they are hard to capture, but hard to tame as well. Even though flying magical beasts are the fastest way of transportation, riding on one is very dangerous. In the case that a magical beast goes out of control, then the rider will be sent falling from thousands of meters in the air. Even with the power of an Earth Saint Master, surviving a fall like that would be unlikely and even if you’re lucky, you will still end up with a fatal injury. Even if it’s a Class 1 or 2 flying magical beast, its price is still very expensive, especially if it has a berserk nature or won’t submit to a human. Therefore, taming a flying magical beast is a very challenging task to accomplish.”

Jian Chen nodded his head before slowly becoming silent once more.

Chang Bai looked at the silent Jian Chen and said, “Fourth master, your older brother Changyang Hu is also at Kargath Academy. It has been a few years already, so becoming a Saint isn’t too far away for him. If you ever come across a problem at the academy, don’t be afraid to ask your older brother to help solve it.”

“Yes, I know.” Jian Chen replied. But his mind felt complicated when he thought of his mysterious older brother. Jian Chen had never seen him before, and he didn’t even know what his brother’s personality was like. He was also very worried about if his older brother would be jealous about his innate skill at cultivating Saint Force, like third brother Changyang Ke was. Being jealous over something like this was not at all uncommon within a big clan. In the previous world, Jian Chen had met all sorts of family strife due to a power struggle between siblings during his time as a traveler.

In Jian Chen’s heart, he desperately hoped that such a situation would not happen to him. In his previous world, he was an orphan who had never experienced any sort of familial love. Since the heavens had blessed him with a family this time, he treasured it deeply.

After the Eagle Beast flew for half the day at an extremely high speed, it finally arrived at Kargath Academy, where under Chang Bai’s control, it descended to a mere 100 meters above ground.

Kargath Academy was established within the plains, with a great wall 10 meters high surrounding it. The academy was extraordinarily big, and the lands it covered were vast as well. Even though Jian Chen was hovering 100 meters above ground, he still couldn’t see the entire academy.

Kargath Academy was the most prestigious academy in the Gesun Kingdom, and today was its annual opening ceremony. For that reason, the front gates were extremely lively. There were many people there, as well as a few luxurious carriages that were parked not too far away. However, Jian Chen couldn’t put names to the

types of magical beasts that were pulling the carriages. Virtually every carriage had a few guards protecting them.

In the skies, a few flying magical beasts approached them, descending down onto the academy courtyards. Each of them carried a small child.

Chang Bai instructed the Eagle Beast to fly down towards the courtyards as well, landing them right next to a 100 meter tall tower. He brought Jian Chen directly into the tower. Outside, there were still quite a few flying magical beasts resting there,

Jian Chen and Chang Bai walked to the top of the tower to meet the headmaster of Kargath Academy. The headmaster was not that much different in age than Chang Bai, and Jian Chen had a feeling that the two had some sort of familiarity between them.

Because of this familiarity, Jian Chen could easily enter the academy without any problems. Under the instructions of the headmaster, Jian Chen's brother Changyang Hu had been called up to the top of the tower as well, allowing him to see the mysterious older brother he had never met before.

Changyang Hu was already 18 years old, the same age as his second sister Changyang Mingyue, but Changyang Mingyue was younger by 3 months.

Changyang Hu was a fairly sturdy teenager who was taller than Jian Chen, and he wore the academy uniform. He had already been enrolled in the academy for over 2 years, and his Saint Force had

also reached the peak of the 10th layer. However, he had not yet condensed it into a Saint Weapon.

The distance between the peak of the 10th layer and Sainthood was not big at all, but the moment in between was very important, as condensing the Saint Force into a Saint Weapon was a very challenging task. On the Tian Yuan continent, many people weren't capable of forming a Saint Weapon since birth, because they lacked the aptitude, as well as the innate skill. According to the headmaster, Changyang Hu had already reached the peak of the 10th layer a year ago and had already tried to form a Saint Weapon 3 times, but only met with failure each time.

However, seeing an 18 year old that could form a Saint Weapon by the age of 18 was rare to see on the Tian Yuan continent. The average age was around 20 years before a Saint Weapon could be formed, but most of them were geniuses. Of course, the average person could make a Saint Weapon at that age as well, but most of them would not be able to walk down the path of martial arts for long.

Because the spiritual Qi of the Tian Yuan continent was abundant, the average life span of a person was around 200 years. For a person to form a Saint Weapon at the age of 20, that could be considered decent.

Chang Bai pointed at Changyang Hu and said to Jian Chen, "Fourth master, that person is your brother Changyang Hu." Looking over at him, he cried, "Eldest master, this is your younger brother Changyang Xiang Tian."

“Big brother!” Jian Chen looked at Changyang Hu with a smile as he shouted out a greeting. In his eyes, he had felt that Changyang Hu looked to be a strong yet straightforward person, but his heart was not in complete agreement.

Hearing Jian Chen’s shout, Changyang Hu scratched at his cheek with a laugh, “Fourth brother, feel free to call on me anytime. If you are bullied in the future, then look for me straight away, and I’ll smash them to pieces!”

Laughing at his brother’s speech, Jian Chen responded, “Then I’ll be relying on, you big brother.” With this first impression, Jian Chen had thought that Changyang Hu was pretty nice, and so all worries he had about his big brother began to disappear like smoke.

Changyang Hu shook his head and laughed once more, “It’ll be no problem, not a problem at all. No matter what you say, I am still your older brother, so protecting the fourth brother is an absolute must.” After this, Changyang Hu suddenly froze before looking around, his eyes revealing some doubts. “Chang Bai, where are second sister and third brother?” He asked.

“Eldest master, the second lady and third master have not yet reached the requirements to enter the academy, so it is only the fourth master that was able to join.” Chang Bai answered serenely.

“Oh!” Hearing that, Changyang Hu let loose a disappointed look and began to mutter, “How did they not reach the requirement of reaching the 8th layer. This is silly. Fourth brother is more formidable, since he reached the 8th layer so quickly. He’s even

more amazing than me, his older brother.

“Eldest master, please escort the fourth master down. From today on, you need to properly look after your younger brother. I still have some business to settle with the headmaster.” Chang Bai said.

Changyang Hu nodded his head firmly and pounded his chest with his fist, “Chang Bai, don’t worry! I definitely won’t allow anyone in the school to bully fourth brother!”

Afterwards, Jian Chen received the school medal and left with his older brother.

After exiting the tower, Jian Chen looked at the school medal in his hands. Aside from it being proof of him being a student, it also contained his dorm address.

Although Jian Chen was not familiar with the layout of the academy, but because Changyang Hu was there to lead the way, they both ended up at their destination sooner than he had expected.

The dormitories of the academy were built using a very durable type of stone and were split into 2 different areas. One area was for the commoners to live in, and the other side was for people like Jian Chen, who had a prestigious clan backing them up. The differences between the two were like comparing the heavens to the earth.

Kargath Academy was Gesun Kingdom's most prestigious academy, so it naturally had to have a unique characteristic. Kargath Academy had a very strict rule; one must reach the 8th layer of Saint Force before they reach the age of 18 in order to fulfill the requirement. If a student does not reach this level, then even if they are from an extremely prestigious and rich family, they will not be able to enroll in the academy.

Because the tuition costs were very low, even the commoners were able to enroll with ease. Some of the students that successfully enrolled came from impoverished families, but Kargath Academy had even waived the fee for many. For that reason, many students were of a commoner's background, and had a poor innate skill for cultivation.

At Kargath Academy, there was also another iron-set rule that an aristocrat's follower could not casually bully commoner students. Otherwise, no matter how powerful your family background was, you would still suffer from a serious punishment. If the situation was serious enough, then you might even be expelled. Although this would offend some major families, Kargath Academy's had the backing of the Gesun Kingdom. Moreover, the headmaster was one of the six major elites in Gesun Empire, so no major family dared to speak up against this iron-set rule.

Jian Chen's dorm room was around 10 square meters, and the room's decor was extremely simple. Aside from a bed and a chair, there wasn't anything else present. However, the entire room had been tidied so that it was extremely clean and organized, and it was completely spotless.

“Fourth brother, this is your room; remember the location well, and be careful to not go the wrong way.” Changyang Hu laughed.

Jian Chen nodded, and after throwing down some of the clothes he had brought with him, he was pulled away by his older brother to wander around the school grounds. Changyang Hu claimed that it was so that Jian Chen could familiarize himself with his new surroundings.

For the entire afternoon, Jian Chen was dragged around by Changyang Hu to wander aimlessly around the school.

Suddenly, Changyang Hu opened his mouth to say, “Fourth brother, tomorrow is the annual new student competition. There are plenty of rewards, and the first newcomer king can even win a rank 3 Magic Stone. The person in second place can win a rank 2 Magic Stone, and the person in third place can win a rank 1 Magic Stone. You have to try your best and earn first place.”

Chapter 13: Competition Of The New Students

Jian Chen's heart pounded after hearing that, "Eldest brother, aren't Class 3 Monster Cores precious?" Even though Jian Chen knew about monster cores, he was still ignorant in regards to their prices.

"Of course. Class 3 Monster Cores can be sold for more than 100 Amethyst coins. I joined this academy 4 years ago, but I have never been able to use a Class 3 Monster Core; the highest I've used was a Class 2 core that cost me 50 Amethyst coins." Changyang Hu's face started to show signs of heartache after saying that.

Jian Chen began to plan it all out in his head. He quickly decided that he would try his best to win that Class 3 Monster Core from the martial arts competition. Despite never using a Class 3 Monster core before, he knew that absorbing the energy contained inside would allow him to increase his rate of cultivation. He didn't know how fast he would be able to absorb World Essence after taking the Class 3 Core, but he knew that by using it, the peak of the 10th Saint Force Layer was within reach.

As the sky gradually grew darker, Changyang Hu led Jian Chen down to the student dining hall. After the dinner they split off and went their own ways, returning to their dormitories.

After returning to his room, Jian Chen closed the door and sat on his bed and to begin cultivating once more. However, he suddenly heard a knock on the door. Jian Chen looked at the door in confusion, before walking to the door and opening it.

Standing outside the door was a 30 year old woman wearing a light green dress. Although her beauty was not so much as to cause entire cities to war for her favor, she could still be considered beautiful. Her long, dark green hair went down to her shoulders, and gave off an impression as if it was floating.

“Is there something you needed?” Jian Chen asked with some confusion.

“You are one of the new students of Kargath Academy. Tomorrow will be the Kargath Academy’s annual Freshmen Competition. It is mandatory for all new students to participate. Do not forget to come.” She spoke with a tone that was as equally apathetic as her stare.

“Yes, I know. Is there anything else?” Jian Chen asked.

“No.” After dropping this word, the woman turned around to leave and walk to the next room. It seemed as if she had to notify every student one by one.

Closing the door, Jian Chen returned to his bed and sat down on it. Quickly, he returned to a silent state of cultivation.

The next morning, Jian Chen finished his night of cultivation, left his room and headed towards the dining hall alone. Since he left so early, there weren’t many people up yet so he was able to find himself an empty table to sit at due to the entire hall being almost empty.

After eating his breakfast, Jian Chen headed towards the center of the academy grounds where the sports field were. The martial arts competition would be taking place in the stadium here.

Along the way, Jian Chen noticed that he was surrounded by freshmen just like him, and they were also heading towards the sports field. Because the elder students all wore a school uniform, Jian Chen could clearly recognize which ones were freshmen. Although, there weren't that many upperclassmen; perhaps they did not have much interest in the freshman competition.

When Jian Chen arrived at the sports field, he could see 5 circles, each 30 feet in diameter, on top of the sports grounds. There were already many people already surrounding it.

Jian Chen arrived at a tree a few meters away from the grounds. Quickly running towards the tree, he pushed off against the tree trunk to jump upwards towards the tree top. Settling down on the tree branch, Jian Chen started to rest in the shade, since it was still too early for the competition to start. He was in no rush to get there so early, and pointlessly suffer under the blazing sun.

Time quickly passed. Soon, it was the time for the competition to start. At this time, the competition arena was already packed with thousands of students. Only a few of them wore student uniforms, everyone else was a new student.

However, Jian Chen noticed that most of the freshmen students – students who had achieved the ninth layer or better – were most

definitely from commoner families. He made this judgement based on the new student uniforms they all had to wear; these people were wearing crude and coarse versions. This made sense given that the Gesun Kingdom was predominantly comprised of commoners, and children from impoverished families were used to working hard. Thus, these kids worked hard to improve when cultivating Saint Force, and so were capable of reaching the 8th layer and joining Kargath Academy.

Aside from those students, the rest of the freshmen seemed to be around 16 to 17 years old. There were even some ** year olds. Jian Chen himself was 15 when he had reached the 8th layer, an achievement that could not be so easily replicated, and so it made Jian Chen the youngest student there. Despite that, Jian Chen's physical growth far surpassed anyone else. Although he was really 15 years old, he was built as if he were a few years older.

After resting for a while, Jian Chen hopped to the ground nimbly and walked towards the competition area. Although a crowd was already forming, Jian Chen didn't try to force his way through. Instead, he calmly stood on the outside. Regarding the freshman martial arts competition, Jian Chen had no interest in it at all; even watching it didn't seem appealing to him. The only reason he would be participating today was because of the Class 3 Monster Core.

“Everyone, quiet down!”

Suddenly, a loud piercing sound rang out. The cry was so loud, it was heard by everyone in the sports field and everybody immediately became quiet. In an instant, the whole field became

absolutely silent..

A white-robed, middle-aged man came walking up to the podium. The man looked like any other man his age, with no remarkable features. However, the light in his eyes was so bright, it looked as if he had a Saint Weapon hidden inside, making people afraid to stare straight into his eyes.

Looking at everyone, the man smiled kindly. Speaking loudly in a friendly voice, he said, “Dear students, I am the vice-principal of Kargath Academy Bai En. I will be the one in charge of today’s martial arts competition today as well as being the one who makes up the rules. I am going to presume everyone has already seen the rules on the post board at the school gates, so I won’t repeat it. The prize for this year is the same as always, the first place winner will win a Class 3 Monster Core, the runner up will win the Class 2 Monster Core, and the third place winner will get the Class 1 Monster Core. Other than that, the top 50 participants in this competition will receive a single Amethyst coin as a prize.

Hearing this, every single student wearing the uniform of the commoners began to cheer in excitement. They did not spend much from day to day and only had simple food as their meal every day. A single Gold Coin was enough to feed a family of three for a month, and an Amethyst Coin was worth 100 Gold coins. Although a Monster Core was a precious item, but none of them had any high hopes to win one since there were only 3 chances to earn one. But getting a single Amethyst coin had 50 chances to be earned.

At this moment, pretty much all the students from less privileged families could not help but become more excited. They all

inwardly swore to themselves that for the sake of this Amethyst Coin, they would have to work hard to enter the top 50 spots.

Looking at the jubilant expressions on the faces of the commoners, some of the nobles looked on with disdain. A single Amethyst coin may not be such a small amount of money to a commoner, but to a noble, it was worth very little. Even Jian Chen had 50 Amethyst coins on himself to use as he wished.

The freshmen martial arts competition began not long after. The students personally drew individual lots to draw tags from within a large container. However, the tags were covered by a piece of paper, making it impossible to see the numbers on them.

The two pots had different labels. One of the pots were for students who had reached the 8th layer while the other pot was for those who had reached the 9th layer. This method made sure that no student would fight another student from a different layer and make the outcome of the battle completely predictable from the start.

Although Kargath Academy's lowest entry requirement was having reached the eighth Saint Force level, there were always some new people amongst the freshmen every year that were geniuses who were not at all lacking in terms of cultivation. It could also be said that there were a few treasured geniuses that had been given up by the aristocratic families, so there were always freshmen that had already achieved the ninth Saint Force layer admitted to the school every year.

Drawing lots did not take long to accomplish, and soon enough it

was Jian Chen's turn. Looking at the pot, Jian Chen casually grabbed a single tag from within. Unsealing the tag, he read the words with a relieved look, "Third stage, number 64."

Seeing the number on the tag, he inwardly understood clearly that his opponent would be number 136 on the third stage, because this time's competition matched opponents based on finding the two numbers that would give a sum of 200.

After getting their tags, every student slowly walked towards their respective platforms while Jian Chen walked over to the third platform.

The competitions were progressing at a fast rate, as the first round of the competition only took half a day. Because Jian Chen's own opponent was not at all knowledgeable about how to fight with martial arts, Jian Chen had easily won and made his way into round 2.

After eating lunch, the freshmen martial arts competition continued. However, the number of competitors had decreased by half. It seemed like there were only 500 people present by the end of that first round.

The second round was decided in the same way as the first round, with drawing lots. Because the amount of people that remained was far less than that of the first round, it had only took 4 hours to finish. By the end of the 2nd round, 256 students were left standing. Coincidentally, since it was an even number, then there would not be an awkward situation where there would be a student that was left out of the drawings.

Immediately heading into the third round, people began to draw lots to find their opponents. By night time, there were only 128 people that advanced onwards, with Jian Chen standing amongst them with a lazy expression.

Leaving the competition grounds, Jian Chen noticed that the sky had long since darkened. He rubbed at his protesting stomach and shook his head with slight disappointment. In his previous world, he could have gone several days and nights without eating and still not feel hungry. Now that he was used to three meals a day, he now felt hungry after skipping a single meal, leaving Jian Chen to feel slightly disappointed with himself.

Soon, Jian Chen arrived at the dining hall. After receiving his food, he found an empty seat and began to eat. Although the food was simple, completely incomparable to what he had in the Changyang household, Jian Chen still ate it with relish.

Since the current freshmen martial arts competition had just ended, the current number of people present in the dining hall was not any less than usual. In fact, there were so many people that not long after Jian Chen sat down, all of the seats in the dining hall had been filled. There were still many people who couldn't find available spaces. Although Jian Chen was sitting alone at a table, not a single person dared to sit together with him, since all the other students there were peasants. How could they possibly dare to sit with Jian Chen, who was wearing luxurious clothing? It was obvious at first glance that he was from an aristocratic family.

“Peng!”

Chapter 14: Tie Ta

“Peng!”

Just as Jian Chen began to eat with relish, a hand suddenly slapped onto his shoulder, causing the table to shake from the action.

Jian Chen scowled as he slowly lifted his head up. The owner of the hand belonged to a male noble around 20 years old. Beside him were two youths, with faces full of arrogance. One was a male, and one was a female, and both wore luxurious satin clothing. It was obvious from first glance that they were from wealthy families.

Looking at the three nicely dressed students with a flat expression, he spoke with an annoyed expression, “Is there a problem?”

The 20 year old noble’s face had an ominous glint as he stared at Jian Chen. Speaking arrogantly, the noble said, “Hey, brat. This table here belongs to us, you should sit somewhere else.” Although the youth could tell that Jian Chen was by no means a commoner from the clothes he wore, the youth still did not bother to look at Jian Chen in the eye.

Hearing what the male had said, Jian Chen looked at him with disdain and said, “If you want to eat, then sit down and eat. This table is for the entire school to enjoy; furthermore, the table doesn’t have your name written on it. Since when did this table become yours?”

After hearing this, the noble's face looked quite angry. Having already lost his patience, he shouted, "Are you going to move or not?"

By this time, the spectacle at Jian Chen's table had already attracted the attention of everyone else. Although there were many people watching, no one had the audacity to step in to say something.

A smirk appeared on Jian Chen's face. These type of occurrences happened many times in his past life, but he would always teach the other aggravators a lesson.

"Of course I'll let you, just wait for me to finish my food first." Looking away, Jian Chen began to dig into his food with renewed interest. Because he stuffed his face full of food, Jian Chen's voice was slightly muffled

However, to these three people, Jian Chen's meaning was loud and clear.

"Brother, it looks your power isn't enough in this school; you couldn't even claim a table. You'd better not make the two of us eat our food outside." The girl behind the noble lightly laughed.

Hearing these words, the look of awkwardness on the face of the 20 years old or so young man disappeared, leaving only a look of anger. Staring viciously at Jian Chen, he shouted, "Kid, what is your name, and what family are you from? If you have the

courage, tell me.”

Jian Chen’s eyebrows creased together, but before he could say anything, another voice cried out, “Ka Di Yun, you are one of the upper classmen of Kargath Academy, to think you have the nerve to bully one of the freshmen!”

The one who had spoken was another person about the same age as Ka Di Yun. He also wore the same academy uniform, and he walked towards them.

Seeing this youth, Ka Di Yun face slightly changed. His eyes showed a hint of fear, as he said, “Bai Mo Ran, you should not meddle in my affairs.”

At this point, Jian Chen knew the names of both people. The one from earlier was called Ka Di Yun, and the one that had just arrived was called Bai Mo Ran.

The youth called Bai Mo Ran chuckled and said, “Ka Di Yun, it is true that your affairs are not for me to meddle in. But since I am an upperclassman, I cannot ignore the troubles of a junior.”

Hearing this, the faces of the two youths standing behind Ka Di Yun changed.

At this time, the girl standing behind Ka Di Yun hesitated a bit, and then lightly tugged at Ka Di Yun’s clothes. She lightly whispered, “Big brother, there are some open seats over there, we

should just go sit over there.

Ka Di Yun looked around the dining hall, and sure enough, a spot not too far away had opened up. Staring at Jian Chen with a ferocious glare, he waved his hand, “Second brother, third sister, let’s go.” He said as he started to walk over to the empty table; if he had continued with this spectacle, then there would have been no benefit for him. He was also slightly afraid of coming out as the loser, since Bai Mo Ran’s clan was not at all weaker than the Ka Di clan. Bai Mo Ran himself was actually stronger than him.

But that wasn’t the most important aspect. The bigger matter at hand was that if word got out that an upper classman like Ka Di Yun was bullying one of the freshmen, then he would become the target of ridicule. Furthermore, if the headmaster heard about this, then he would definitely receive a strict punishment.

Another reason why Ka Di Yun wasn’t willing to pick on commoners for their seats was for something that every upper classman knew about within their hearts. As one of the 6 experts of the Gesun Kingdom, the headmaster of Kargath Academy was very partial towards the poor students.

At that moment, Ka Di Yun’s sister looked at Jian Chen with renewed interest as if she suddenly recalled something. Opening her mouth, she said, “Oh, I just remembered. You’re one of the 128 freshmen students that made it into the next step of the competition. I saw you on top of the fighting arenas.” As she spoke, the girl’s eyes suddenly gained a malicious intent within them.

Hearing this, the previously silent male turned around to say something, “I hope that I’ll be matched up against you tomorrow in the competition then.” With an evil laugh, he turned around and walked towards the empty table where Ka Di Yun was heading towards.

Taking in the words of that male student, Jian Chen didn’t bother responding, nor did he care about the person at all.

Bai Mo Ran walked on over to Jian Chen and patted his shoulder with a laugh, “You really have guts to not have given Ka Di Yun face. If he tries to bully you in the future, then all you need to do is just look for me.”

Jian Chen stood up from his stool and smiled, “I am Changyang Xiang Tian. Thank you for helping me with this embarrassing situation, otherwise, I’m afraid it would had escalated into something troublesome.”

Bai Mo Ran started to chuckle, “Junior doesn’t need to be this polite. Ka Di Yun’s clan has been fairly aggressive within the academy recently. I’ve long since found him to be quite annoying, but unfortunately, I could never find an opportunity to teach him a lesson. Right, I am called Bai Mo Ran, you can just call me Senior Bai Mo Ran though.”

“You’ll want to be very careful in the competition tomorrow. The two people behind Ka Di Yun were his younger sister Kai Di Qiu Li, and his younger brother Ka Di Liang. It’s been rumored that both of them have already reached the 9th layer of Saint Force.”

Jian Chen only laughed and said, “Senior Bai Mo Ran, don’t worry. If I end up seeing them, then I will definitely be careful.”

Nodding, Bai Mo Ran said, “It’s getting late so I’ll be returning to my dorm. Junior, I hope we’ll see each other again.”

After Bai Mo Ran left, Jian Chen quickly finished up the rest of his meal before returning to his dorm. Throughout the entire day, he hadn’t seen his older brother Changyang Hu at all. His actions and whereabouts were completely unknown.

Casually sweeping away the dust in his room, Jian Chen climbed onto the bed and began to cultivate once more, as per accordance to the lessons.

The second day of the competition quickly progressed. Because there were less and less people, the top 8 were quickly decided by the end of the day. After the top 50 had been established, the academy had canceled the rule that prevented students from the 8th layer to fight against those from the 9th layer. The students were now free to fight with whomever they were matched up against, so aside from Jian Chen and another suntanned student, the other 6 students had already reached the 9th layer of Saint Force. In order for the suntanned student or Jian Chen to enter the top 8, they had to defeat some students who had already reached the 9th layer of Saint Force.

Other than that, Jian Chen had ran into something unexpected. Of the 6 freshmen who reached the 9th layer, 2 of them were the

students he had ran into yesterday: Ka Di Qiuli and Ka Di Liang. Although Jian Chen had yet to fight against the two, he felt that each time he saw them, there was a hidden air of provocation between them.

Regarding the two siblings' glares, Jian Chen paid no mind to them. In his mind, he could only think about pitting himself against the only other 8th layer Saint Force freshman. That male student's martial art style was clearly seen by Jian Chen, who thought that it was fairly unique that suited him greatly. His strength was extraordinary as well, which was the main reason why he had made it into the top 8 without any real trouble. His strength far surpassed those of anyone else his age,, and half the opponents he had faced had been thrown out of the ring.

The final matches were to be held tomorrow, and by the end of that, the Freshmen Ruler would be announced.

Leaving the sports grounds, Jian Chen immediately headed towards the dining hall. After getting his food, he saw out of the corner of his eye one of the competitors of the competition; it was the suntanned student. He was currently eating by himself in a corner of the room. The student was wearing simple clothing with a few patches over it. Although the male looked to be around 16 years old, Jian Chen could see a firm expression on his slightly immature face. His stature and build did not fit his age at all; he was already reaching a height of 1.8 meters, almost as tall as Jian Chen's brother, Changyang Hu, and his girth was larger by a circle too.

With a bit of hesitation, he walked towards the table where the

suntanned student was eating, and sat down with his tray. Turning his head to greet him, Jian Chen smiled, “I am Changyang Xiang Tian. What name do you go by?”

Tilting his head up to meet Jian Chen, his eyes slowly swept over his clothes before he said, “I am called Tie Ta.”

Laughing, Jian Chen said, “I only recently saw you fight in the competition. To see a student of the 8th layer beat students of the 9th layer is truly amazing.”

Hearing Jian Chen’s praise, Tie Ta couldn’t help but laugh as well, “I only won because my strength was better than theirs, that’s all. They were truly difficult to deal with; even now I’m still sore from the matches.”

Chapter 15: Ka Di Qiuli

Hearing Tie Ta, Jian Chen couldn't help but ask, "Tie Ta, you say you have a great amount of strength, but how heavy of an object can you lift?"

"When I was back at home, I could lift a 200 kilogram rock." He said quite arrogantly with a face full of pride.

Jian Chen's face went blank as he heard that answer. This was a monster of a student; a 200 kilogram rock was impossible to lift for the average adult. But for a young boy like Tie Ta to be able to lift such a titanic rock, Jian Chen could only feel awe from this fact.

"Tie Ta, how old are you?" Jian Chen had started to look at Tie Ta in a different light now.

"16 years old." Tie Ta said as he munched on his food, his chewing caused his words to be almost inaudible.

Jian Chen's impression of him grew even more as he said, "Tie Ta, did you have this strength since you were a kid?"

"That's right, my strength was always stronger than most but then so was my appetite. Because I couldn't always eat until I was full in my home, I usually went up to the mountains and hunted for my own food." Tie Ta said flatly.

Taking in a deep breath, Jian Chen mentally confirmed that Tie

Ta's strength was definitely a god given power. Otherwise, a young boy like him would never have been able to lift such a heavy rock. But what surprised Jian Chen even more was that Tie Ta would frequently hunt by himself in the mountains. For someone who was barely 16 to be able to hunt with ease in the mountains, this made Jian Chen's respect for him grow by an extreme amount. After all, not only did wild beasts appear in the mountains, magical beasts would occasionally appear as well and the latter's strengths were incomparable to those of regular wild beasts.

Tie Ta rubbed at his stomach and stood up from his stool with a laugh, "Changyang Xiang Tian, I've eaten my fill so I'll be returning to my dorm to sleep. Tomorrow is another day of the competition after all."

Jian Chen nodded his head, "I hope that you will make it into the top 3 in tomorrow's contest."

Tie Ta fiercely nodded and a resolute look could be seen in his eyes, "I will definitely work hard and strive for the top 3. A single Class 1 Monster Core can be sold for at least 10 Amethyst coins!"

Not long after Tie Ta had left, Jian Chen quickly ate his own food and returned to his room. Right as he closed the door behind him, a knock could be heard on it.

"Fourth brother, are you here?" Asked Changyang Hu in a strong voice.

Hearing the voice, Jian Chen was surprised. It had been two full

days since he had last seen any trace of his brother. Quickly opening the door, he invited Changyang Hu inside his room.

“Fourth brother, I’m sorry but I haven’t been keeping track with your progress in the competition.” He hurriedly said before Jian Chen could open his mouth to ask a question.

Jian Chen nodded his head and said, “I’ve already advanced onto the top 8; tomorrow will be the final day of the matches.”

As he listened to Jian Chen, Changyang Hu suddenly grew happy for his younger brother’s success. Excitedly, he said, “Fourth brother, you are truly amazing! It’s no wonder you came here before second sister and third brother.” Fishing a thumb sized crystal out of his pockets, Changyang Hu placed it within Jian Chen’s hands, “Fourth brother, this is a Class 1 Monster Core. Two days ago, a few friends and I went to the forest behind the academy and killed a Class 1 Magical Beast together. This is the monster core I fought to get for you, so take it. It’s already getting late, so your big brother won’t disturb your rest anymore. Tomorrow is the final day of the competition, so you must work hard and earn the number one title!” Changyang Hu then exited from the room, after slowly closing the door shut.

The moment before Changyang Hu could close the door, Jian Chen caught a glimpse of a 3 inch long claw mark that ran down Changyang Hu’s arm.

Silently looking at the Class 1 Monster Core in his hands, Jian Chen felt a wave of warmth that lingered. For a while, Jian Chen’s heart was actually unable to calm down.

Although it was only a Class 1 Monster Core, Jian Chen could feel Changyang Hu's concern radiating from it. Thinking back to the wound on Changyang Hu's arm, Jian Chen knew that the wound came from hunting a magical beast. Whenever Jian Chen thought about the gift, he couldn't help but feel warm inside, another emotion that he had never experienced in his previous life.

After standing in the center of his room with a stunned expression for a while, Jian Chen finally took a deep breath, gradually forcing himself into a state of calm. Then, he got onto his bed to start cultivating once more. Although he had the monster core now, he did not want to use it just yet, so he stored it away in his Space Belt. With the competition in mind, Jian Chen fully believed that he could take the number one spot. After all, in his previous world, he was a unique expert that stood at the peak of the world. And although he had lost a great amount of his power after reincarnating, he still had the knowledge of every type of swordplay, as well as understanding the deep profound sword laws, so much that they were ingrained into his soul. He had not lost his understanding of the ways of the sword, and so this is how Jian Chen would advance through the continent in the future.

The next morning, Jian Chen finished his breakfast quickly before arriving at the competition. Perhaps it was because today was the final day of the competition, but a lot more people came today than the two previous days combined. Many of these newcomers were older students.

The fighting grounds had been fully fixed last night, and the original five arenas had been changed to four. However, the four arenas were now larger than before; the arenas from yesterday

were on a completely different level that couldn't be compared with the new sizes.

At this moment, Jian Chen felt something behind him. Turning around, he saw his older brother Changyang Hu forging his way forward of the crowd, trying to reach him.

Taking note of Jian Chen's stare, Changyang Hu smiled widely. Quickly detaching himself from the crowd, he ran up to Jian Chen's side and slapped him on the shoulder. "Fourth Brother, today is the day you must work hard. Your big brother won't demand of you to get the number one spot; getting into the top 3 is good enough!" To Changyang Hu, getting a monster core was only a minor reward, the most important thing was getting a good rank. Although the price of a monster core was not easily ignored, it was not something that the eldest son of the Changyang Clan deeply desired.

Jian Chen laughed and said, "Big brother, you don't have to worry. I definitely will not let you down."

The time of the competition came quickly. This time, the top 8 would fight it out in the semi finals. After drawing lots to decide their opponents, Jian Chen immediately walked onto the arena. Not long after, Jian Chen's opponent slowly came up into the arena, but to Jian Chen's surprise, his opponent was a girl. More precisely, his opponent was the girl from last time— Ka Di Qiuli.

Ka Di Qiuli was wearing a dark red style of clothing, and although she was only 16 or 17 years old, her body was developing nicely. What should be sticking out was sticking out, and what

should be thin was thin. Her skin tight uniform sketched her out to be a true example of a beautiful woman with delicate white skin, along with her naturally beautiful face with tender white skin. At this point, she had already enraptured the attention of all the boys in the crowd and, without a doubt, Ka Di Qiuli was definitely beautiful enough to cause cities to fight over her. However, as true as it was for most people born into a prestigious clan, she carried around with her an arrogant air.

Jian Chen stood empty handed on top of the arena. The reason why he was empty handed was because of the academy rules. They believed that the best way to judge a person's strength was by empty handed combat, and so bladed weapons were not allowed. And since it was not possible to form a Saint Weapon without being a Saint, all of the freshmen were forced to fight without weapons.

Ka Di Qiuli looked at Jian Chen with a haughty look, "You really didn't let us down. For your arrogance in the dining hall the other day, I'll be sure to teach you a lesson today." Ka Di Qiuli's voice carried a sharp but clear sounding tone.

Hearing this Jian Chen's face revealed a grin of disdain. Within the people who were born within prestigious clans, many of them truly did not know how vast the heavens and earth were.

"Boom!"

A loud sound rung throughout the arena, signalling the start of the match.

Because all four of the arenas were in the same place, the moment the gong was heard, all 8 participants simultaneously started to move and began to fight.

Ka Di Qiuli quickly strode towards Jian Chen, but when she was within 3 meters from him, she suddenly jumped up into the air to deliver a flying jump kick towards his face. Although Ka Di Qiuli was young, she was fairly strong since she was already at the 9th Saint Force layer.

Jian Chen stood in place without moving a single step. As Ka Di Qiuli's foot got closer to his face, he tilted his neck sideways, allowing the kick to merely graze past the side of his head.

Ka Di Qiuli's reaction speed was fairly fast, the moment she realized her kick didn't connect, she swung out at his nose with a Saint Force enhanced fist. Not only was her fist coming in at rapid speeds, but with a huge amount of energy stored within her fist, any normal person would come out with serious injuries after being hit by that. As far as Jian Chen was concerned, she would not hold back. No matter if she ended up defeating Jian Chen and moving on into the top 4, or if she was just teaching Jian Chen a lesson, she would definitely not allow herself to hold back.

Jian Chen dealt with Ka Di Qiuli's attack with ease, and although his opponent was one layer higher than him, Jian Chen was not like an average child. His battle experiences from his past world were abundant, so if he wanted to continue this match without fighting back, then Ka Di Qiuli wouldn't even be able to touch his clothes, much less beat him within five rounds.

After Ka Di Qiuli had tried to attack him a few dozen times without even being able to even touch Jian Chen's clothes, she grew extremely annoyed and stopped her barrage of blows. Panting slightly, she stuck both her hands by her waists and glared at Jian Chen, "Hey, are you going to actually fight or not? If you're not going to fight, then get off the arena instead of jumping around all over the place."

Jian Chen laughed as he looked at the fuming Ka Di Qiuli and said, "The person that'll be leaving the arena will be you, not me. How do you plan to beat me if you can't even touch my clothes?"

"Y-you..." Ka Di Qiuli's naturally beautiful face grew red with anger as she pointed at him with her finger, and she was momentarily unable to speak. But then she grew calm and she rolled her eyes, sneering, "So what if I can't touch you? You can't even stand to fight me head on, and can only dodge my blows like a little coward."

"Eh, is that right?" Jian Chen's face revealed a hint of a smile as he looked at her with a strange expression.

Ka Di Qiuli looked on haughtily, speaking with complete conviction, "Of course. If you aren't a coward, then you'd better try actually fighting me."

Jian Chen glanced over at the other 3 rings and saw that the other matches were beginning to wrap up. Turning his head back to look at Ka Di Qiuli again, he laughed, "If you really want to fight

me head on, then fine, I'll grant you your wish."

Chapter 16: Advancing Into The Finals

Hearing Jian Chen words, Ka Di Qiuli's eyes brightened, "You said so yourself, so don't you dare try to say otherwise later!" Ka Di Qiuli clearly had no desire to let Jian Chen prepare himself, so before she could even finish her sentence, she had already started to dash towards him. Just like the first blow, she leapt up into the air and lashed her leg out to kick him in the face, but this time the speed of her kick was much faster than her original one.

Jian Chen gave an odd smile as the kick came closer. Just like he said earlier, Jian Chen didn't bother to dodge, but instead, as the kick was right in front of his face, both of his hands lashed out and grabbed onto Ka Di Qiuli's calf. Exerting a decent amount of strength while twisting around, he whirled her around in one smooth motion. As he threw her, Ka Di Qiuli cried out in panic as she was spun around by Jian Chen.

Many of the surrounding students watching the event became dumbstruck. Not only did it seem like Jian Chen did not care for the fairer s*x and threw such a beautiful lady into the air in such a crude way, he had also defeated the last 6 opponents in the same manner.

Under the arena, Ka Di Yun felt the veins in his forehead throb as he watched his younger sister get mistreated in such a way. A murderous intent was focused on Jian Chen as he watched him; if it weren't for the vice headmaster Bai En presiding over the match nearby, then Ka Di Yun would have charged onto the arena long ago to teach Jian Chen a lesson.

Jian Chen's two arms were almost like strong pincers, clamping down onto her legs, as he spun her around twice before finally letting go. At that moment, one could only see Ka Di Qiuli's beautiful body streak across the sky in an arc, before finally flying out of the arena, and crashing into a group of people in the audience.

He had learned this trick from Tie Ta. After watching Tie Ta in some of his matches, he saw that he had done a similar method to easily toss his opponents out of the arena. However, Jian Chen had to admit, this method was a very easy trick to pull off for a quick but easy victory, and could be done to certain people with ease.

With only a tiny bit of disdain for the people in the audience who helped Ka Di Qiuli back to her feet, Jian Chen smirked as the referee proclaimed him the winner, before walking off the stage slowly.

Blankly looking at Jian Chen walk off the arena, Ka Di Qiuli's face fell. Since she was born, she had been pampered by thousands of people as she grew. For her to suffer humiliation from being tossed into the air after being spun around like a top, she had felt that she lost face as well as being wronged, despite not getting injured. As she thought about this, Ka Di Qiuli's eyes started to tear up, and she eventually began to leak out streams of tears as she cried silently to herself.

As Jian Chen walked down from the arena, Ka Di Qiuli's brother, Ka Di Yun, blocked his path. Glaring at him icily, he growled, "Kid, you really have some fucking courage to treat my sister like that."

Jian Chen lazily glanced over at the furious Ka Di Yun and snorted. Without saying anything, Jian Chen walked away from him. Words were not worth wasting on him, because Jian Chen couldn't stand to hear Ka Di Yun try to use his clan's influence to bully others.

Watching Jian Chen walk farther and farther away from him, Ka Di Yun's own face grew even more somber.

With the end of Jian Chen's match, the final 4 names were called out. In the end, it was Changyang Xiang Tian, Tie Ta, Ka Di Liang, and Tian Mu Xiong that remained.

As far as Tie Ta was concerned, Jian Chen was not at all surprised that he had made it. However, Jian Chen did not think that Ka Di Liang would unexpectedly make it into the top 4.

There was also the fourth participant, Tian Mu Xiong. His age wasn't all that different from Ka Di Qiuli. He had a medium-sized body, and a pale complexion. Although he was young, there was no doubt that he was handsome, with a perfect balance of his facial structures.

Sitting on top of the platform was the vice headmaster, Bai En, who slowly looked over the four remaining students. With a small nod and a laugh, he announced, "It would appear that this year's freshmen are much stronger than the freshmen before them. I can only hope that our Kargath Academy will be able to boast of someone just as strong after."

After announcing the four remaining students, they were given an hour of rest before continuing on with the competition. However, by some miraculous chance, Jian Chen's drawn opponent was Ka Di Liang, while Tie Ta's opponent was Tian Mu Xiong.

Under the arena, Ka Di Yun and his siblings gathered at the bottom and watched; Ka Di Qiuli's eyes were starting to become red and inflamed by this point.

"Second brother, you have to teach him a lesson later." Ka Di Qiuli said with unrestrained fury to Ka Di Liang before the match started.

Noticing his sister's red eyes and her tear stained face, Ka Di Liang couldn't help but feel extremely furious as he spoke, "Sister Qiu Li, don't worry. Even if I get penalized by the academy, your second brother will definitely teach him a lesson."

"Hmph, what a savage kid. To think that he would dare treat our sister like this, he really does have a death wish. Sister, please don't worry, I guarantee you, that kid will definitely only feel suffering for as long as he lives in this academy. Although the headmaster sides with the poor people, he is by no means a commoner. Even if I beat him until he's a cripple, the headmaster won't say a thing; at the very most, he'll just scold us." Ka Di Yun's face looked as if he swallowed poison. When it came to their sister, both Ka Di Yun and Ka Di Liang cared greatly for her. When Jian Chen had treated their sister in such a way, he had already earned extreme hatred from both of them.

Soon, Jian Chen and Ka Di Liang both walked onto the arena, and waited for the start of the match. Right as the gong sounded, Ka Di Liang dashed towards Jian Chen and tried to slam his fist into Jian Chen's stomach.

Jian Chen nimbly dodged Ka Di Liang's attack, while returning the blow with his own fist that was even faster than his opponent's.

“Peng!”

Before Ka Di Liang could even respond, Jian Chen's fist had already made contact with his back. The force of his punch was so strong, it forced Ka Di Liang to stagger backwards, before falling to his knees.

After one blow, Jian Chen didn't bother to hold back. Both of his legs went into motion as he quickly ran towards where Ka Di Liang was kneeling. All of a sudden, the originally staggering Ka Di Liang suddenly lost his footing once more and was sent flying again. After being hit, he flew two meters towards the edge of the ring, almost knocking him out of it, though half of his body was already hanging out of it.

Watching this display of might, every student watching Jian Chen all cried out in surprise. They had never imagined that in a single engagement, the victor would be so readily decided. This was something that every student thought was amazing; the 9th layer Saint Force student Ka Di Liang was being beaten so easily by the 8th Saint Force layer Jian Chen.

Seeing half of Ka Di Liang's body sticking out from the ring, both Ka Di Qiuli's and Ka Di Yun's hearts leapt out from their chests and into their throats.

“Ai, how can second brother be this careless, how-how annoying. He'd better not lose to a brat like him.” Ka Di Qiuli cried as she stamped her foot in anger. Though the longer she looked at Ka Di Liang, the more easily one could tell her face was full of concern for her older brother.

Ka Di Yun let out a breath in exasperation, “What is second brother doing for him to be this careless and lose to a brat who's only at the 8th Saint Force?”

On top of the platform, the vice headmaster Bai En smiled excitedly as he said, “The freshmen we picked up this year are definitely jewels. One has been blessed by the heavens, while the other I can polish and shine in the future. While his attacks are simple, there is a strange sort of mystery to him. Every single time there is a crucial point in the match, he unleashes highly accurate moves with almost instantaneous reactions. These two students truly do require closer nurturing. I believe that in the future, these two will be great experts within the Tian Yuan continent. I'd better discuss this with the headmaster later.”

On the arena, Ka Di Liang scrambled to pick himself back up, his forehead already dripping with cold sweat. If his body had slipped just a few more inches, then there would be no doubt that his body would've fallen down from the arena. And then if he truly did lose to an 8th Saint Force layer student in such a disgraceful manner,

he would definitely have been labeled as a great disgrace.

When Ka Di Liang crawled back up and turned himself around, his surroundings suddenly blurred, and he was suddenly aware of an acute sense of pain in his stomach before he could fully comprehend what was happening. But then, his body felt as light as a feather, before he realized the stage was growing smaller and smaller. The next thing he knew, his body impacted the ground below, and his previously spotless white robes now sported a single dusty footprint.

Blankly standing up from the ground, Ka Di Liang looked all around himself, before he fully comprehended what had just happened. Indignation burst forth from his eyes, as he shot Jian Chen a malicious glare. Although he had reached the 9th layer, he had ultimately been beaten by a student who had only reached the 8th layer, and felt his defeat was an extreme waste. Every time he thought of this, Ka Di Liang's heart filled with endless anger. To him, this was definitely a huge disgrace.

Ka Di Yun walked up to Ka Di Liang and said, "Second brother, you've disappointed me. You have really lost face for our Ka Di clan." After dropping these words, Ka Di Yun didn't spare a second glance at Ka Di Liang, and immediately left the area.

Hearing Ka Di Yun's words, Ka Di Liang's face immediately turned beyond ugly.

"Second brother, you were too careless. Although you said that you would help me teach him a lesson, it ultimately became you being the one that was taught." Ka Di Qiuli said resentfully in a

disappointed voice, her tone quite indignant.

Hearing this, Ka Di Liang's face changed as well, before growling, "This was the extent of his luck. It was because of this arena that he won; if we were to change places, then there would be no way he would be an opponent for me. Third sister, don't worry, I will definitely teach him a lesson in the future."

Ka Di Qiuli began to think; she felt that his reasoning had some truth to it. Slowly nodding her head, she said, "Second brother, you'll have to teach him a lesson for sure next time."

Ka Di Liang patted his chest, and solemnly vowed, "Don't worry, third sister. Leave this to me."

Not too long after Jian Chen had won his match, the match between Tie Ta and Tian Mu Xiong also started to wrap up. Although Tie Ta's Saint Force was lower than his opponent by a single layer, his heavenly blessed strength helped make up for this deficiency. In the end, he relied on the experience he had learned from hunting beasts and was finally able to beat Tian Mu Xiong by a narrow victory. Along with Jian Chen, he became one of the two finalists. By the end of the next match, one of the two will emerge victorious and be crowned the Freshman Ruler.

Chapter 17: Freshmen Ruler

After resting for two hours, the competition finals finally started. Jian Chen and Tie Ta walked into the arena together, before walking to opposite ends 10 meters apart.

There were over 1000 students watching the arena already, while even more people were trying to find seats.

Jian Chen looked at Tie Ta with a smile as he spoke he praised Tie Ta, “Tie Ta, I didn’t think you were this amazing to be able to end up in the finals.”

Hearing Jian Chen’s compliment, Tie Ta’s face reddened from embarrassment, though it was obvious that he was very happy to hear the praise. With an honest laugh, Tie Ta spoke in a low voice, “Changyang Xiang Tian, you’re just as amazing.”

Stretching his arms and legs, Jian Chen laughed, “Tie Ta, this is the final round. Only one of us will be crowned the Freshmen Ruler, so you need to fight your hardest. If you beat me, then you’ll be the champion; by winning, you’ll earn a Class 3 Monster Core that is worth a few hundred purple coins. It’ll be worth enough to feed your family for a lifetime.”

Tie Ta grew pumped up after hearing Jian Chen talk, “Changyang Xiang Tian, I’ll definitely use all of my strength, so you’d better prepare yourself!”

Jian Chen could only laugh and nod, “I won’t be that easy to

defeat.”

“Boom!”

As the gong sounded to indicate the beginning of the match, Tie Ta immediately rushed forward after the sound. Tie Ta rushed at Jian Chen, and immediately reached out to grab him with both hands, he planned to use his heavenly blessed strength to lift and throw Jian Chen out of the arena.

Realizing his plan, Jian Chen laughed; he was already extremely familiar with Tie Ta’s style of fighting. For every single match so far, Tie Ta had used the same strategy, but it had worked nicely. If Jian Chen was caught by him, then it would be extremely difficult to escape from Tie Ta’s grasp.

Jian Chen retreated a few steps to escape from Tie Ta’s reach. Clenching his left hand into a fist, he used around 80% of his strength to strike at his chest.

Jian Chen’s fist was well timed and fast, not allowing Tie Ta any time to react at all.

“Peng!”

Jian Chen’s fist let out a muffled sound on impact against Tie Ta’s chest. However, Jian Chen’s look of satisfaction slowly changed, while Tie Ta had a look of amazement. What he had punched did not feel like a human at all, instead, his fist had felt

like it had smashed against a wall. Not only was Tie Ta strong, but his physical body was extremely robust, so robust that it was actually beyond belief.

Jian Chen's punch, however, had forced Tie Ta to stagger backwards, but only for a moment. Roaring out loud, he charged at Jian Chen once more with both of his hands outstretched. With a punch using only 80% of his strength, Jian Chen didn't even leave a mark on Tie Ta's skin.

Jian Chen began to feel excitement as he watched Tie Ta come closer with his fists. He didn't bother to dodge or flee; instead, he prepared to use 100% of his power to strike back with his own hands.

The two fists struck against each other in midair, and the impact created a loud sound. It was so loud, that everyone in the crowd below the arena could hear it as clear as day.

As the two fists made contact, Jian Chen's feet couldn't help but slide backwards at least 10 meters before finally stopping. His right hand had already started to tremble, so it was clear to see that Jian Chen had taken more damage than given. Even though he had surpassed the average cultivation level for Saint Force, he was still far from the level where he could easily ignore damage from something like this.

Tie Ta, on the other hand, only slid backwards two meters. His

face showed no outward emotion, and he appeared to not have suffered even the smallest amount of damage.

Jian Chen rubbed at his reddening hand. After two confrontations, he now fully understood how foolish it was to engage with Tie Ta straight on. Tie Ta's strength wasn't just used for intimidation, his body was actually inconceivably strong.. Even someone a level stronger than Tie Ta could not be his equal. The only thing that could lead to victory against Tie Ta was if one relied on speed.

“Tie Ta, your strength has already far surpassed my expectations, but I'll be using my full strength now.” Jian Chen said as he walked forward.

Tie Ta laughed, “Come then, Changyang Xiang Tian, you won't be able to hurt me.” Tie Ta's tone was filled with a fierce conviction.

Jian Chen stopped his idle chatter as well. When the distance between him and Tie Ta had been reduced to only 5-6 meters, his footsteps suddenly changed. His legs became a mysterious blur that suddenly re-appeared behind Tie Ta. Before Tie Ta could even react, two fierce fists landed consecutive blows on his back.

“Dong!” “Dong!” “Dong!”

A constant series of muffled blows came ringing out from the arena, almost as if it was just a single continuous line of sounds. Under such heavy attacks, even Tie Ta's body couldn't help but

falter forwards so much that he was left with very little time to turn around.

“Ha!”

Tie Ta snarled in anger as he tried to steady himself. Suddenly, he turned around with his fists out and tried to smash them into Jian Chen.

The moment when Tie Ta tried to attack Jian Chen, he lightly leapt 2 meters into the air. Narrowly dodging Tie Ta's fist, Jian Chen used both of his legs to kick at Tie Ta from midair. Both of his legs held formidable power, and they thrust towards Tie Ta's back.

“Dong!” “Dong!” “Dong!”...

Jian Chen lashed out with his feet several times before landing back onto the ground. By this point, Tie Ta's face had been kicked by Jian Chen multiple times, causing his face to bruise all over.

Immediately after landing on the ground, Jian Chen turned around on the floor and bent his legs down without pausing. His left leg revolved in a 180 degree arc, his right leg swept at Tie Ta's own legs.

“Peng!”

Tie Ta's leg crumbled down below him, but he immediately

bounced back up, and snarled as he rushed at Jian Chen.

Jian Chen and Tie Ta began to engage in another close combat situation, but with Tie Ta's god given strength and his frighteningly robust body, Jian Chen had no chance of winning against him. Since Jian Chen had already experienced it twice, he had thought of a countermeasure for this situation. Although it wasn't the best idea, he had no other ways of fighting against him. Jian Chen had decided to rely on his nimbleness to fight against Tie Ta. Even though Tie Ta's body was extremely strong, Jian Chen had been attacking the same place on Tie Ta's body to make it so that Tie Ta would feel so much pain, he would eventually be forced to grimace.

The following situation was now becoming one sided. With Jian Chen relying on the experience he had accumulated over the past world to constantly beat Tie Ta so much that he could only run around with his hands over his head. Although at times Tie Ta had found some opportunities to fight back, he was not able to hurt Jian Chen, his attacks could not even touch Jian Chen's clothes at all.

At this display, every student in the audience could only watch the match in shock. No matter how fast Jian Chen was with his martial arts, his speed had far outstripped the average person, causing all of the students to look on with great interest, as it was something they had never witnessed before.

On the top of the platform, Bai En gasped in admiration as he watched Jian Chen, "This kid is definitely a unique one, his battle experience is rich, and his speed isn't slow at all either. It seems

this student is called Changyang Xiang Tian, so judging from his name, he is from Lore City's Changyang Clan. It seems that I really will have to make a report to the headmaster later."

As the battle continued to persist, Tie Ta finally reached his limit. He cried out loud, and exclaimed, "Stop, stop! I can't fight anymore, I give up!"

Jian Chen immediately stopped his attack and smiled brightly at Tie Ta, "Why aren't you fighting anymore?"

Tie Ta rubbed at the reddening spots where Jian Chen had repeatedly hit with a miserable face and said sadly, "You move so fast that I can't even see you clearly. There's no way I'd be able to attack you, so the entire time was just you wailing on me."

Laughing, Jian Chen asked, "So you're just going to give up the number one spot then?" Although Jian Chen hadn't held back as he fought against Tie Ta, his skin was so thick and his body was so strong, that there was barely any serious damage done to him at all.

Tie Ta nodded his head and spoke in a muffled voice, "I won't be able to beat you, so the number one spot isn't mine to have. Second place is already decent enough; a Class 2 Monster Core can be sold for a decent price to."

Afterwards, the two students walked off the stage while the third place winner was announced; Ka Di Liang and Tian Mu Xiong who had fought it out against each other in a battle to determine the

winner. In the end, it was Tian Mu Xiong who had won and claimed the title of third place.

After the quota for the top three players was met, Jian Chen was called up onto the platform. As the vice headmaster Bai En walked towards him, he glanced at Jian Chen with no small amount of admiration. Immediately looking away, he turned his head to look at the thousand students in the audience and announced, “Dear students, this year’s freshmen competition has finally come to a conclusion. I declare the Freshmen Ruler of this year to be the student Changyang Xiang Tian who is an 8th Saint Force layer practitioner!”

The vice headmaster Bai En spoke in a firm voice, causing everyone to applaud and cheer. But as some of the 9th Saint Force layer students heard the new Freshmen Ruler was a student was at the 8th Saint Force layer, many of them couldn’t accept that. However, they could only grumble out their displeasure. But Jian Chen’s strength was something they could accept, some of them had even been dazzled by the way he fought, and his speed was something that not many people could dismiss.

“This year’s freshmen are really too useless. In front of so many people that had reached the 9th Saint Force level, the final Freshmen Ruler ended up being a youth at the 8th Saint Force layer. This is really too embarrassing.”

“That’s true, today’s freshmen were really too weak. Not only was the title of Freshmen Ruler taken by a person at the 8th Saint Force layer, I heard that the suntanned youth in second place was also someone who was only at the 8th Saint Force layer. I really

don't know what these freshmen had practiced to the 9th Saint Force layer for."

The two people that spoke were seniors wearing the academy uniform, their tone were filled with a mocking voice towards those who had lost against the two.

Hearing the two students complain, another one of the seniors replied to them, "You guys shouldn't even say anything, it's not that those freshmen who reached the 9th Saint Force layer were weak, but it's because those 8th Saint Force layer students were stronger than them by a large margin. That suntanned kid had strength that could scare anyone. Don't tell me you guys didn't see how those 9th Saint Force layer students were easily thrown out of the arena. If it were us that were fighting instead, I'm sure that we wouldn't had been better off than the freshmen. As for that first place freshman, his strength was even more terrifying. Did you guys also miss how fast he was moving around and attacking? Even if it were us in that same situation, we would have a hard time trying to dodge his attacks."

Other than those two students, many other seniors of the academy were also discussing the matches amongst themselves. They had already been at the academy for so many years, but this years competition had left them speechless. This year's freshmen batch had many students who reached the 9th Saint Force layer, but no one had expected that the top two students would be 8th Saint Force layer students.

Soon after, Jian Chen obtained the Class 3 Monster Core as a reward. It was a deep red in color, and was bigger than the monster

core than the one his brother had given him earlier.

Holding his hand up, Jian Chen could clearly feel the huge amount of power radiating from the core. The huge amount of energy in the core and the True Qi in his previous world had a very small difference, but as far as Jian Chen was concerned, the energy coming from the core was extremely huge.

Aside from the monster core, Jian Chen had also received a medal that was cast in complete gold with a decorative design written on it.

From what Jian Chen had heard, there was no information on the medal he had won, so he had no idea what use the medal was for. But as he was trying to figure it out, the vice headmaster Bai En explained to him, “This medal can only be rewarded to the first place winner of every freshman competition. As long as you have this, then you will be given a Class 1 Monster Core every month. Other than that, the medal allows the wearer to access the first 5 layers of the library.”

Chapter 18: The Monster Core's Cultivation Rate Support

“Every month a Class 1 Monster Core will be given, as well as free access to the first five levels of the library?” Hearing Bai En’s explanation, Jian Chen’s heart swelled up in marvel. Could it be that the students weren’t able to even get a monster core every month? And who would have thought that the library would have a restriction imposed on it?

Receiving the medal, Jian Chen had already planned to ask his brother Changyang Hu about this later. He had already been in this academy for three or four days, but three of the days had been completely occupied by the martial arts competition. Even for the first day, he had barely half the day to himself, so he had very little time to find out more about the academy.

After Jian Chen exited from the arena, both Tie Ta and Tian Mu Xiong walked forward to accept their own prizes. After the ending ceremony, the crowd of students had already begun to disperse.

“Fourth brother, you’re seriously amazing! You really did win first place in the competition; once father hears about this, he’ll definitely be very happy about this.” As the two walked towards his dorm, Changyang Hu kept chattering away happily with Jian Chen.

As the two continued to talk, Jian Chen started to laugh, as he couldn’t help but feel the warm feelings he had remembered from his mother.

“If Mother found out about this, she would definitely be beyond happy.” Jian Chen thought to himself.

In a flash, Changyang Hu and Jian Chen arrived at the dorms and entered Jian Chen’s room. Changyang Hu impatiently asked Jian Chen, “Fourth brother, hurry up and show me the Class 3 Monster Core.”

Looking at Changyang Hu’s still excited expression, Jian Chen laughed and brought out the monster core from his space belt, handing it over to Changyang Hu.

Changyang Hu took the core into his hand and turned it around endlessly almost as if it was a treasured object. He clicked his tongue in admiration, “Fourth brother, you’re seriously amazing, to immediately get a Class 3 Monster Core straight after entering the academy. Your older brother has already been at this academy for over 2 years, and the most I ever got was a Class 2 Monster Core. Moreover, I had to pay money for it.”

Hearing this, Jian Chen could only chuckle, “Big brother, I’ve heard that you’ve already reached the peak of the 10th layer and will soon break through to the Saint level. You should take this Class 3 Monster Core.” Jian Chen didn’t regard the monster core as an important item, and although the Class 3 Monster Core would increase the rate of cultivation, Jian Chen didn’t need it at all.

Changyang Hu was stunned at Jian Chen’s words, but he quickly regained his wits and placed the Class 3 Monster Core back within

Jian Chen's hands and said, "That won't do. This Class 3 Monster Core was something that fourth brother got after going through a painstaking amount of trouble. How could your big brother take something like this?"

Looking at the newly returned Class 3 Monster Core, Jian Chen smiled; he truly admired his big brother's actions just then. At the very least, he wouldn't have to worry that Changyang Hu would be like third brother Changyang Ke, and become an obstacle towards him.

Once again, Jian Chen placed the Class 3 Monster Core in Changyang Hu's hands, "Big brother, this Class 3 Monster Core would be best with you." This time, Jian Chen really wanted Changyang Hu to accept the monster core.

"Definitely not!" Changyang Hu's refusal came out strong and clear, without any hesitation. He handed the monster core back to Jian Chen and said, "Fourth Brother, this monster core should be used by you. This is your reward for being the Freshmen Ruler. This item is definitely not something your big brother would want from you."

Seeing how persistent his brother Changyang Hu was, Jian Chen could only helplessly take back the Class 3 Monster Core.

After that, Jian Chen began to ask his older brother a few questions regarding the affairs of the academy. It had taken 3 hours for Changyang Hu to carefully explain every single rule that Jian Chen didn't understand about the academy, increasing Jian Chen's familiarity with the academy. First was Kargath Academy's

headmaster, who favored students that weren't from a noble background. If he found a noble bullying a commoner, the student would definitely not be able to escape from punishment. Regarding battles between nobles, he would turn a blind eye, as long as it didn't turn into a major deal. Other than that, he didn't care about them at all.

Also, within the Kargath Academy, one would have to reach the Great Saint level in order to graduate. Those who graduate had the choice to remain in the academy, or with the Kargath Academy's recommendation, they could vow loyalty to a kingdom and join their army. Those with a great amount of potential would be able to earn a higher salary with the academy's recommendation.

Within the academy, those under the level of a Saint would have the chance to receive a Class 1 Monster Core every month to use to help their cultivations. The students who were at the Saint Level and condensed a Saint Weapon would be able to earn a Class 2 Monster Core every month. Aside from this, these students would also be able to go to the forest 20 miles away from the Kargath Academy to hunt magical beasts for their cores. Although the forest wasn't big, it still took up around 10 kilometers of area. The magical beasts inside the forest were all set free by the academy, but most of them were generally low leveled magical beasts. Their attack strengths were amongst the lowest of the beasts, and receiving a serious injury was unlikely.

Kargath Academy bred these low leveled magical beasts for the students to practice their martial arts in a real combat situation, as well as to allow the magical beasts to adapt to the wild. The strongest magical beast in the forest was no stronger than a Class 2 beast, while many of the animals were just regular wild beasts who

couldn't even measure up to a Class 1 magical beast. However, if a Class 2 magical beast were to appear, then the academy would send out a few experts to take care of the monster in order to prevent the students from getting hurt.

The forest was separated into three regions: the first region was full of wild beasts who didn't even reach the level of a Class 1 magical beast. The second region was a place where Class 1 magical beasts dwelled. The final region was full of Class 2 magical beasts. All three areas had been successfully sealed and blockaded against the other areas by the previous generations of the headmaster, so no one would have to worry about the monsters escaping from the forest.

The academy also had a library, which was separated into 7 levels. Inside the library was a great amount of books, with an abundant amount of information. Aside from books about the continent's history, there were also many secret training manuals for practitioners. Students who had not yet reached Saint level would only be able to access the first two levels of the library. The moment a student reaches the level of a Saint and condenses his/her Saint Force into a Saint Weapon, then he/she would be able to enter the third and fourth levels. For any level above the fourth, the only people who could enter were teachers, or students at Great Saint level.

.....

By the time Changyang Hu had finished telling Jian Chen about the information regarding the school, it was already quite late during the night. Changyang Hu thus hurried out of Jian Chen's

dorm, and ran towards his own dormitory.

Meanwhile, at the top of a tower that was situated in the center of Kargath Academy, the vice-headmaster Bai En respectfully stood in front of an office desk. In front of him, was actually the headmaster Jian Chen had met before.

The headmaster of Kargath Academy extended his arm and stroked his long beard. Indifferently looking at the vice-headmaster, he said, “Bai En, did you say that the name of the freshman who won the competition was a kid called Changyang Xiang Tian?” The headmaster’s tone held a hint of surprise.

Bai En nodded his head and said, “Yes, headmaster, I found out that Changyang Xiang Tian is quite remarkable. He is only at the 8th layer of Saint Force, but can already defeat freshmen that are at the 9th layer. His attacks are not only aggressive, but also quite agile and nimble. It also seems that he has plenty of combat experience, which does not match up with the strength he should have. Even Tie Ta, who has a body with heavenly force, lost to Jian Chen in a simple manner, unable to even counterattack”

Hearing this, the headmaster furrowed his brows and asked, “Bai En, is what you’re saying really true? Is Changyang Xiang Tian really that amazing?”

“Headmaster, everything I said is the truth.” said Bai En in a firm voice.

The headmaster slowly rose from his chair and muttered, “It

looks like this kid Changyang Xiang Tian is a bigger genius than Chang Bai said. He didn't use any sort of monster core or heavenly treasure, and was still able to reach the 8th layer of the Saint Force by the age of 15; how astonishing of a feat. To think that he also has an abundant amount of battle experience, something like this is unfathomable." Even the headmaster's voice carried a hint of astonishment.

Hearing the headmaster mumble to himself, Bai En also had an astonished look on his face. The fact that he had not used any heavenly treasure or monster core to reach the 8th layer by the age of 15 was a type of talent within the Gesun Kingdom that could only be regarded as something a gifted genius could have.

"Headmaster, it looks like this Changyang Xiang Tian has a limitless future." Bai En sighed.

The headmaster nodded his head and said, "As long as he can continue to grow this way, then the skill he displayed today will definitely develop into something greater. It looks like our Kargath Academy will finally be able to boast of a strong individual, as long as he doesn't die on the road to greatness."

"As long as he really grows into a strong individual of the Tian Yuan continent, then not only our Kargath Academy become well known, but our Gesun Kingdom's reputation within the continent would also increase. Right now, the surrounding kingdoms around us are getting more and more restless; after these 10 or so years, if our Gesun Kingdom doesn't have any strong individuals, then I'm afraid that sooner or later, one of the kingdoms around us will attack."

After hearing this, Bai En's face gradually grew solemn; the Gesun Kingdom was neither a big kingdom nor a small kingdom, but it had fertile lands that many of the surrounding kingdoms were envious of. If it were not for the 6 experts of Gesun Kingdom, then the surrounding kingdoms would have long since attacked them.

Bai En pondered for a bit, before carefully asking, "Headmaster, should we consider giving away Class 1 and 2 Monster Cores to Changyang Xiang Tian for free then? That way, we could improve our relationship with him."

The headmaster considered the vice headmaster's proposal for a bit, before shaking his head, "That won't be possible. Although using a monster core can be used to increase one's cultivation rate, there are side effects of abusing it. Changyang Xiang Tian is currently very young, we cannot allow him to become addicted to using monster cores. Otherwise, when he reaches the later levels, his foundation will be very shaky, which will obstruct his future progress. At his current age, he should quietly focus on self discipline; it would help lay down the foundations and increase his chance of success in making a breakthrough."

"Yes, headmaster. Bai En understands what to do now." Bai En didn't dare to act against the headmaster. Besides, what the headmaster had said made plenty of sense.

"Headmaster, how do you plan to handle Tie Ta?" Bai En asked.

“Tomorrow morning, bring Tie Ta to me. If he is willing, I will take him in as a personal disciple.” The headmaster replied after thinking about it for a while.

“Yes, headmaster!”

After Changyang Hu left his room, Jian Chen sat on his bed and contemplated the new information for a while. Afterwards, he crossed his legs, and with the Class 3 Monster Core in his hand, he began to absorb the energy from the Class 3 Monster Core into his body.

Inside the monster core was the soul of a magical beast. The energy within was not only pure, but also fairly strong. According to what Changyang Hu had said, the moment Jian Chen started to absorb the monster core, then he would start to feel a long stream of pure and strong energy flowing out of the core. It would flow up through his arm, and slowly be absorbed within his body.

Jian Chen manipulated the constant outward flow from the monster core to guide the energy into his body. Constantly refining the energy into his body, he gradually changed the energy into Saint Force, before gradually absorbing it into his dantian.

Using a monster core to cultivate really did increase the cultivation rate by many times.. Because of the normal way of cultivation, one would normally have to absorb the World Essence slowly before finally converting to one's own energy, but that couldn't compare to the speed of a monster core. The natural Qi couldn't compare to the pure soul energy of a monster core; after all, the soul of a monster core was the purest part of the beast.

Using the energy from a monster core, the speed of cultivation would increase by 10 times. For this reason, monster cores were extremely expensive, even if it was only a Class 1 Monster Core.

Multiple rays of light gradually appeared between the sky and land. The bright red sun finally struggled to climb into the sky, sending forth the soft and warm rays of sunlight. The golden sunlight with tens of thousands of rays of light illuminated the earth, as if the whole ground was dyed into a golden carpet.

At the same time, the Jian Chen who was sitting cross-legged on the bed slowly opened his eyes. His eyes showed a happy expression, and the corners of his mouth also showed a hint of a smile. After last night's cultivation, Jian Chen had received many gains, equivalent to a few days' worth of training. By absorbing the power within the Magical Stone, Jian Chen's cultivation speed had actually increased by 10 times. Right now, he could clearly feel that the Saint Power inside his body had increased by a ton. Based on his calculations, he wasn't far from reaching the 9th Saint Force layer. According to his current speed, at most it would only take a weekend's worth of time to reach the 9th Saint Force layer.

Of course, this was only Jian Chen's estimate. The exact values had to be tested.

If the fact that the amount of power that Jian Chen had absorbed from within the Magical Stone was 10 times more than the amount normally gained from cultivating was discovered by others, they would definitely be devastated from shock. Even though the Magical Stone could quickly increase the rate of cultivation, it was also far from achieving the frightening pace of 10 times faster

under normal circumstances. The average person using the Magical Stone to cultivate would normally only increase cultivation rate by two or three times. Even if the person was slightly more powerful, his or her cultivation rate would only be raised by six or seven times. Considering the fact that Jian Chen's power wasn't even Saint level, the fact that he could increase his cultivation rate by ten times was definitely an extremely frightening pace.

Seeing the Magic Stone in his hands, although the stone's color didn't change at all, Jian Chen clearly felt that the Magic Stone had shrunk by a circle after being gripped in his hand for the whole time.

After leaving the dorm, Jian Chen directly arrived at the dining hall. This morning, the dining hall's breakfast was a bit more plentiful. Besides from a glass of magical beast milk, there was also some magical beast meat. Jian Chen had eaten quite a bit of magical beast meat in the Changyang household, and the taste was quite delicious. In his previous world, Jian Chen had never eaten such savory meat before.

Chapter 19: Inconvenience

In a flash, three days had already passed. Although the three days were not long, it still allowed Jian Chen to become more accustomed to the lifestyle and environment in Kargath Academy. Within these three days, other than Jian Chen participating in classes on the first day, he had spent his time on the other two days either cultivating in his room, or wandering around the library.

Due to the fact that the curriculum taught by the teachers of the academy revolved around how one should behave, what should be done in a dangerous situation, and a few skills one would need in order to survive out in the areas outside the cities, Jian Chen felt that these things weren't even worth learning. He was a wanderer in his previous life; with his experience, he could teach those teachers how the class should be taught.

With his battle experience and ability to live wherever in the world, he could teach both the teachers and the students by himself; as the teachers' experience with battle was not at all extensive, it could not even be compared to Jian Chen's.

The next morning, Jian Chen put on the academy uniform and headed straight for the library after eating a meal at the dining hall. The academy was very lax about their classes; if one wanted to attend, then they could attend, if one didn't want to attend, then that was no problem either. After all, most of the nobles and children of rich families had already been tutored since young, so they had knowledge that could rival some of the teachers, but they lacked the experience. Therefore, the classes were pretty much only for the commoners to learn from. It was very rare that a noble would attend a class, and if they did, then it was a minor noble.

Arriving at the first level of the library, Jian Chen took a few books, and began to eagerly read them at a table in the reading area.

Kargath Academy's library was expansive, and there was a generous amount of books on almost every subject. It was vastly superior to the library back in Changyang Mansion, and Jian Chen could find many books that couldn't be found back at home, helping him understand the world to a better extent.

Right now, the book in Jian Chen's hands was an introduction book to all of the magical beasts that could be found in the Tian Yuan continent. There were many different kinds of magical beasts; no matter if the beast could walk or fly, the amount of species amounted to over 1000. The book even mentioned that there were still many magical beasts left undiscovered, and for the magical beasts that didn't live within the deep abyss of the Mountain Range of Magical Beasts, then they lived in the endless ocean. That was an area that even the strongest of people had trouble traveling to.

As Jian Chen immersed himself in studying, a 16-17 year old female student suddenly came walking through the doors. The female was extraordinarily pretty, and she also wore the academy uniform. Her long and beautiful hair was carefully braided into tiny ponytails, causing her face to look even more gorgeous. But on her face was an extremely haughty expression; one look at her would reveal that she was from a noble family.

This female was actually Ka Di Qiuliu of the Ka Di Clan.

Ka Di Qiuliu entered the library and walked over to the bookshelf, before casually walking on over the reading area with a book in hand. She glanced over at the other students reading there, but the moment her eyes swept over to the area with the tables, she saw the back of Jian Chen, causing her to immediately stop where she was and stand there in surprise.

Ka Di Qiuliu focused onto Jian Chen's back, the light in her eyes never ceasing to flicker with emotion. Just thinking about how, a few days ago, she had been grabbed by the leg and casually thrown out of the arena without regard to her well-being, caused her to feel fury within herself. To her, that event was an unforgettable humiliation. The memory caused her face to boil over in anger before she snorted. No longer in the mood to read a book, she tossed it aside and stamped out of the library while gnashing at her teeth, "Changyang Xiang Tian, hmph, I'll definitely show you one day!"

But Jian Chen did not notice Ka Di Qiuliu at all, since he was completely focused on the book he was reading. No one would dare cause trouble in the library, so Jian Chen didn't bother keeping his guard up in it.

After Ka Di Qiuli left the library, she immediately found her second brother, Ka Di Liang, who was practicing his martial arts alone in the forest.

Seeing Ka Di Qiuli walkover, Ka Di Liang stopped his movements and laughed, “Third sister, didn’t you say you were going to the library? Why are you looking for me here then?” In his heart, he still dearly loved his younger sister.

Ka Di Qiuli walked up to him with a grimace, “Second brother, did you not say you would help me teach Changyang Xiang Tian a lesson?”

Immediately after hearing Changyang Xiang Tian, the smile on Ka Di Liang’s face disappeared, and a gloomy expression replaced it. He had been brooding over the freshmen competition for the past few days, and since he had been defeated by an 8th Saint Force layer student in such an ugly way, Ka Di Liang would never forget feeling that memory. That very kick was the single memoriam of his disgrace.

Ka Di Qiuli was furious as she spoke, “Second brother, Changyang Xiang Tian was in the library today; we should go over there and teach him a lesson!”

“Yes, of course; this time we will definitely be the winners. Come with me, third sister!” Ka Di Liang started to walk towards the library with determination. There was no way he would admit defeat to Jian Chen; he had blamed his loss the other day due to his carelessness. It was because he had held back that he had lost to Jian Chen; this time the high and mighty Ka Di Liang would not accept defeat.

Ka Di Qiuli started to show excitement. “This time, second brother must definitely give the brat Changyang Xiang Tian a

lesson he'll never forget," she said, as she followed him to the library. Even though the two of them were both at the 9th layer of Saint Force, she knew that she was still no match for her older brother. And if Ka Di Liang were to lose against Changyang Xiang Tian, then there would be no way she would be able to win.

At the library, Jian Chen was still deeply engrossed with his book.

"Hello, do you mind if I sit down here?" At this moment, a crisp voice came from the side of Jian Chen. Although he was deeply engrossed in his book, Jian Chen's soul was formidably strong, and brought him back to awareness.

Reflexively turning his head, Jian Chen saw a 17-18 year old female standing right next to him. She wore an academy uniform, and had long black hair cascading down her shoulders. She had a refined, but kind smile, with eyes that looked curiously at Jian Chen. With her cherry red lips, there were people who were practically fighting each other to get closer to her. Although she was only 17-18, her body was so delicately refined that the academy uniform nicely accentuated her. Currently, the girl was hugging a thick book close to her.

Jian Chen casually looked at her before turning around to look around the room; he hadn't realized that all of the tables were so full that not a single spot was left to sit down.

Looking back to the beautiful female, Jian Chen answered, "Go ahead!" Returning his eyes back to his book, he didn't bother to look at her even though she was so pretty.

The girl looked at the engrossed Jian Chen with a strange look. Her eyes shined with a peculiar look as she sat down, “Thank you!” She said gently. Her voice was gentle sounding; anyone who heard her talk would feel comforted.

Jian Chen didn’t hear her words however, as he was already too absorbed in reading his book again. In his eyes, he could only see the book.

The girl looked at Jian Chen with curiosity again, but she didn’t say anything, and sat down with her book she was holding. She looked graceful as she slowly thumbed through her book, even though it was such a simple action. This gracefulness was an inherent talent of a noble, and suited her well.

The library was very peaceful. Even though there weren’t that many people, none of them made a sound, as they concentrated on their respective books.

At that moment, a male and a female student came through the gates of the library—it was the siblings, Ka Di Liang and Ka Di Qiuli.

“Second brother, look, he’s right over there.” Ka Di Qiuli pointed at Jian Chen.

Ka Di Liang looked to where Ka Di Qiuli was pointing, and sure enough, he saw the all too familiar body figure. He looked on with disdain as he advanced towards him with his head held high and an arrogant face. With his head high and chest out, he walked

towards Jian Chen with Ka Di Qiuli closely trailing behind.

“Peng!” The moment Ka Di Liang got to the table Jian Chen was at, he slammed his hand onto the table, causing a large sound to echo out into the previously silent room.

The sudden noise attracted the attentions of all the people reading, and their gazes all moved away from their books one by one they began to observe Jian Chen’s table. Aside from a few people furrowing their brows, most people carried amused expressions.

Jian Chen knit his brows, and slowly lifted his head. He looked straight at Ka Di Liang, and said heavily with a hint of anger, “What are you doing!”

At this moment, even the girl sitting across from Jian Chen had furrowed her brows, and she looked at Ka Di Liang in annoyance, her face also carrying hints of anger. The sudden loud noise by her ear had scared her while she was peacefully absorbed in reading her book.

Ka Di Liang looked at Jian Chen with contempt, and haughtily said, “Changyang Xiang Tian, I, Ka Di Liang, formally want to request a duel. Do you dare to accept?” Ka Di Liang voice resonated through the entire first floor of the library, as if he were afraid nobody would be able to hear it.

“Duel!” Jian Chen’s face showed a hint of disdain, and he lightly snorted, “I’m not interested, so please leave this area immediately.

Don't disturb my reading; I don't have the luxury of wasting time on you!"

Realizing that Jian Chen was not seeing him as his equal, Ka Di Liang's eyes flashed with anger. Glaring at Jian Chen, he ground his teeth, and forcefully squeezed out the words, "Do you dare to or not!"

Chapter 20: Challenge

Jian Chen couldn't help but feel fury from Ka Di Liang's arrogance. Holding his own head up to look at him with disdain, Jian Chen said, "You were defeated by me before, what right do you have to demand a challenge from me?" Even now, Jian Chen's own tone carried a hint of arrogance that he had carried over from his previous world. This was a habitual attitude that somehow came out by accident.

Hearing Jian Chen's words, Ka Di Liang's handsome face went deathly white. Extreme anger flashed through his eyes, but he didn't dare to break the pacifistic rules of the library; otherwise he would have long since attacked Jian Chen.

Even Ka Di Qiuli, who was standing by her brother's side, was indignant. Glaring at Jian Chen, she started to jeer, "Hmph, you won't even accept my brother's challenge to a duel, what kind of man are you?"

Hearing Ka Di Qiuli back him up, Ka Di Liang's eyes brightened up and felt reenergized, "That's right; not accepting a duel, that's what a coward does. Changyang Xiang Tian, I'll be waiting for you at the fighting arena. If you admit that you're a coward, then don't come. Third sister, let's go to the arena!" After that, Ka Di Liang glared at Jian Chen before turning around to exit the library.

"Hmph, Changyang Xiang Tian, you better come; you're a coward if you don't show up!" Ka Di Qiuli cried out as she followed her brother.

“Changyang Xiang Tian, isn’t that the new Freshmen Ruler from the competition...?”

“Seems about right, I heard that Changyang Xiang Tian is at the 8th Saint Force layer but he ended up beating several students who were a layer higher, how amazing...”

After Ka Di Qiuli left, the entire library started to buzz with comments. Everyone was starting to comment about the Freshman Ruler, Changyang Xiang Tian.

Even the girl who was sitting next to Jian Chen had a small look of astonishment as she looked at him. Her eyes were blinking rapidly from this development, and it was clear to see that she had not expected Jian Chen to be the Freshmen Ruler.

Jian Chen slowly clasped shut the book in his hand, with a face that was unsightly to see. After the two siblings from the Ka Di clan disturbed him, he was no longer in the mood to read. Plus, Jian Chen had no other choice but to accept the challenge after it was issued, otherwise the entire academy would look down on him. Although Jian Chen didn’t really care about his own reputation, he was one of the symbols of the Changyang clan. Since his older brother wasn’t around, he would have to take up the challenge himself to make sure the Changyang clan didn’t get sullied. At the same time, Jian Chen didn’t want Changyang Hu to be ridiculed for having such a cowardly brother.

Slowly standing up from his chair, he grabbed the few books he had with him and returned them to the bookshelf. After the books were neatly shelved, Jian Chen began to walk out of the library. At

that moment, the entire library watched Jian Chen's movements.

“Hey, Changyang Xiang Tian!” As Jian Chen reached the gates of the library, the female who was sitting next to him called out to him.

Turning around in surprise, Jian Chen looked at the beautiful girl with an even look, “Yes?”

Hearing the even tone in his voice, the girl couldn't help but pout, but she didn't stay anything and instead walked up to Jian Chen and said, “Changyang Xiang Tian, are you really going to accept his challenge at the arena?”

“Of course!” Jian Chen nodded.

“You don't actually have to accept his challenge at all. The library banned any sort of loud noises, so those people have already violated the rules imposed by the academy. You could just go and report this to the headmaster, and he'll definitely penalize those two. In Kargath Academy, no one has ever dared to go against the headmaster's command,” the girl said.

Hearing these words, Jian Chen started to look at the girl in a better light. With a light laugh, he said, “They've already issued the challenge, so I have to accept!” After saying that, he said no more, and left the library.

As the girl watched Jian Chen's figure disappear, her eyes quickly

flashed. After some hesitation, she immediately ran to the table she had been sitting to return the thick book she had been reading back to the shelves, and ran out of the library, towards the martial arts arena.

After the girl left, the entire library was silent for a moment. Suddenly, a loud voice rang out, "There's another interesting scene to watch. A freshman at the 8th Saint Force layer is battling against a person at the 9th Saint Force layer; anyone who doesn't watch it would be a fool." A male in his teens wearing the school uniform said as he directly ran out of the library

After both these people had left, the few other students that had been reading in the library also returned the books in their hands to the shelves, and left the library one after another, running towards the martial arts arena.

The school's martial arts arena was constructed in a corner of the sports field. Within it, there were five circular platforms, each one being approximately 20 meters in diameter. However, the insides of the martial arts arena was not that large, and could only comfortably fit 100 spectators. Otherwise, the freshmen martial arts competition a few days ago wouldn't have been held at the temporarily modified stages on the sports field.

When Jian Chen arrived at the martial arts arena, he only saw Ka Di Liang standing on one of the platforms with his arms crossed, with an arrogant expression on his face. Standing below the platform were Ka Di Qiuli and a few other students wearing the academy uniforms, who were all absorbed in deep discussions.

Seeing Jian Chen arriving from the distance, Ka Di Liang, who was standing on the platform, sneered at him and shouted, “And here I had thought that you were a coward and had not dared to come.”

“Hmph!” Jian Chen snorted in disdain, and directly jumped onto the platform. He stood on the platform with his arms crossed, and coldly replied, “Come at me. I’ll allow you to attack me 10 times. During these 10 attacks, I will not retaliate.”

Hearing Jian Chen’s arrogant words, the spectators below the platform began to cry out in shock, and began to talk amongst themselves in low voices. There were many elder students amid the spectators, and amongst them, quite a few did not have positive opinions about Jian Chen. They believed that during the freshmen martial arts competition, the only reason why Jian Chen had defeated Ka Di Liang was because Ka Di Liang had been too careless.

Ka Di Liang’s eye glinted with anger. Anyone could tell that Jian Chen’s words meant that he did not see Ka Di Liang as his equal.

“Changyang Xiang Tian, you’re even more savage than I had thought,” Ka Di Liang said forcefully.

Jian Chen looked indifferently at Ka Di Liang, and replied, “If you want to fight, then hurry up. I don’t have the time to waste on you!”

“Hmph!” Ka Di Liang grunted, and sneered, “Why are you so

rushed? Let's wait until everyone gathers here; I want everyone to witness the moment I defeat you." Because he had lost last time during the freshmen martial arts competition, Ka Di Liang had been brooding over it for a while, especially since Jian Chen had even kicked him in the butt. To him, this was an unforgettable humiliation. In Ka Di Liang's opinion, he always felt that the only reason he had lost to Jian Chen was because he had been too careless. Thus, he wanted to take this chance to regain the face that he had previously lost, and aimed to ruthlessly humiliate Jian Chen in return.

Gradually, the people surrounding the martial arts arena increased, and the population did not cease to increase either. From the distance, there were still many students heading towards the arena. This match had obviously been announced to the public by Ka Di Liang.

After only a short while had passed, the martial arts arena was packed with 200 or so people. Nearly everyone was excited to watch the lively scene. Amongst these people, Ka Di Liang's older brother, Ka Di Yun, also stood there, with a few people around his age standing next to him.

"Fourth brother, you can do it. Big Brother is watching you!" Suddenly, a familiar deep sound mixed amongst the other noises was clearly transmitted to the platform.

Hearing this, Jian Chen turned around, and saw his older brother Changyang Hu standing beneath the platform cheering for him.

Jian Chen smiled, and wordlessly nodded his head at Changyang

Hu.

At that moment, someone banged on the table and shouted, “Let’s make bets, bets! Whoever wants to wager on the fight, come here!”

“I bet on Ka Di Liang, 10 gold coins...”

“I bet on Changyang Xiang Tian, 20 gold coins...”

“50 gold coins on Ka Di Liang...”

People gradually started to gamble on the outcome of the match between Jian Chen and Ka Di Liang. Even those who usually attended class had come along with many nobles. Money was of no issue to them, so there were many people betting from 10 Gold coins to 10 Purple coins. Around 80% of the gamblers were betting on Ka Di Liang, and only 20% were betting on Jian Chen.

“Ten Purple coins on Changyang Xiang Tian!” Changyang Hu slammed down the appropriate amount of coins onto the table.

“I’ll bet on Changyang Xiang Tian as well, 10 Purple coins!” Behind Changyang Xiang Tian, a soft and gentle voice spoke. It was the girl from the library who sat next to Jian Chen. She was obviously from a big clan; with every word she spoke, her tone was filled with a grandeur sound that sounded natural to her.

After the girl had bet 10 Purple coins on Changyang Xiang Tian,

everyone else started to show expressions of surprise. Changyang Hu was the older brother of Changyang Xiang Tian, so his bet was easy to understand. However, this girl did not hesitate at all when she wagered her money. Despite their shock however, no student voiced out their questions.

On the platform, Jian Chen looked at Ka Di Liang with a strange expression and said, “We can start now, right?”

Ka Di Liang held an expression filled with self-confidence, and he sneered, “Changyang Xiang Tian, you personally declared that you would allow me to attack 10 times. You’d better not go back on your words.”

“A nobleman’s word is his bond. Just give me all you’ve got,” Jian Chen replied.

TL: He uses a proverb to say this.

“How arrogant!” Although Ka Di Liang didn’t quite understand the fancy proverb Jian Chen had said, but he could roughly guess the meaning of it. Without another word, he dashed at Jian Chen to start the fight. Since Jian Chen had allowed him ten moves, he wouldn’t hold back and unleash his strongest moves.

Ka Di Liang quickly rushed in front of Jian Chen, and struck out with his fist that traveled through the air so fast, a whistling sound could be heard.

Faced with the fist, Jian Chen only took a single step back, and allowed the fist to stop short of him before it could make contact.

“Hu....how close....just a bit more and he would’ve been hit...”

“This Changyang Xiang Tian can’t be too powerful. As soon as the duel started, he was almost hit. If any of those punches connect, I’m afraid that he won’t get off with just some minor damages, and the victor would already be clear.”

“This Changyang Xiang Tian’s luck is quite good, to have dodged it like that....”

Everyone under the arena had thought that Jian Chen was merely lucky to have dodged Ka Di Liang’s fist, and so only a few observers had realized the truth, causing them to start to look at Jian Chen in a new light.

Chapter 21: Saint Ka Di Yun

Seeing how close he was to hitting his target, Ka Di Liang felt a tiny amount of regret. However, he immediately went back into motion, and flung a kick at Jian Chen.

In a flash, 10 moves had passed without Jian Chen retaliating, and every single move from Ka Di Liang had been easily dodged. But to everyone else that was watching, Jian Chen had been narrowly dodging each move by the skin of his teeth, causing everyone watching, including Changyang Hu, to break out in cold sweat as they watched in anxiety.

Ka Di Liang's attacks were fairly fast and furious, but none of the 10 moves he had lashed out with even touched Jian Chen's clothes. Having not landed a single blow, Ka Di Liang was angry beyond belief.

Finally lifting a fist to block Ka Di Liang's fist, Jian Chen spoke, "10 moves have passed, it's my turn." Without waiting for a response, he aimed a kick at Ka Di Liang.

The speed in which his leg was moving was extremely fast; there wasn't even enough time for Ka Di Liang to dodge. By the time he tried to move his hand up to block, Jian Chen's leg had already smashed against Ka Di Liang's chest.

"Deng!" "Deng!" "Deng!"

The force of Jian Chen's leg caused Ka Di Liang to stumble

backwards. As he steadied himself Ka Di Liang gave Jian Chen a dumbstruck look; although Jian Chen was only at the 8th Saint Force layer, Jian Chen's strength had far surpassed his expectations. It wasn't something Ka Di Liang would be able to endure.

In the last fight during the competition, Ka Di Liang had never exchanged blows with Jian Chen, so he never understood the true extent of Jian Chen's strength. It was not until this fight that Ka Di Liang realized that Jian Chen was stronger than he looked. In fact, based on the strength of the kick just now, Ka Di Liang was starting to doubt that Jian Chen was only at the 8th Saint Force layer.

Perhaps Jian Chen also wanted to end this battle quickly, because he didn't give Ka Di Liang time to even gasp before he quickly slammed his fist into Ka Di Liang's nose.

Ka Di Liang's face hardened as he stood back up, his entire body tried to stand against Jian Chen's fist before he tried to smash his fist against Jian Chen's head.

Jian Chen let out a cold laugh before blocking the fist with his own hand. Grabbing onto Ka Di Liang's shoulder with his other hand, he got into a horse stance, and grabbed onto him with his right arm. Grabbing tightly, he exerted some force and sent Ka Di Liang flying away.

In his previous life, Jian Chen had learned wrestling techniques from the Mongols, so he was fairly proficient at it. He had used it many times, and gained experience in it so much, that it was

ingrained into his memory. Jian Chen learned many different skills other than just swordplay, and was fairly proficient at every single thing he put his mind towards.

Ka Di Liang's body was almost like a feather as he flew through the air, thanks to Jian Chen. He flew 4-5 meters into the air before finally falling back down to the arena.

“Phew...”

He saw Jian Chen to be weak, but somehow, Jian Chen had managed to accomplish such a feat with his delicate-looking figure. Likewise, the audience around the arena let out gasps of shock as they started to reevaluate their opinions about Jian Chen. Seeing the two fight it out like this made it so that no one would ever dare to underestimate Jian Chen in the future.

The faces of Ka Di Yun and Ka Di Qiuli both gradually turned quite ugly. The situation was far beyond what they had expected it to be.

“Heng! Changyang Xian Tian, you actually are a slightly skilled,” Ka Di Yun said in a low voice, while angrily gritting his teeth.

Ka Di Liang stood back up pathetically on the ring with a cloudy looking face. He looked at Jian Chen's eyes with a gaze filled with poison.

“Ahh!” Ka Di Liang roared, focusing all his power of the 9th level

of Saint Force in the center of his two palms. He quickly rushed towards Jian Chen with both his arms pressing towards Jian Chen's chest, and attacked.

Jian Chen sneered, and as he condensed all his Saint Force onto his palms as well, he suddenly threw his own hands towards Ka Di Liang's, resulting in a collision between both pairs of hands.

“Peng!”

As the sound came echoing out, Jian Chen and Ka Di Liang were stuck in a deadlock. Their fists had slammed so hard against each other, a mini shockwave pushed both of them backwards.

Jian Chen didn't stop there; his legs began to blur as he skillfully maneuvered to counter the shock. Looking at the rapidly retreating Ka Di Liang, Jian Chen immediately dashed forward and leapt up from the ground, both of his legs kicking out at Ka Di Liang.

Before Ka Di Liang could regain his footing, he was unable to block the attack. As he was kicked in the stomach by Jian Chen, Ka Di Liang was sent flying once more.

“Pff!” Hitting the ground, Ka Di Liang's face went white from the pain as he began to spit out some blood. He had started to take in heavy amounts of damage.

“Younger brother!”

“Older brother!”

Ka Di Yun and Ka Di Qiuli ran up to Kai Di Liang’s side on the ground. Picking him up, they grimaced and looked at him with concern as they saw the small trickle of blood from the corner of Ka Di Liang’s mouth.

“Younger brother, are you ok?” Ka Di Yun asked. His face was relatively unsightly to look at, although the situation was different from last time, since Ka Di Liang had been careless during the first match with Jian Chen. However, this second time was different. This time Ka Di Liang was fighting with Jian Chen using all of his strength, which was stronger than 80% of the other 9th Saint Force Layer students.

“Older brother, how are you feeling, are you seriously hurt?” Ka Di Qiuli asked with a voice full of concern.

Ka Di Liang was helped to his feet by his two siblings. Lightly shaking his head, he said, “Eldest brother, third sister, I’ll be fine. I’ve only suffered from minor injuries.” But even as he said that, his two siblings could detect a small tinge of weakness in his voice.

Looking at Ka Di Liang’s pale face, Ka Di Yun grew angry. Raising his head to look at the elevated Jian Chen, he growled, “Third sister, you take care of second brother. I’ll go teach that arrogant brat a lesson!” Leaving his siblings, he walked up into the arena to confront him.

“Eldest brother, you shouldn’t...”

“Eldest brother, you can’t...”

Ka Di Liang and Ka Di Qiuli tried to block his path, but unfortunately, they didn’t reach him in time. The two siblings let out a sigh. No matter if Ka Di Yun won or lost now, the Ka Di clan would lose some prestige within the academy. This was originally a fair battle, so if they had lost, then they wouldn’t have felt any negative side effects other than losing some face. But now that Ka Di Yun was going to fight, the whole situation was different. If news about a freshman immediately being bullied by some seniors straight after entering the academy was spread throughout the entire academy, then the three siblings would be mocked and ridiculed by the whole academy..

Jian Chen stared at Ka Di Yun as he leapt up onto the stage and sneered, “Are you here to avenge your brother?”

Angrily glaring at Jian Chen, he said, “Changyang Xiang Tian, you really are strong. However, you’ve injured my brother; therefore, I won’t let you leave this place unharmed.”

The people around the stage all creased their foreheads as they listened to him. Their opinions about Ka Di Yun had now changed.

“Ka Di Yun, what is the meaning of this, do you plan to bully the Changyang clan until no one remains?” A deep voice called out as another person walked onto the arena. Turning around, Jian Chen felt relieved to see it was his older brother, Changyang Hu.

Changyang Hu stared at Ka Di Yun intensely, “Ka Di Yun, if you want to fight, then you’ll have to fight me first.”

Jian Chen felt a wave of warmth encompass his body as he listened to his brother back him up. “Big brother, you should head back down, I can handle this myself.”

Changyang Hu shook his head in response to him. “No can do, fourth brother, it should be you that should head down. Ka Di Yun’s strength has long since reached the peak of the Saint Force level. You are no match for him, so let your big brother help you.”

After hesitating a bit from these words, Jian Chen nodded, “Then big brother, please be careful.” Saying this, Jian Chen walked off the arena.

Ka Di Yun sneered in disdain as he watched Jian Chen exit the arena, “Changyang Hu, you’re just asking for trouble, so don’t blame me for anything that happens.”

“Hmph, you’re saying this far too early. Whoever the winner is and whoever the loser is isn’t certain yet.” Changyang Hu replied. He and Ka Di Yun had long since reached the peak of the 10th Saint Force layer, so if Ka Di Yun didn’t condense his Saint Force into a Saint Weapon, then their strengths would be equal.

Ka Di Yun let loose a ridiculing expression as he looked at the disdain on Changyang Hu’s face. Lifting his right arm, a large golden colored stream of energy started to focus onto his right arm

and condensed into a great golden sword. The golden sword was quite large, and measured around 5 feet long and a single palm spread wide. Judging from the length of the handle, the sword was meant to be held with both hands.

Looking at Ka Di Yun grab the sword with both hands, Jian Chen's eyebrows furrowed together in concern. He had read up on Saint Weapons back in the Changyang Mansion. He could easily see that this was Ka Di Yun's Saint Weapon, and that this was also the first Saint Weapon that Jian Chen had ever seen since he first arrived in this new world. He had long since understood that a Saint Weapon was the condensed version of one's Saint Force, but seeing this with his own eyes, Jian Chen couldn't help but feel amazed. To think that the Saint Force could be condensed in such a way, it felt almost like a fantasy. This made Jian Chen feel extremely excited.

The moment the golden two hand sword appeared, everyone cried out in surprise and admiration.

“A Saint Weapon, he really did condense one....”

“So he already broke through into the Saint level...”

“Ka Di Yun became a Saint, Changyang Hu will be in trouble now...”

The distance between the peak of the 10th layer to Sainthood wasn't that far, but it was nonetheless very difficult to cross over. Within the Kargath Academy, the majority of the seniors had all

reached the peak of the 10th Saint Force layer, but were unable to condense their Saint Force into Saint Weapons. If one didn't have the talent that surpassed a regular person's, then it would be extremely difficult for him/her to make a breakthrough. Within the Tian Yuan continent, it was not rare to see many practitioners to be stuck at the 10th layer until the end of their lives, without being able to become a Saint. From this one could see that successfully becoming a Saint was a truly difficult achievement.

Also, once one broke through to becoming a Saint, his/her strength would be increased by a large amount. A Saint Weapon wasn't one's only weapon; one could use his/her emotions to directly fuel his/her abilities in order to use attacks that far surpassed one's original strength.

Looking at Ka Di Yun's golden sword, Changyang Hu's face became extremely unsightly. Now that Ka Di Yun possessed a Saint Weapon, his strength could overturn the heavens; a person at the peak of the 10th Saint Force layer definitely wouldn't be a match for him.

"Big brother really did condense a Saint Weapon!" Below the arena, Ka Di Qiuli was pleasantly surprised, as she watched Ka Di Yun wave his Saint Weapon around.

Ka Di Liang had an envious look on his face as he stared at the Saint Weapon, but he too was pleasantly surprised. Both siblings had not realized that their eldest sibling had reached the Saint level until this moment.

Holding the Saint Weapon, Ka Di Yun's confidence in himself

was boosted to unprecedented levels. As Changyang Hu's face grew darker and darker, Ka Di Yun's face became even haughtier. The pleasure Ka Di Yun felt in his heart was indescribable.

“Hahahaha, Changyang Hu, are you afraid now? If you kneel down and kowtow to the ground three times and call me your elder then I'll spare you. If you don't then...hmph, you'll know what the end result will be.” Ka Di Yun laughed crazily, his tone savage..

Changyang Hu's face ashened as he listened to Ka Di Yun's demands. Snarling, he answered, “Dream on, Ka Di Yun. Even if you're a Saint now, I, Changyang Hu, will never be afraid of you.”

Ka Di Yun looked at Changyang Hu arrogantly, and casually said, “Changyang Hu, what will you use to fight me with then?”

Changyang Hu angrily glared at Ka Di Yun, fury blazing in his eyes.

“Changyang Hu, your sword!”

At that moment, a sword came flying out from the audience below the arena.

Changyang Hu grabbed the iron sword while settling into a stance. The sword was not light at all, and was of a fairly long size. The silver white sword sparkled in the light in all 4 directions, and aside from the color, there were few differences between Ka Di Yun's sword and Changyang Hu's sword.

Chapter 22: Battling Ka Di Yun

With his sword in hand, Changyang Hu's courage was bolstered, despite knowing that his opponent was a Saint with a Saint Weapon. However, at least he had gained some more power too.

“Changyang Hu, do you really think you stand a chance against me with a regular iron sword? Wishful thinking. Right now, I'll show you the power of a Saint.” Ka Di Yun quickly sped towards Changyang Hu after that while carrying his double sword, as if it wasn't heavy at all. He swung his sword at Changyang Hu so fast, the air whistled as the sword traveled through the air.

Changyang Hu's attention was extremely concentrated on the Ka Di Yun's Saint Weapon. Quickly retreating before he could get hit, the sword narrowly missed him and only swiped at his clothes. A few strands of his clothes were sent flying through the air as the sword sliced away at the clothes.

After becoming a Saint, Ka Di Yun's strength became many times stronger than what it was previously, and couldn't be compared to Changyang Hu's strength, which was at the 10th Saint Force layer. With just the first blow, Changyang Hu knew how much danger he was in.

“Ha!” Halfway through another strike, Ka Di Yun didn't hesitate at all mid-swing. As he advanced closer and closer to Changyang Hu, his entire body started to emit an extremely strong Qi that imposed itself on Changyang Hu. Taking a swipe, Ka Di Yun tried to chop down Changyang Hu with his golden sword once more.

Seeing how strong the greatsword was, Changyang Hu could not parry the blow, as the iron sword in his hand would not be able to withstand the powerful force from the Saint Weapon.

The greatsword was extremely fast, and was far beyond what Changyang Hu had expected. Feeling the great sword in close proximity with his head, Changyang Hu didn't hesitate at all to duck and roll away from it. At this moment, he was unable to cope with the fight's intensity.

“Bang!”

The moment after Changyang Hu rolled away, Ka Di Yun's sword embedded itself into the spot where Changyang Hu had once been standing at. The strong concentration of energy that made up the sword left a deep crack within the ground of the arena, while smaller cracks started to spread out in all four directions to at least a meter away from the original impact zone.

Changyang Hu took the opportunity when Ka Di Yun was trying to recover from his strike to brandish and slash his sword at Ka Di Yun.

“Hmph!” Ka Di Yun snorted in disdain as he waved his hands. The Saint Weapon in his hands began to emit a magnificent light as it reappeared back into his hands and collided against Changyang Hu's iron sword.

A loud and crisp sound echoed throughout the arena as the iron sword met the golden sword, before it was sent flying backwards.

The sword had been forced out of Changyang Hu's hands after the collision, causing Changyang Hu to be defenseless. Already his mouth was trickling blood as the sword had somehow managed to inflict damage to him.

Immediately, Ka Di Yun's foot lashed out and smashed against Changyang Hu's chest. His strength was high enough that it was able to send a strong person like Changyang Hu flying backwards and off of the arena. As he flew off into the air, blood came spraying out of his mouth as his face grew pale from the shock.

"Big brother!" Jian Chen cried out, his expression suddenly changing. He immediately dashed towards where Changyang Hu was and leapt into the air. While everyone was watching Changyang Hu being launched into the air in astonished stupors, Jian Chen had already moved into action. Right as Changyang Hu was about to hit the ground, Jian Chen came out from the side and caught him before impact.

"Keh!" On the ground, Changyang Hu started to cough violently, causing droplets of blood to splatter out of his mouth. A Saint's strength was far stronger than someone who didn't reach the same level; this was true even for Changyang Hu, who was at the peak of the 10th layer. Thus, he had suffered from serious internal injuries.

"Big brother, are your injuries serious?" Jian Chen tried to quell the anger within himself as he looked at his brother in concern.

Changyang Hu shook his head in anger as he fixed his attention at the smug Ka Di Yun on the arena. "I'll be fine, but I didn't think Ka Di Yun's strength would be this strong after reaching the Saint

level with a Saint Weapon. As of right now, your big brother is no longer a match for him.” Changyang Hu growled, his anger not dissipating at all.

“I’m sorry big brother, I was the one who got you involved.” Looking at Changyang Hu’s pale white face from his injuries, Jian Chen felt true guilt within his heart.

Hearing these words, Changyang Hu turned around and looked at Jian Chen. He furrowed his brows and angrily replied, “Fourth brother, what in the world are you saying? Do you not consider me your older brother?” His face grew dark as he let out a helpless sigh, “It’s unfortunate, your big brother is quite useless. Up until now, I still haven’t been able to reach the Saint level; otherwise, Ka Di Yun definitely wouldn’t have been a match for me.”

Changyang Hu’s words shook Jian Chen’s heart; tilting his head up at Ka Di Yun, his eyes started to flash cold for a brief second before disappearing. The disdain in his eyes wouldn’t dissipate, however, and he immediately said emotionlessly, “Big brother, you should rest up for a second, I’ll definitely get revenge for you.” With that said, Jian Chen started to move towards the arena.

Changyang Hu’s face immediately changed after hearing that and he pulled at Jian Chen, “Absolutely not. Fourth brother, you are not Ka Di Yun’s opponent. Don’t go.”

Jian Chen gave an apologetic smile and said, “Big brother, please believe in me.” His face exuded a fierce conviction, and he threw off Changyang Hu’s grasp on him, leaping onto the arena.

“Heavens, what is he planning...”

“It looks like he wants to challenge Ka Di Yun. My god, he’s gone mad!”

“He’s only at the 8th Saint Force layer. To think that he wants to challenge a Saint like Ka Di Yun, he’s only asking for trouble here...”

As Jian Chen leapt onto the arena, the audience surrounding them cried out in alarm; no one believed that Jian Chen would be an appropriate opponent for a Saint like Ka Di Yun.

“He-he really is a hot head. Ka Di Yun is a Saint who just beat a person who was at the peak of the 10th layer. How would he win against someone like that?” Under the arena, the girl who sat next to Jian Chen in the library muttered as she watched him join the arena. Her entire face was filled with concern.

Ka Di Yun watched Jian Chen leap up with a blank look, but he quickly regained his wits and snorted with laughter, “What’s wrong, Changyang Xiang Tian, do you really think you can fight against me?!” Ka Di Yun never thought Jian Chen to be a worthy opponent; after all, he was a powerful Saint already.

Jian Chen responded coldly, “Is it wrong to think that I can?”

Stunned, Ka Di Yun started to laugh evilly as he smiled at Jian

Chen, “Of course, it’s definitely okay.” Right now, Ka Di Yun was thinking about the best way to humiliate Jian Chen, since Jian Chen had humiliated his pretty younger sister, Ka Di Qiuli. during the freshmen martial arts competition for everyone to see. This had earned hatred from both Ka Di Yun and Ka Di Liang, for they both loved their sister dearly.

Jian Chen was in no rush, as he walked over to where Changyang Hu’s sword was. As he weighed the sword on his hands, Jian Chen slightly frowned. The sword didn’t weight past 100 pounds, but it was close enough to that weight. If it weren’t for the fact that Jian Chen was at the 8th Saint Force layer, then he wouldn’t be able to lift the sword at all to use it.

In his previous life, Jian Chen would frequently use a sword that had a blade two finger widths wide. With that sword, he had brought his swordplay to a level that he had been famous for. With this two hand sword, however, Jian Chen felt like one of his arms was bound behind his back, since it was very heavy. He would not be able to use the full extent of his powers, and just swinging the sword with ease would demand a large amount of his energy. It was a shame that with the exception of this sword, there was no other sword around.

With a small amount of hesitation, Jian Chen decided to forgo the giant sword and fight against Ka DI Yun barehanded. This way, he would at least have the advantage in speed and nimbleness.

Arriving at the center of the arena, Jian Chen looked at Ka Di Yun with an impassive face as he stretched his fists, “You make the first move, I’ll fight against you bare handed.”

Ka Di Yun's face narrowed; clearly Jian Chen was looking down on him by fighting bare handed. For an 8th Saint Force layer practitioner to fight against a Saint without any weapon while the Saint had a Saint Weapon, was a display of great humiliation towards the Saint.

Ka Di Yun's eye grew cold as he sneered, "Changyang Xiang Tian, you are far too arrogant." The golden sword in his hand began to disappear slowly into the air, "Let it be said that I didn't bully you. Come, I'll fight you without a weapon as well."

Hearing this, Jian Chen let loose a strange smile. Without wasting words, he dashed towards Ka Di Yun, and used his Saint Force to amplify his strength as his fist flew at Ka Di Yun's head, cutting a sharp whistle through the air.

Ka Di Yun looked at the first with a bored expression, before returning the blow with his own fist. The two fists collided as a golden light flowed out from Ka Di Yun's fist; only those who reached Sainthood would be able to materialize their Saint Force like this.

The moment when the two fists collided against each other, Jian Chen's fist suddenly spread out to become an open palm after the initial contact was made. His hand absorbed the impact so that the blow became as soft as a sponge, as he used Tai Ji Quan to force Ka Di Yun's fist to overextend harmlessly past himself. Ka Di Yun's arm was forced upwards in a weird position as Jian Chen twisted it. In a flash, the strength behind Ka Di Yun's fist dissipated away, as Jian Chen extended his other hand to chop down onto the joint

of Ka Di Yun's arm.

“Kacha!”

The sound of a bone breaking could be heard, as Jian Chen dislocated Ka Di Yun's arm with a arm chop. Ka Di Yun let out a muffled and pained cry, as the pain in his arm registered within his brain, causing his face to go deathly white.

Right after his hand had dislocated Ka Di Yun's arm, Jian Chen did not stop moving. Both of his arms grabbed onto the entire arm and gave it a mighty twist.

“Ah!”

By this point, Ka Di Yun couldn't refrain from screaming anymore. Releasing a squeal of pain reminiscent of a wild pig, he felt as if his entire arm had been broken off. Ever since he was small, he had never suffered pain to an extent like this, and so in such a short amount of time, his face was drained of color, as his entire forehead started to drip with sweat.

Hearing such a desolate yet miserable shriek, the people who had originally been chattering away during the match went deathly silent. Everyone watched Jian Chen with amazement as they watched the inconceivable happen. This situation was the exact opposite of what everyone was expecting to see.

“Since when did fourth brother become this amazing? Just

looking at this, Ka Di Yun will definitely suffer a lot by Changyang Xiang Tian's hand. However, even if Ka Di Yun doesn't use his Saint Weapon, he's still a Saint; his strength is definitely still greater than mine." Changyang Hu muttered to himself as he watched the match with a dumbstruck expression.

Chapter 23: Becoming Popular Because Of Skill

The moment that Ka Di Yun felt pain, he swung out with his other hand at Jian Chen's arms, while aiming his left leg at Jian Chen's groin.

Even though one of his arms was useless, Ka Di Yun was still able to launch

a counterattack. Even with this unsightly scene, Ka Di Yun had some experience with battles and tried to escape this situation.

Seeing a flurry of arms and legs flashing before his eyes, Jian Chen knew that he wouldn't be able to directly take the attacks head on. He helplessly let go of Ka Di Yun's arm, and used the Profound Steps to retreat. He managed to dodge Ka Di Yun's attack and circled around to his back, before using his Saint Force to amplify his attack on Ka Di Yun's back.

TL note: Profound Steps was mentioned earlier back in his room in the Changyang Mansion, it's basically him moving fast.

Feeling the strong wind behind his back, Ka Di Yun didn't hesitate for a second and evaded Jian Chen by diving to the side. However, even as he dodged, Ka Di Yun was amazed. No matter where he moved, he would always feel a wind blowing on his back; he wasn't able to keep up with Jian Chen's movements.

“Peng!”

Ka Di Yun was completely unable to keep up with Jian Chen, who smashed both of his hands into Ka Di Yun’s back, creating a cracking sound as he was hit by a violent attack. This caused Ka Di Yun to stagger two steps forward, but since he was a strong Saint, he immediately steadied himself. However, his face had already paled, as he realized that Jian Chen had hit the same place twice with his fists. Jian Chen’s strength could already be measured at the peak of the 9th layer, and despite Ka Di Yun being stronger than him in rank, he was the one being injured more. At that moment, he could only feel a surge of Qi and blood course through his body, his organs screaming in pain.

As Ka Di Yun steadied himself, Jian Chen had already arrived at his backside another time, and struck at his back with his right hand once more. Although the fist traveled at a speed that made it look like it was as light as a feather, the effect was anything but light. Anyone that had faced off against Jian Chen before would agree that Jian Chen’s strength was more extraordinary than it looked.

Ka Di Yun turned around abruptly, his eyes were indignant with anger. For a strong person like him to suffer this much from someone who was by all rights weaker than him, his simple plan to humiliate Jian Chen was no longer as simple as he thought.

“Ha!” Ka Di Yun snarled in anger, as his hand started to glow golden with his Saint Force. The huge concentration of Saint Force condensed into his hand as he faced Jian Chen, aiming it towards Jian Chen’s chest. Seeing Jian Chen attack with a seemingly light

fist, Ka Di Yun prepared to take it head on in order to get close to Jian Chen for his own attack.

The situation turned into a critical point of the match, as both the fighter's attacks struck each other. Jian Chen's seemingly light and weak fist silently struck against Ka Di Yun's chest. Immediately, Ka Di Yun's own fist let out a muffled sound as it struck against Jian Chen's body, blowing apart a hole in the academy uniform, and revealing a tender white skin that would be the target of envy by many of the girls. But in the blink of an eye, the skin underneath became a pile of bruises after receiving Ka Di Yun's blow.

“Deng!” “Deng!” “Deng!”

After receiving a blow from Ka Di Yun, Jian Chen's face contorted in pain, and the color started to drain away from his face. And with the blow being enforced by such a huge amount of strength, his legs weren't enough to prevent him from sliding back, until he was a few inches away from the edge of the arena. At this moment, other than his paling face, Jian Chen did not seem to have any other problems, despite Ka Di Yun using his Saint Force to accentuate his attack.

Although Jian Chen was only at the 8th layer, because he had been using Azulet Sword Law to constantly cultivate his body since he was young, he had strengthened every single organ and part of his body to the utmost degree. So while on the outside, it seemed that Jian Chen's physical body was quite weak, his actual ability to resist and take damage would leave anyone flabbergasted. Even though Ka Di Yun was a Saint, without using his Saint Weapon, his

regular attacks would not be able to seriously wound Jian Chen; at the most, Jian Chen would sport some small bruises.

On the other hand, while Ka Di Yun was standing at the same place, his face had scrunched up in major pain as his body began to visibly tremble from the pain he was feeling.

Before, Jian Chen's fist that seemed to be as light as a feather, impacted against his stomach and caused a peculiar feeling to be transferred over into him. The power forcibly entered his body and suddenly went berserk as it exploded within him, causing his internal body to go crazy from the pain.

Ka Di Yun's face became incomparably dark, as he used all the Saint Force within his body began to combat the power that was rebelling inside. Since his Saint Force was stronger than Jian Chen's, the foreign power within him was cleared away quickly, but the damage was done. At this point, Ka Di Yun was suffering from internal damages as well. The damages weren't very serious, but it would definitely impact his performance in the battle for the worse if it dragged on.

Ka Di Yun glared at the calm Jian Chen in front of him with a shocked expression. He hadn't ever imagined that he would be put in such a difficult spot as a Saint by someone who was lower ranked than him. Although he wasn't using his Saint Weapon, his strength was still stronger than those at the peak of the 10th layer, let alone the 8th layer Jian Chen.

At that moment, Ka Di Yun finally realized how hard it was to deal with Jian Chen, but it was too late to stop. Over the past few

confrontations, he understood that without using the Saint Weapon, he would have a difficult time beating Jian Chen and might even lose to him. With the Saint Weapon he would definitely win against him, but that wouldn't be a bright situation. Besides, he had also clearly stated that he wouldn't use a Saint Weapon against Jian Chen. If he went back on his word now, then even if he won, his reputation would plummet to the bottom. After all, there were plenty of people watching the match, along with some seniors. Not only that but he was Ka Di Yun—Gesun Kingdom's elite elder son of the Ka Di clan; he couldn't lose face now.

Ka Di Yun was starting to reflect on his actions now, but then Jian Chen decided to charge at him with both his arms outstretched. Rapidly approaching, Jian Chen was using a weird technique to cause his moves to become unpredictable and made him look like a bolt of lightning. In Ka Di Yun's eyes, Jian Chen had become an after image.

Ka Di Yun narrowly blocked Jian Chen's strike. His right arm was dislocated, and he hadn't had enough time to pop it back into place, so he could only use his left hand to block against Jian Chen's attacks. Because of this, in face of Jian Chen's Saint Force, Ka Di Yun fell from his invincible position, and began to fight back earnestly now. He no longer belittled Jian Chen, and started to view him as an opponent of the same level.

The two people continued to fight at a fast paced speed; the battlefield became fierce. Jian Chen didn't dare to hold back since Ka Di Yun's strength was much stronger than his own. With both of them in a deadlock, the two could only defend against each other.

Jian Chen's attacks were getting stronger and stronger, while Ka Di Yun was finding it harder and harder to resist . Gradually in front of Ka Di Yun's eyes, all he could see were the palms of Jian Chen's hands; his eyes were getting too tired to differentiate between the after images of Jian Chen, and he could only rely on his listening abilities to tell when and where Jian Chen would attack.

Finally, Ka Di Yun became careless, and Jian Chen struck out at his left shoulder with a powerful strike. Ka Di Yun couldn't help but lag behind, as Jian Chen began to bombard him with a plethora of attacks. It was almost as if Ka Di Yun was in a very violent storm where he was battered from every angle.

“Peng!” “Peng!” “Peng!”

Jian Chen repeatedly hit Ka Di Yun on the shoulder with ferocious attacks, and even Ka Di Yun's strong Saint power could not bear the attacks. He constantly retreated. and a trace of blood trickled out of Ka Di Yun's mouth.

Seeing that Ka Di Yun was already driven to the edge of the arena, Jian Chen's eyes fiercely flashed. Growling, Jian Chen gathered the Saint Force into his hand and struck Ka Di Yun in the chest another time. This fist was a lot stronger than the last, and the moment the fist connected, Ka Di Yun fell from the arena down onto the ground below.

Jian Chen stood on the arena while breathing heavily. Since he

was constantly using his entire strength, he had exhausted his supply of Saint Force, to the point where he had almost none left within his body. If Ka Di Yun did not accept defeat here and now, then Jian Chen would not be able to maintain his odds of winning for long.

The arena became quiet, as everyone stared at the lone figure standing on top of the arena. At this moment, everyone showed incomprehensible expressions. This had already exceeded anyone's wildest guess, and no one had thought that Jian Chen would win against a Saint. Most importantly, he had defeated a Saint while coming out almost unharmed. Even though the Saint didn't use a Saint Weapon, this outcome was no less surprising nor predictable.

At this moment, the arena was completely silent, so quiet that one could hear a pin drop. There were over 200 people that were watching, but not a single person dared to make a sound.

“Big brother...”

A voice finally broke the spell of silence over the arena as the Ka Di siblings sped over to where Ka Di Yun lay on the floor.

As if awakened, everyone started to burst into noise, as if the seal of a pot had been broken. All around the arena, people were chattering away noisily with excitement and shock.

“Heavens, I'm not dreaming, an 8th layer student managed to beat a Saint. This is an unprecedented event in the academy history...”

“Is that Changyang Xiang Tian really at the 8th layer? Even a person at the peak of the 10th layer wouldn’t necessarily be able to beat a Saint who wasn’t using his Saint Weapon...”

“Changyang Xiang Tian’s strength can’t possibly be only at the 8th Saint Force layer. Who knows, he might have already condensed a Saint Weapon. Otherwise, how else would he be able to beat a student like Senior Ka Di Yun, a Saint...”

“Perhaps Changyang Xiang Tian used some sort of despicable method to win...”

Jian Chen didn’t bother to answer any of the comments and jumped down to where his older brother Changyang Hu was. Looking at his brother’s expression of extreme shock, Jian Chen laughed, “Big brother, I didn’t dissappoint you. I’ve won.”

Changyang Hu became emotional after hearing that, and hugged Jian Chen with both arms. “Fourth brother, you’re seriously amazing! You managed to beat Ka Di Yun, a Saint. Your big brother truly admires you!” He said as he wrapped Jian Chen in a huge bear hug.

Jian Chen let loose a happy smile from the affection, before he gradually disentangled himself from his brother’s arms, “Big brother, there’s too many people here to talk. Let’s leave this place first.”

Chapter 24: Skill

Changyang Hu unconsciously turned around to look at the crowd before nodding his head, “Alright, fourth brother, let’s go to your room first. You definitely have to tell me how you beat Ka Di Yun, and then later tonight, I’ll grab a few friends to come and celebrate!”

Jian Chen smiled happily at his brother, “Big brother, I can teach you how I beat Ka Di Yun, but let’s forget about the celebration.”

“Fine, I’ll listen to you. Come on, fourth brother, let’s go back to your dorm – it’s far too noisy here.” Changyang Hu started to pull his younger brother back towards the direction of the dorms.

“Changyang Xiang Tian!”

Before Jian Chen could take a step, a gentle and exquisite voice called out to him.

Hearing the familiar voice, Jian Chen blanked out for a moment before turning around. Looking at the speaker, he recognized the figure of the running girl, particularly the pretty girl who had sat next to him in the library earlier.

“Yes?” Jian Chen questioned, as he indifferently looked at the young girl, who was so beautiful that it would be easy to cause a city to fight over her..

The girl's voice was like a gentle stream of water as she laughed joyously. Slowly extending her arm out to reveal a purse, she happily said, "Changyang Xiang Tian, you managed to win me 100 Purple coins, I really have to thank you." Her voice was extraordinarily soft, and also very pleasant to listen to; it was almost as if she was a skylark singing on a peaceful day..

Hearing this, Changyang Hu appeared to have suddenly realized something. He slapped his forehead in disbelief, "Ai ya, I just remembered. I put down 100 Purple coins; that was my entire savings and I didn't get it back. Fourth brother, you go on without me, your big brother has to get his money back!" And with that, Changyang Hu vanished like the wind, back to where the crowd of gamblers were.

Looking at Changyang Hu rush back for his money, Jian Chen couldn't help but laugh. At that moment, the girl slowly walked up to Jian Chen, studying his handsome features with her inquisitive eyes. "Hello! Changyang Xiang Tian, my name is You Yue. May I ask you a question?"

Jian Chen laughed and replied, "Miss You Yue, if you have a question, you should go on ahead and ask, but I can't guarantee an answer."

"No worries!" You Yue gently laughed before asking, "Changyang Xiang Tian, is your strength is really only of the 8th Saint Force Layer?"

Jian Chen hesitated for a moment before he nodded his head, "That's right, at the moment, I am currently in the 8th Saint Force

layer, but I have a feeling I'll be making a breakthrough into the 9th layer soon."

You Yue was surprised after hearing his answer. With an astounded look, she exclaimed, "Changyang Xiang Tian, you mean you really haven't reached the Saint level?" Her voice carried some doubt; clearly, she didn't believe him entirely.

Noticing the disbelief in her voice, Jian Chen furrowed his brows and spoke with some annoyance, "Miss You Yue, I seem to have answered your question." Even though she was a beautiful girl that could cause countless cities to fight for her, to Jian Chen, she was no different than the average girl.

You Yue immediately waved her hands in an apologetic motion as she laughed, "I'm sorry, Changyang Xiang Tian, I'm just far too amazed. I hope you didn't take offense to what I said."

Her voice trailed off as Changyang Hu came running back with a joyful face and a fat coin bag. When he arrived by Jian Chen's side, he was tossing the purse up and down his hand as he snickered, "Fourth brother, your big brother is very wise. In less than an hour, I've won 100 Purple coins." 100 Purple coins was by no means a small number to a commoner and for those who only ate a simple amount of food in their lives; 100 Purple coins could feed a family of three for the rest of their lives.!

Staring at the coin purse in his brother's hands, Jian Chen started to smile and said, "Miss You Yue, if you have no other questions, then I'll be leaving first."

You Yue smiled back at him, “That’s fine, I won’t hold you up any longer. I haven’t finished reading my book either, so I’ll be returning to the library. Changyang Xiang Tian, I’ll see you later!”

Soon after, Jian Chen brought his older brother back to his dorm and closed the door as they both walked in. Immediately, Changyang Hu impatiently asked, “Fourth brother, you’ve got to tell me what you did to beat Ka Di Yun, and how strong you really are! It couldn’t only be at the 8th Saint Force layer, you have to be a Saint!” As he spoke, Changyang Hu’s face revealed an impatient, excited face as he waited for an answer.

Jian Chen gently shook his head, “I’m not. Big brother, my actual strength should be not too far away from the 9th Saint Force layer. As for reaching the Saint level, I believe I’m still quite far away from it.”

Changyang Hu looked at him with doubt, “Fourth brother, if you say you haven’t reached the level of a Saint, then how did you beat Ka Di Yun?”

Laughing, Jian Chen replied, “Haha, how did I beat Ka Di Yun? Big brother, did you not see the match clearly?”

Changyang Hu’s head drooped down in embarrassment as he blushed, “That is...er...fourth brother...actually, actually I wasn’t able to see the match all that clearly. Could you please tell your older brother?” Although Changyang Hu had seen the match from start to finish, there were some things that could not be

comprehended by eyesight alone. For example, Changyang Hu had not been able to comprehend what happened when Jian Chen struck at Ka Di Yun with a punch that seemed to be as light as a feather, but still managed to significantly damage.

Jian Chen sat on his bed, calmly looked at Changyang Hu, and said, “Big brother, the only reason a student of the 8th layer like me was able to beat a Saint like Ka Di Yun was because I relied on a technique to win.”

“A technique?” Changyang Hu was still skeptical. He was no stranger when it came to techniques and skill, because in the academy, many of the teachers would often talk about their knowledge of their personal techniques. In a fight against equally matched experts, one would need to use extremely strong techniques in order to win, but such techniques weren’t so easy to train in. Even if they did learn the techniques, only those with battle experience would be able to learn and perfect a technique to the point of being able to incorporate it into their fighting styles. What Changyang Hu really confused was that, not only was Jian Chen younger than him, but he has also only been at the academy for a few days now. Changyang Hu couldn’t help but be shocked when he saw that Jian Chen had mastered such a technique.

“Fourth brother, where did you learn a technique like that?” Changyang Hu asked curiously.

Jian Chen shook his head sadly, “Big brother, I can’t tell you that.”

Upon hearing that, Changyang Hu had a look of sorrow on his

face. The next thing Jian Chen had said though, brought his spirits back up, “Big brother, if you are willing to learn a martial technique, I can teach you.”

“For real? That’s great! Fourth brother, when can you get started on teaching me? How about now?” He was anxious to get started, and wanted to learn this amazing technique right away. Once he learned the technique, then it was even possible for him to challenge Saints who had condensed their Saint Weapons with his current power!

Jian Chen laughed, “Big brother, it would be better to start tomorrow. I’ll be waiting for you in the eastern grotto outside the academy tomorrow morning.”

“Alright fourth brother, it’s a deal! I’ll be at the grotto tomorrow morning,” Changyang Hu promised. Although many of the academy teachers could help instruct one on learning a martial technique, he knew in his heart that fighting techniques were best taught by the previous generation in a clan. Techniques taught by the professors here would not be strong enough to overwhelm any of his opponents.

Afterwards, the two brothers chatted for a while, until Changyang Hu finally left. Because Jian Chen had used up most of his Saint Force to fight against Ka Di Yun, he was exhausted and slightly injured. Because of that, he decided to use the Class 3 Monster Core in order to recover his health.

Little did he know that, the whole academy was already in an uproar about how Jian Chen had beaten Ka Di Yun. There wasn’t

anyone in the academy who hadn't heard about it, and it shocked both students and teachers alike. Everyone thought this to be inconceivable, and an event of this scale was practically unprecedented in the entire history of the Kargath Academy. No one had ever heard of a Saint, who had been strong enough to easily beat a person at the peak of the 10th layer be beaten by someone only at the 8th layer; even if a Saint did not use a Saint Weapon, he/she could still easily defeat someone of the 9th layer, let alone a freshman who was only at the 8th layer.

The news of the fight between Jian Chen and Ka Di Yun soon reached the ears of the headmaster.

Within the middle of the central tower in Kargath Academy, the headmaster pondered about the situation while standing next to the open window. As his eyebrows knit together, he asked, "Bai En, is what you say true? Changyang Xiang Tian actually beat the Saint Ka Di Yun while he was only at the 8th Saint Force layer?" Even the headmaster couldn't believe it the first time, and his eyes twinkled in curiosity.

The vice headmaster, Bai En, stood respectfully behind the headmaster. In response to the headmaster's words, Bai En replied, "Headmaster, I've heard all of the students talk about it, but I'm not too sure of the exact details. But right now, this event has set the academy upside down; practically every teacher knows that Changyang Xiang Tian has beaten the higher ranked Ka Di Yun. Rumors have it though, that Ka Di Yun didn't use his Saint Weapon, and fought bare handed against Jian Chen."

The headmaster stroked his long white beard, in deep thought.

“Since the rumors spread this wide, it would appear that it is true. Haha, it seems that Chang Bai has brought quite the complicated youngster. For a Saint to be beaten by an 8th layer student, how inconceivable. Even if the Saint had recently broken through and didn’t use his weapon, his strength should still be higher than one at the 10th layer. In all my years at Kargath Academy, I have never seen such a match where someone with a lower level won.”

“Headmaster, what should we do about this situation? Sooner or later, the seniors of the school will search for the 8th layer student who beat a Saint, and become an inconvenience for Changyang Xiang Tian,” said Bai En with a respectful tone. The amount of respect Bai En had for headmaster couldn’t be measured, as it could even be considered as worship.

The headmaster turned towards Bai En and casually waved his hand, “Forget it, let them handle it by themselves. As long as they don’t make a big deal out of it, we won’t interfere. Besides, this should be a test for them; if they can’t take everything thrown at them, then they won’t mature into fine warriors.”

Chapter 25: Instructing Big Brother

In a blink of an eye, 3 days had past since the fight between Ka Di Yun and Jian Chen had taken place. Pretty much everyone in Kargath Academy knew about Changyang Xiang Tian now, you couldn't even walk a few steps without hearing his name.

In the past 3 days, Jian Chen had spent every morning teaching his big brother martial techniques in the grottos. Other than that, he spent the rest of his time cultivating; the Class 3 Monster Core had drastically improved his cultivation rate. He wanted to hurry up and reach the 10th layer so that he could rush straight into the Saint level.

Jian Chen had been very curious on how condensing a Saint Weapon worked, but according to book explanations, once the Saint Weapon is condensed, it replaced one's Saint Force. From that moment on, the Saint Weapon would be the origin for one's power. While it remains in the body, it releases Saint Force, and when one summons it, the Saint Weapon becomes one's strongest weapon. With it, one's attack would be multiplied.

A Saint Weapon was one's energy; if it were to break, then that person would lose all of their cultivation progress as well as receiving a fatal injury. If the break was fatal enough, then the practitioner would die. However, a Saint Weapon was extremely strong, it wouldn't break unless the opposing side was vastly stronger than them.

The next morning, Jian Chen opened his eyes signifying the completion of last night's cultivation. After 3 entire days of

cultivation, the Saint Force inside Jian Chen had been strengthened and he estimated that he was long since past the 9th layer. He would have to test his Saint Force to find out whether or not he became a 10th layer practitioner or a Saint.

Getting off his bed, Jian Chen got dressed quickly before heading out of his dorm. The sky was still dark, and majority of the students were still cultivating or sleeping. The sports field was relatively peaceful since there were no people in sight. Only in remote corners did Jian Chen see a few other early risers practicing.

Passing the field, Jian Chen immediately headed towards the grotto. These past few days, Jian Chen was to spend some time every morning to teach his older brother some knowledge about the aspects of fighting. After all, in his previous world, Jian Chen was a wanderer and an expert for many years, so he had participated in countless battles. The amount of battle experience far surpassed that of the Kagarth Academy teachers. If actually compared, Jian Chen already had the qualifications to go teach the Kagarth Academy teachers.

When Jian Chen arrived at the grotto, he discovered that his older brother Changyang Hu was already waiting there, and was currently sitting on a tree stump. He had an aimless expression, as he randomly swept his gaze around his surroundings in boredom. As soon as Jian Chen appeared, he immediately stood up in excitement, and jumped up from the tree stump. He happily said, "Fourth brother, you've finally arrived."

Jian Chen smiled, "Big brother, why did you arrive so early?"

“Hehe, it’s habit, just a habit. Fourth brother, let’s start now. I spent the whole day yesterday trying to make heads or tails of the utilization of power you mentioned yesterday morning, but I was still unable to understand it. Can you re-explain it in detail to your big brother, one more time?” Changyang Hu asked in a slightly embarrassed tone.

“Of course I can.” Jian Chen smiled, and replied, “Big brother, I’ll tell you about that tomorrow morning. Today, I’ll personally demonstrate it to you.” Saying this, Jian Chen picked up a skinny stick next to his feet.

“Big brother, watch closely.” Saying this, Jian Chen took the branch and lightly waved it in the direction of a small tree, about the thickness of his wrist. When the branch approached the small tree, the skinny branch directly left his hand and silently pierced through the small tree, as if there were no obstacles at all. It seemed almost as if the small tree was originally only a mirage.

As he watched this strange scene, Changyang Hu started to have major doubts. At that moment, a rustling sound was heard, as the small tree started to split in the middle, the top half crashing down.

Changyang Hu opened his eyes wide and immediately ran towards the tree only to see the strangely smooth incision on it. It was almost as if a sharp sword had chopped the tree down. It was truly unimaginable since this fine cut done by a light slash of a flimsy tree branch had been enough to chop through the small tree.

Immediately, Changyang Hu's eyes switched over to the small tree branch in Jian Chen's hand. He ran on over and took it into his hands to look over, but no matter how much he looked at it, it seemed to be an average tree branch. As he brandished it softly, the tree branch merely swayed with his hand.

Seeing this, Changyang Hu's doubt grew even more. He really did not understand how such a plain looking tree branch could cut down a tree trunk the size of his wrist. He exerting some strength into his fingers, and the tree branch in his hand broke in half.

"Fourth Brother, how in the world did you do this? How can such a weak little tree branch cut down a small tree?" Changyang Hu asked, the doubt on his face could be clearly seen.

Jian Chen laughed, "Big brother, this only requires Saint Force to accomplish it. Don't say its because of the tree branch; even if it's a needle or a sewing thread, they both can cut through a tree branch with ease. Of course, my current strength isn't strong enough to do that."

"What, a sewing needle and string can cut through a tree? Fourth brother, do you have a fever or something? This can't be possible." Changyang Hu cried out in shock. He couldn't believe what Jian Chen had said at all since he had never heard of such a thing since he was born; to him, this was an impossible feat.

Jian Chen smiled from the start to finish of Changyang Hu's outburst; he had not expected him to react differently. But Jian

Chen didn't bother to explain; when the day came where Changyang Hu's strength was strong enough, he would understand.

Jian Chen picked up another tree branch from the ground and said, "Big brother, you're still wondering how I could use a tree branch to cut through a tree right? Take another look, I'll demonstrate one more time."

Changyang Hu went silent as he became entirely focused on the tree branch in Jian Chen's hand. He didn't dare to get distracted now, just in case he missed out on some details.

Waving the tree branch in his hands, Jian Chen's eyes flashed once before the tree branch suddenly distorted in his hands, causing the bent parts of the tree branch to slowly straighten. In the way it had been warped, it was almost as if it had a life of its own, since it was moving in the same manner as a snake would. It slowly started to move around in midair—those who saw the sight would only be able to describe it as weird.

Changyang Hu's eyes grew wide from this strange display as he couldn't believe what he was seeing. With his eyes so wide, he looked as if he'd seen a ghost. He couldn't believe it at all; it was only a tree branch, and yet it had unexpectedly started to move around by itself.

Jian Chen's eyes started to emit an amazing light as he cried, "Big

brother, please watch carefully.” Jian Chen grabbed onto the perfectly straight tree branch and walked forward with it towards another small tree nearby.

His movements weren't fast at all; in actuality, they were very slow. Inching towards the tree, the moment his tree branch touched against the tree, it was as if the tree branch was being absorbed into the tree. Slowly, the tree branch went deeper and deeper into the tree trunk before it finally skewered itself through it.

This act stunned Changyang Hu into silence as he focused onto the impaled tree trunk. His mouth dropped open so much that an egg could fit inside. His eyes were filled with an expression of disbelief.

“Fourth brother, how did you do that?” Changyang Hu shivered in awe. Even his heart was violently pulsing as his eyes were still planted on the tree.

With a faint smile, Jian Chen answered, “Big brother, it's actually not that hard to do this. As long as you harmonize your Saint Force with the tree branch, then even though it's just a normal tree branch, it will turn into a sharp weapon. If one's strength is strong enough, then the tree branch can cut as easily as an iron sword.”

“To harmonize the Saint Force and the tree branch...” Changyang Hu's eyebrows furrowed in concentration as he muttered. Immediately, he grabbed a tree branch on the floor and following Jian Chen's instructions, he began to infuse the tree

branch slowly with his Saint Force.

“Peng!”

At the very moment when his Saint Force made contact with the tree branch, the tree branch violently exploded and sent pieces of it flying throughout the air.

“Big brother, your Saint Force is excessively fierce, so the frail tree branch wasn’t able to bear it. Also, you’re not proficient enough to control your Saint Force to a fine level yet. Remember, when you harmonize the Saint Force into the tree branch, you must make sure to transform the Saint Force into a soft type of energy, not a violent one.” Jian Chen instructed.

Hearing that, Changyang Hu became puzzled, “Fourth brother, how does one make their Saint Force become a soft type of energy?”

“Turning the Saint Force into a soft type of energy is merely just a different way of using it, that’s all. Trying to explain this mystery anymore would be useless since only you can understand yourself. Big brother, starting from today, whenever you have spare time, try to harmonize the tree branch with your Saint Force. This way, it’ll also strengthen your Saint Force. In the future if you can reach the level I showed you today, it’ll bring you many good benefits when you cultivate.” Jian Chen explained, almost as if he was a teacher instructing his students.

However, Jian Chen knew that if Changyang Hu wanted to

accomplish what he had just demonstrated, trying to make a frail tree branch strong enough to pierce through a small tree in such a small time, it would definitely not be accomplished in such a short amount of time. This required a high mastery of one's Saint Force, and without a sufficient amount of practice, Changyang Hu would definitely not be able to harmonize the two together. Having a wooden tree branch harden into a sharp weapon like an iron sword was not simple at all. Infusing an iron sword with Saint Force would be easier, for example, but while an iron sword could support a larger amount of Saint Force, a tree branch could not, and required a gentle control.

Changyang Hu nodded, and after some contemplation, once again picked up the branch to try again. However, without exception, every single one of his attempts resulted in failure; not a single time did he succeed. He was completely unable to merge the Spirit Force into the tree branch. Every time his inner Spirit Force approached the tree branch, the branch would explode, unable to bear his overly fierce and intense Spirit Force.

Jian Chen stood on a side and watched Changyang Hu practice, and at the same time, he continued to instruct his brother. They continued all the way until the sun had risen above them. Only then did Jian Chen leave the grotto, leaving Changyang Hu alone as he continued to try without stopping; next to him, the ground already had a huge pile of broken tree branches.

Chapter 26: Protection Fee

The sun was out as Jian Chen walked across the sports field, where quite a few students were already exercising. Sparing a glance at those students, Jian Chen proceeded to move on towards the library. During the past 3 days, Jian Chen was constantly cultivating his Saint Force and did not have the time to go to the library at all. In Jian Chen's eyes, the only thing the academy had to offer that really attracted him was the library. When it came to the classes taught by the teachers, Jian Chen didn't have a single speck of interest, and he personally felt that it was a waste of time. The teachers didn't have anything worthwhile to teach him, but the library did. After all, the library had records of everything that had happened on the Tian Yuan continent.

“Hey look, isn't that Changyang Xiang Tian? I heard he beat the Saint, Ka Di Yun, while he was only at the 8th Saint Force layer...”

“It is, it is! I even watched Changyang Xiang Tian fight in the freshmen competition, but I didn't get a chance to see him fight against Ka Di Yun, what a great shame...”

On the sports field, two males who saw Jian Chen were pointing from afar, while looking at him with a huge amount of respect.

“Wow, Changyang Xiang Tian is so cool and so strong. For him to beat the Saint, Ka Di Yun, while at the 8th Saint Force layer; he really is my idol...” Another first year minor noble girl cried, as her eyes sparkled with emotions.

More and more people started to gather on the field. As Jian Chen walked across the sports field, many of the surrounding people started to notice him. Ever since he had beaten Ka Di Yun three days ago, his name had spread around the academy in a mere few hours, and his reputation had skyrocketed to the point where even the teachers of Kargath Academy knew him by name.

Jian Chen quickly crossed the field into a shady area which would lead him to the library. Because there weren't many people at the library, the path towards the library was fairly serene and quiet. With almost no people in sight, all Jian Chen could see was the scenery of nature, as the wind scattered countless leaves into the air with a rustling sound.

Just then, the shadows of a few people suddenly appeared in front of Jian Chen. It was a group of four people who were laughing and talking amongst themselves, each one of them looking to be around ** years old. A simple look at their school uniforms could identify them as students of the academy as well.

Jian Chen didn't pay any attention to the group of students in front of him, and proceeded to walk past them. But as he just crossed them, the four students suddenly stopped talking, and then quickly surrounded Jian Chen.

Stopping, Jian Chen looked at the students surrounding him and noted that they were all seniors. With a cold smile, he asked, "Dear seniors, what is the meaning of this?"

The four students stood tall and proud as they circled Jian Chen before one of them spoke up.

“Kid, you look unfamiliar, you must be a freshmen.” The one in front of Jian Chen smiled with an unfriendly stare at him.

Jian Chen did not show any emotion as he stared at the speaker, speaking to his face, he gave a faint smile, “That’s right, this one here is a freshman. What do these seniors want with a freshman like me?”

Hearing this, the senior chuckled, “If you want to live peacefully at Kargath Academy, then it’s important that you have people like us protecting you. But if you want our protection, then you need to pay us. Since you’re a freshman, then you just need to pay us 10 Purple coins; how about it, a good deal right?” The student had a confident smile on his face; in his mind, he had already intimidated Jian Chen. To him, Jian Chen was smaller, and therefore weaker in terms of strength, and he felt that he had definitely overpowered him already. He was confident in his skills as well, since he had already pulled this off many different times, making him an experienced veteran. If he had met a stronger student, then of course he would have thought twice before pulling this scam off, but Jian Chen didn’t seem like a strong student, so this would definitely be a total success; resistance would be futile.

If Jian Chen was just another commoner student, then the four students would not dare extort a protection fee from Jian Chen if they wanted to remain in the academy. After all, all the upperclassmen in Kargath Academy knew that the headmaster always sided with the commoners of the academy. But these four students have been living in the academy for some time now, and they could tell which student was a commoner and which student was a noble. So when they saw Jian Chen, they could clearly tell

that Jian Chen was a noble, and therefore dared to extort him for money.

Hearing him, Jian Chen internally snorted; he hadn't thought that people would try to collect protection fees from him.

“Seniors, I am very sorry, but I will have to refuse your protection,” Jian Chen stated. Before they could even respond, he shouldered his way past the older students and resumed to walk towards the library once more.

Jian Chen's actions caused the four students to be startled. This situation had gone against their expectations, and none of them had expected to see Jian Chen so straightforwardly decline their protection.

The four students immediately turned towards Jian Chen, who was walking away from them. Their eyes flashed dangerously. The one student who had his shoulder pushed aside snarled, while his face turned unsightly.

“Motherf*cking brat, stop right there!” He yelled angrily. Stomping towards him, he immediately cut Jian Chen off from his path, as the other 3 followed him and formed the circle, once more confining Jian Chen in the middle.

“You dared to knock against me, are you tired of living?” The initial speaker cried before fiercely reaching out to slap Jian Chen across the face with his palm.

Seeing the hand approach his face, Jian Chen's blank stare instantly became sharp, and his eyes flashed with a deep coldness. He lifted his own right hand up to block the incoming hand, so quickly that the other students couldn't react in time. After intercepting that student's hand that was halfway to his face, Jian Chen lashed out with his foot, and his kick connected with the student's chest. With a small gasp, the student was sent flying backwards, before he heavily fell down onto the ground some distance away.

The situation had suddenly escalated, surprising the other 3 students. None of them would have thought that their previously easy target to bully would suddenly become like this. Before they could even react, Jian Chen had kicked their companion across the place.

But they soon regained their wits and started to sweat. Without even needing to discuss it amongst themselves, they all concluded that they needed to dispose of Jian Chen.

Although they knew Jian Chen's strength wasn't normal, these four students had run rampant in Kargath Academy and were not afraid of him. Even if Jian Chen was that strong, the four of them combined could take him on, so they had nothing to fear. Not only that, but they all had strong clans backing them up, thus, they had a strong shield with them throughout the entire academy.

Sensing that the three other students were exuding out their Saint Force, Jian Chen looked at them with a hint of disdain. The moment the three prepared to fight, the levels of their Saint Force had been revealed to him; the three of them were roughly at the

10th layer of Saint Force.

The three went into motion very quickly, and in a blink of an eye, they were in front of Jian Chen. However, at the crucial moment, Jian Chen's body swayed and dodged each one of their attacks.

While the 3 attacks failed to make contact, Jian Chen didn't wait for them to recover, and immediately slammed his fist into one of the students' forehead so quickly that none of them could react.

"Peng!" The student who had his forehead hit immediately fainted onto the floor. At the same time, Jian Chen's right leg kicked one of the other students in the chest.

Following the dull thud, because the youth had long been prepared, he managed to endure and only stumbled back a few steps after receiving the kick from Jian Chen, and quickly steadied himself. Despite that, his complexion had turned pale as the two huge forces of energy hidden in Jian Chen's kick had jolted his internal organs. Furthermore, faint strands of Saint Force had also flowed through Jian Chen's leg into the youth's body, wreaking havoc among his internal organs.

Just as the youth had stabilized himself, Jian Chen's second leg had already once again kicked out. Leaving behind afterimages in the air, the leg landed onto the chest of the youth once again. Moreover, the second kick landed perfectly on the same spot as the first, beautifully superimposing themselves on each other.

Having received two heavy hits in a row on the same spot, the damage the youth suffered was not as simple as adding one plus one. When Jian Chen's second kick landed on the youth's chest, even if he had the strength of a 10th layer Saint Force, he would still suffer serious injuries. Waves of acute pain emitted from the vital organs within his body, instantly turning the youth's face white. His internal Qi was also blocked, causing him to have extreme difficulty breathing. He staggered back a few steps before one last unsteady step brought him crashing to the ground, and left him unable to stand back up again.

Seeing Jian Chen effortlessly dispatch a comrade who had a strength comparable to his own in the blink of an eye, the remaining youth's complexion changed. The foot that was just about to rush towards Jian Chen suddenly stopped in its place, it was as if the soles of his feet grew roots which extended deep into the ground. The youth did not dare to take a step forward. Eyes filled with vigilance, the youth stared at Jian Chen with an expression that had lost the smugness from before, and was instead now filled with an intense concentration.

Jian Chen's calm gaze turned to glance at the youth, the corners of his mouth betraying traces of a sneer. Without a word, he turned and left towards the direction of the library.

After Jian Chen left, the two youths who had been beaten to the ground by Jian Chen raggedly crawled up from the ground, eyes seething with a poisonous hatred as they bore holes into Jian Chen's back. One of them grumbled in a low voice, "Who is he, to be so strong that even all of us together were far from his match? Is this really a new student who had enrolled this year? How can he be so strong?"

“Who cares who he is; since he dared to offend us, we absolutely cannot forgive him.” In a furious tone, another person also cursed. His tone was also somewhat weak, as if he was gasping for breath. This was the youth that had been kicked twice by Jian Chen; presently, his internal organs had already received a serious jolt. If it were not for the fact that his strength was originally above that of Jian Chen’s, he wouldn’t even have the strength to stand at this point.

Chapter 27: Incoming Trouble (One)

Immediately, the spared student ran over to the fallen two students. Concerned, he asked the pale youth that Jian Chen had kicked twice, “Luo Yun, are you alright?”

The student named Luo Yun nodded his head and spoke with a weak voice, “I’ll be fine after a few days of cultivation.” Turning around, he asked the other injured student and whispered, “Karl, you can find information around the academy faster than us; find out what that brat’s name is then have Master Cheng sort him out!”

Hearing his friend, Karl thought for a second before responding, “There’s no need to, I think I already know who he is.”

The other two student’s face lit up as Luo Yun said, “That’s great then, Karl, who is he?”

“In this years annual Freshmen Competition, there was an unusually strong competitor, the very same one that beat the Saint, Ka Di Yun, while being an 8th Saint Force layer practitioner. I think he’s that person.” Karl’s face grew dark as he said it.

As the two students heard Karl, their faces immediately changed. Looking at each other, Luo Yun said, “Could he really be that Changyang Xiang Tian?”

Karl nodded his head, “It’s very possible. Within the newest group of freshmen, only Changyang Xiang Tian could beat me. If

he really is Changyang Xiang Tian, then we can't even be considered his opponents on any reasonable level if he can really beat that Saint, Ka Di Yun. Even if he didn't use his Saint Weapon, that's still enough proof of Changyang Xiang Tian's strength."

"Hmph, even if he really is Changyang Xiang Tian, he still dared to cross my path. I definitely won't let him have a peaceful time at this academy," spoke the first person who had been attacked by Jian Chen.

Luo Yun's white face started to sneer as he growled, "That's good, our Luo clan's young master had been asking around for news about Changyang Xiang Tian recently. If he hears about this, the young master will be happy. It's a pity that we didn't know where he was for the past few days; after searching for him, who knew that he would coincidentally just show up here and now?"

"Luo Yun, you go find the young master of your Luo Clan, Chen Feng and I will call out master Cheng. I doubt that Changyang Xiang Tian would be a match for master Cheng." Karl growled.

"Fine, we'll all do what we need to, but I suggest that we leave one person behind to continue observing Changyang Xiang Tian. Since the academy is so large, if Changyang Xiang Tian decides to hide, we'd never be able to find him," Luo Yun proposed.

Karl nodded his head before turning to his friend behind him, "Chen Feng, you stay here and observe him; I'll go find master Cheng."

“No problem!” Chen Feng promised without hesitation.

After the tasks had been split up, Chen Feng left to trail Jian Chen, while the two other students picked up the still unconscious one and left to do their own task.

.....

Within the library, Jian Chen sat down at a nearby table with two books and began to eagerly read.

Because the day was still early, the library was very empty and quiet. Aside from Jian Chen, there was only a middle aged female janitor nearby bustling around.

The woman was around 40 years old with an average appearance. Since she had no talent in cultivation, she was only at the 6th Saint Force layer, even though she was already 40. Even the weakest student in Kargath Academy was stronger than her.

The woman tilted her head up to look at the studying Jian Chen, and although she didn't know his name, Jian Chen had left a deep impression on her. Aside from the past 3 days, Jian Chen had always been the first student to enter the library, and was always studying for the whole day. There were even some days where he didn't eat lunch to continue reading. The janitor lady had already been serving the academy for many years, but Jian Chen had been the very first student she had ever seen that was so hardworking.

“What a hardworking child.” She had muttered to herself as she set out to do her tasks.

In a large room, a youth around 20 years old stood in the middle of the room with his eyes closed. His body was positioned in a very strange way, and like a log, he just stood there without moving a single inch.

“Dong dong dong!”

At that moment, a muffled knock was heard from the other side. At the same time, the youth with the closed eyes began to slowly open them and maintaining his strange posture, he stared at the door, “Who is it!” He called out.

“My lord, it’s me, Luo Yun.” Came the voice from outside.

“Enter!” He stated.

The door opened, allowing the 20 year old man to see one of the four students that was beaten up by Jian Chen—Luo Yun.

Luo Yun looked at the weirdly positioned youth without batting an eye, as if this wasn’t a strange occurrence. That was because this weird position was actually the Luo Clan’s method of cultivation.

In the Tian Yuan continent, there weren’t many training manuals recorded. Among the few of them were cultivation

meditation, and even less people had mastered a new position to cultivate in. The Luo Clan was definitely the latter and would put their bodies into a position unique to them in order to maximize their cultivation.

Luo Yun walked over to the other youth and stooped over in respect, “Master, for the past few days you’ve been searching for the whereabouts for Changyang Xiang Tian; I’ve just recently found and met him.” Although Luo Yun had a great standing within his clan, in front of this youth, even he would not dare to be arrogant. That was because this youth was Luo Jian, the first son of the clan leader of the Luo Clan. Along with the loving affection from the clan leader, he was deemed to be the future successor of the Luo Clan, and so Luo Yun had wanted to curry favor with him.

“You’ve found Changyang Xiang Tian!” Upon hearing that, Luo Jian’s eyes brightened up. Noticing Luo Yun’s pale face, Luo Jian’s eyes trailed down Luo Yun’s shirt to see the single footprint on his chest. With a haughty voice, Luo Jian said, “Seeing you in such a sorry state, it would appear that this Changyang Xiang Tian forced you to suffer quite a bit.”

Luo Yun’s face grew angry as he spoke, “What the lord says is correct; I just recently saw Changyang Xiang Tian and politely asked him to come visit my lord. But that Changyang Xiang Tian was completely outrageous and arrogant beyond belief. Not only that, but he is extremely violent, and most importantly, he did not care for you at all. He said...he said that the lord...the lord is...” Luo Yun started to trail off from hesitation.

Luo Jian scowled, “Don’t just stand there and stutter, what did

Changyang Xiang Tian say about me?!”

Luo Yun’s eyes flashed with an indignant color as he hesitated for one last time. With a spurt of courage, he cried, “Changyang Xiang Tian said that the master wasn’t worth a fart, and throwing a shoe at him would not be worth the effort!”

“What!” Luo Jian’s face grew just as angry as his emotions. Although the Luo Clan was not extremely influential within the Tian Yuan continent, within the Gesun Kingdom, they were one of the most prestigious clans with a 200 year old history. In the Gesun Kingdom, the amount of clans that could beat them in power could be counted on one’s hands. When it came to the successor of the Luo Clan, it can be said that Luo Jian was a noble of extremely high standards that even the crowned prince and princess of the kingdom could be considered to be on the same footing as he was. He didn’t think that within the Kargath Academy there would be an unknown freshman that would dare to be so egotistical. In his entire life, he had never seen someone so arrogant towards him.

Luo Jian’s stare grew cold towards Luo Yun, “He really said this?” The amount of anger was hardly being concealed by Luo Jian’s tone.

Seeing Luo Jian’s reaction, Luo Yun was secretly delighted, however, he quickly regained himself and said, “Yes my lord, what Luo Yun says is true. I wouldn’t dare lie to you; this Changyang Xiang Tian is truly too arrogant. He never saw you as anyone worthwhile, and even dared to spout out arrogant words. If we do not teach him a lesson, then I fear that the lord will lose face and be the target of ridicule within the academy.”

The more Luo Yun spoke, the angrier Luo Jian became. Standing to his feet, he growled, “Where is Changyang Xiang Tian? I want you to bring me to him, and if he truly doesn’t see me as someone worthwhile, than I shall see how strong he is.”

“Yes, of course! Please follow me my lord.” Luo Yun exited the room and brought the angry Luo Jian out of the room with him towards the library.

At the same time within one of the rooms in Kargath Academy, the respectful Karl brought another 20 year old youth out and towards the library.

As they passed through the sports field, a few seniors noted the group with looks of surprise, their comments could be heard from all directions.

“Ai...isn’t that person walking over there Lord Cheng? He hasn’t been seen around the academy for over a year already, what wind blew him here today?” A senior around the same age as him said in surprise.

“I’ve heard that a year ago, Lord Cheng had already reached the middle levels of Sainthood, so there’s no telling how strong he is now.”

“Lord Cheng is definitely the genius of Kargath Academy. He had condensed a Saint Weapon at the age of 19 and became a Saint. At the age of 20, he then reached the middle levels of Sainthood. One

year has passed already, so the Lord Cheng must have reached the upper levels of Sainthood with his talent in cultivation.”

“Definitely, Lord Cheng is the number one genius at cultivation at Kargath Academy. The headmaster had even said before that by the age of 23, Lord Cheng would definitely become a Great Saint.”

“Becoming a Great Saint by the age of 23, Lord Cheng is truly amazing. Many of the seniors in Kargath Academy are still at the rank of the 10th layer of Saint Force.”

As Karl walked down the path slowly, the seniors he saw the pair walk by continued to gossip. Lord Cheng was a very well known figure within Kargath Academy, not for his character, but for his cultivation rate that would astound anyone. Within the Tian Yuan continent, he could be considered to be a prodigy blessed by the heavens, and in Kargath Academy, he could be considered as standing at the peak of the strongest experts.

At this moment, Jian Chen was still pouring his interest into the book in his hands, completely unaware of the incoming trouble.

Chapter 28: Incoming Trouble (Two)

In a flash, Luo Yun and Luo Jian arrived at the library gates. A few feet away from the big gates, the one who had been trailing Jian Chen, Chen Feng, was leaning against a tree trunk. His eyes were constantly watching Jian Chen, who was still reading with relish, and had completely forgotten about his surroundings.

When Chen Feng saw Luo Yun with Luo Jian by his side, he immediately ran over to them. He bowed at Luo Jian, and with a charming face, said, “I didn’t think that I would meet the lord Luo Jian here. I am truly honored to see you.” Chen Feng was extremely respectful; although he too belonged to a clan, within the Gesun Kingdom, it was a very minor one. It was only when he was joined together with the children of bigger clans that he dared to collect money from those weaker than him. With this, he had a strong relationship with the Luo Clan that would definitely bring him many benefits. If he was lucky, then his own clan would be pulled up into the higher ranks with the help of Luo Jian; after all, Luo Jian was to be the clan’s successor.

Luo Jian felt proud as he looked at the respectful Chen Feng, and gave a small wave of his hand, “Don’t say anymore crap, is Changyang Xiang Tian in the library?”

Even though Luo Jian had absolutely no trace of politeness, Chen Feng’s look of respect didn’t waver in the least. With a smile, he replied, “He is, Changyang Xiang Tian is still in the library.”

A sneer gradually formed on Luo Jian’s face, as he got the answer he wanted, “That’s good. Go inside and call him out for me.” The

library had a rule that all fighting inside was prohibited, and even Luo Jian had to respect that rule, despite his family having a great amount of influence.

“Yes, of course, master Luo. I’ll have Changyang Xiang Tian out immediately,” Chen Feng said compliantly as he entered the library.

Inside the library, Jian Chen’s focus was still on his book; whenever he was in the library his guard was at its lowest. This was because within the library, he didn’t have to worry about others causing trouble or asking questions, so remaining on guard wasn’t needed.

While Jian Chen was lost in his own world, he had the sudden feeling of someone’s hand clasp down on his shoulder. Although he was still reluctant to part from his book, he looked to the youth standing next to me with a cold sneer on his face. From his memory, he remembered that this person was one of the four people who had tried to extort protection money from him. Chen Feng stood by his side with a look of great joy at Jian Chen’s impending doom. With a strange tone, he said, “Changyang Xiang Tian, I didn’t think we’d see each other again so soon.”

“It’s you!” Jian Chen scowled. Without giving him face, he spoke, “If you’re still looking for protection money, then you can scram.”

Chen Feng’s eyes flashed with anger, but he didn’t dare make a move towards Jian Chen. The library was strict on their rules, and he was sure that he wasn’t a match for Jian Chen.

Chen Feng stuck his chest out as he glared maliciously at Jian Chen, and coldly said, "Changyang Xiang Tian, although I am no match for you, Kargath Academy is not someplace you can rampage around. If you really have the guts, then follow me outside. Otherwise, prepare to stay in this library for the rest of your life." After dropping these words, Chen Feng directly walked out of the library. However, the words he had said had already attracted the attentions of all the students within the library. Immediately, many people began to shift their attentions to Jian Chen with complicated expressions of envy, respect, and jealousy.

Jian Chen slowly closed the book with a crossed expression. From Chen Feng's words it would seem that he got reinforcements to help him.

Jian Chen's eyes twinkled as he put the book back on the bookshelf and then walked towards the entrance of the library deep in thought. Although he knew people were waiting outside for him, if he didn't go out then people would think he was afraid of them. If Jian Chen wanted to continue reading books in the library in peace, then he would need to reveal his own strength and inspire fear into the others. Otherwise more and more people would come and find trouble with him; there would be no point in coming to the library in that case.

Although he knew that the people outside were definitely not weak, it was possible that they were experts at the same level as Ka Di Yun. However, Jian Chen still did not show any trace of fear. He was confident that if he faced a Saint at his current level, even if he didn't win, he would not easily lose. After all, no matter if it were battle experience or techniques, Jian Chen far surpassed anyone

else at the academy. Moreover, he was a person who had experienced countless life or death situations.

As soon as Jian Chen left the library, he looked up to find three youths standing outside the door. They didn't look very different from each other, as they all wore the school uniform. Two of the people were part of the extortion group Jian Chen had met before, and the third one was looking at Jian Chen with an expression full of arrogance. It was obvious that he had been a helper summoned by the other two.

Seeing Jian Chen actually walk out of the library, Luo Yun began to laugh evilly. He whispered to Luo Jian standing next to him, "My lord, he is Changyang Xiang Tian."

Luo Jian's arrogant eyes sized up Jian Chen with an expression of disdain, and he coldly said, "Brat, are you Changyang Xiang Tian?"

Jian Chen gave Luo Jian a level look. Luo Jian looked to be around 22-23 years old, and he had an extremely handsome appearance. However, his expression did not hide any of his arrogance.

"And who are you?" Jian Chen indifferently replied to Luo Jian, his tone ice-cold.

Luo Yun, who was standing next to Luo Jian, shouted, "How dare you, Changyang Xiang Tian. What kind of status do you have to dare to use that kind of tone to talk to my clan's lord? Do you want to get kicked out of this academy?"

“Changyang Xiang Tian, hurry up and apologize to my lord. Otherwise, don’t think you can stay at Kargath Academy for much long.” Chen Feng did not miss the chance to suck up to Luo Jian, and yelled back at Jian Chen in an indignant tone.

Hearing these two’s words, the Luo Clan’s lord, Luo Jian, became even haughtier, and his face was full of self-pride.

Jian Chen’s unchanged face gradually showed a hint of a sneer, and he looked at the three people with disdain, and said, “Based on your words, are you saying that the headmaster of Kargath Academy will listen to you three? Or perhaps, are you saying that Kargath Academy belongs to your clan, whoever you want to leave must leave? The three of you are really too audacious, to even dare to look down on the headmaster.”

Hearing Jian Chen’s words, the expression of both Luo Yun and Chen Feng suddenly paled. Even Luo Jia, who had a huge clan backing him up, he could not stop his expression from turning unsightly, as he glared poisonously at Jian Chen. Although he had the most influence backing him up out of the three since Luo Jian was the successor of Gesun Kingdom’s powerful Luo clan, he did not dare to show any disrespect towards the headmaster of Kargath Academy. If Jian Chen’s words spread to the headmaster’s ears, then they would be heavily punished. In the worst case scenario, they could be directly expelled. Even if Luo Jian had a powerful background, even if his father was Luo clan’s clan leader, even if he was Luo clan’s successor, there was no way he could get away of such a consequence completely cop-free. His Luo clan would definitely not be willing to offend Kargath Academy’s headmaster for his sake.

Luo Jian's face turned gloomy, and he glared at Jian Chen, "Changyang Xiang Tian, you really are quite arrogant. I just wonder if you have the qualifications to be so arrogant."

Jian Chen laughed in disdain, and coldly replied, "Stop wasting your breath, just say why you've come looking for me."

Luo Jian let out a smile filled with a murderous intent. "The reason I came is very simple. I just wanted to see how someone like you defeated a recently advanced Saint, even if Ka Di Yun didn't use a Saint Weapon. Changyang Xiang Tian, are you really that amazing?" Luo Jian cracked the knuckles on both his hands before clenching them both. The loud snapping sound from his knuckles was clear to hear as a strong amount of energy started to emit from his body onto Jian Chen's own.

At the same time, the people who were reading their books inside the library all closed their books. Everyone start to chatter excitedly as they watched the events that were happening with Jian Chen with pleasure.

Regarding the Qi that Luo Jian was emitting, Jian Chen was not affected at all and stood straight like a towering mountain. Luo Jian's strength was clear to Jian Chen and was not at all weaker to Ka Di Yun; however, it was not strong enough for him to fear, instead, his fighting spirit rose.

As soon as they saw the two opponents were about to start fighting, the people in front of the library began to retreat, afraid

that they would be affected by any shockwaves.

“How could we miss such an interesting battle?” Just before the two people were about to begin fighting, a voice suddenly rang out from the back, and a few youths wearing the school uniform walked out from behind.

There were a total of five people that had just arrived. Among them, one of the people was another person from the extortion group that Jian Chen had encountered earlier. Jian Chen did not recognize the other four, but anyone could tell with a single glance that they were from major clans. Their brows seemed to hold an aloof and remote expressions.

However, what drew Jian Chen’s attention was the youth standing in the center of the group of five. It was obvious from his eyes that he was the core figure the other four revolved around. He didn’t seem that old; based on his appearance, he was probably around 20 years old.

“Ya....everyone, look; isn’t the person in the middle master Cheng, who’s been missing the past year? I didn’t imagine that he would also come.”

“That’s right, it really is master Cheng, our Kargath Academy’s genius. It’s said that a year ago, his power had already reached the middle Saint levels. With his talent in cultivation, I had thought during the past year, master Cheng had already broken through to the Great Saint level and graduated. I didn’t think that he was actually still on the academy grounds.”

“I wonder what master Cheng’s current power is, and whether or not he has reached Great Saint level yet....”

“The three people next to master Cheng seem to be powerful Saints who have already condensed their Saint Weapons. To think that the elites that are normally rare to see would all appear here....”

Seeing the students standing there, all of the students started to shout in alarm, rapidly increasing the noise in the environment.

“Cheng Mingxiang, you’ve come at just the right time. If you were the slightest bit late, you would’ve missed this interesting show.” Seeing the youth amongst the crowd, Luo Jian immediately stopped his imposing manner, and laughed as he greeted the youth. He then nodded at the other three students following behind.

Chapter 29: Another Encounter With Tie Ta

Cheng Mingxiang started to smile, “How could I miss a match like this?” He stared down at Jian Chen with disdain before saying, “Do you think that’s Changyang Xiang Tian?”

“Correct, Lord Cheng. He’s definitely that Changyang Xiang Tian who hurt our companions.” Luo Jian said as he stood behind Karl.

Cheng Mingxiang nodded his head and said slowly, “Changyang Xiang Tian, you’re definitely not bad, to even hurt my comrades!” His voice was getting darker with each word.

Jian Chen’s mind already understood that these were a group of unreasonable children with rich parents, so arguing with them was of no use; they would only listen to force. Thus, Jian Chen didn’t bother to say any trash talk; instead, he said coldly, “So what if we fight; if you’re not happy with this, make the first move instead of spouting so much bullsh*t.”

Hearing Jian Chen’s words, Cheng Mingxiang’s face gradually turned ashen, “Good. Good, good. Then it’s time to see how strong you really are.” With that, his body started to glow so brightly that the light extended 10 meters away to where Jian Chen was. Dashing forward, he launched his fist towards Jian Chen’s nose; against a person who wasn’t even a Saint, he wouldn’t even bother using his Saint Weapon.

Even Jian Chen knew that Cheng Mingxiang’s strength far surpassed Ka Di Yun; the difference in Saint Force was far too great

with his own as well. Therefore, Jian Chen absolutely could not afford to take that fist. Just when Cheng Mingxiang's fist was about to connect with Jian Chen's head, his head suddenly blurred and dodged the fist. At the same time, Jian Chen's two fists went up to grab at the incoming arm from Cheng Mingxiang. Assuming a horse stance, he stiffened his back and pulled at the arm with both of his own.

Originally, when Cheng Mingxiang was attacking, his center of gravity had been leaning forwards. Now, Jian Chen had pulled him further, he momentarily lost control over his body, and he began to fall forwards. However, Cheng Mingxiang was quick to respond. Stamping on the ground with his foot, he exerted all his force to try to prevent any further pull from Jian Chen. As he did that, however, Jian Chen suddenly let go of Cheng Mingxiang's arm and immediately pummeled at his stomach with a barrage of blows that were as fast as lightning.

Since Cheng Mingxiang's center of gravity was now focused towards the back, when Jian Chen had punched him with all his might, his legs couldn't help but stumbled backwards, as if he was struggling to avoid falling.

After falling back 10 steps, Cheng Mingxiang finally regained his bearings but his face had long since turned into the same color as a pig's liver. With a dark and ominous expression, he glared at Jian Chen maliciously. Because of his majestic body, he was considered to have one of the strongest in the academy, so how could he not feel furious at this? If the academy found out his body was actually hit and injured like this, then he would no longer have face within the academy and become a laughing stock.

After thinking about the consequences of this, he glared at Jian Chen with a stare that could kill since this was an utter disgrace to him.

Already, the entire audience had become absolutely quiet. Luo Jian's own face had become sluggish as he stared at Jian Chen with a surprised look. This was far beyond his wildest imagination, and not just his own, but everyone else watching. Cheng Mingxiang was a talented genius when it came to cultivation, and even Saints couldn't match him in a hand to hand fight. To have Jian Chen make him suffer such a loss and put him in such an ugly state was very surprising.

Glaring once more at Jian Chen, Cheng Mingxiang's arm started to release a silver type of Qi before forming a two handed sword. He snarled, saying, "Changyang Xiang Tian, I will definitely cripple you today!" With that declaration, he surged towards Jian Chen with the silver sword in tow.

"Stop!"

Right as Cheng Mingxiang had started to move, another deep voice had shouted over the crowd and noise. Immediately, everyone saw a rather robust and suntanned youth slowly walk forward.

When Jian Chen saw the sturdy youth come forward, his eyes widened in shock. It was because this person was also a participant in the Freshmen Competition and the person with the heavenly blessed strength—Tie Ta.

The moment when Luo Jian and Cheng Mingxiang's men looked at Tie Ta, their faces started to change, an abject fear taking hold of them.

Luo Yun didn't recognize Tie Ta at all, so with an arrogant cry towards Tie Ta, he demanded, "Who are you? This is business concerning Lord Luo and Lord Cheng so don't interfere, otherwise you'll regret it..."

"Shut your mouth!" Not even waiting for Luo Yun to finish talking, Luo Jian cut into Luo Yun's speech. Not even paying attention to Luo Yun's look of surprise, Luo Jian's face contained a smile towards Tie Ta as he cupped his hands in salute. "So it was brother Tie Ta after all, this one wonders what brother Tie Ta is doing here."

Tie Ta looked at him with an strange look before speaking in a low voice, "Who are you? I don't recognize you at all." Not understanding why Luo Jian's face became so unsightly, Tie Ta directly walked towards Jian Chen and lifted his hand to clasp onto Jian Chen's shoulder. "Changyang Xiang Tian, I didn't think I'd meet you here of all places! It has been so many days since I last saw you!" He boomed.

Jian Chen also gave a faint laugh, "Tie Ta, let us put off this chat for now and let me take care of a few troublesome matters first."

Listening to what Jian Chen said, Tie Ta's head whipped over to Cheng Mingxiang and Luo Jian's group and slowly stared at them

before pointing a finger, “Changyang Xiang Tian, could it be that they’re trying to bully you?”

“It could be said that way, yes, “ Jian Chen indifferently said as he crossed his arms in front of his chest.

As soon as he heard this, Tie Ta immediately rolled up his sleeves. He fiercely looked at the opposing group of people and loudly declared, “Changyang Xiang Tian is my brother. Anyone who bullies him is bullying me as well. Whoever wants fight, come out. Even though my power might not be that strong, I, Tie Ta, am not afraid of you guys.”

Hearing Tie Ta’s words, Jian Chen hesitated for a second. He looked at Tie Ta in confusion, not quite understand when he had become Tie Ta’s brother.

Cheng Mingxiang and Luo Jian’s expressions changed. They glanced at each other with a serious look. It was obvious that they were somewhat afraid of Tie Ta. Even though Tie Ta’s actual power wasn’t very strong, and they could easily defeat him in a fight, Tie Ta had a formidable supporter that even the two of them were afraid to encounter. This was why they had never dared to touch Tie Ta at Kargath Academy.

Neither of the people spoke, and Karl and Luo Yun had already realized from Luo Jian’s attitude that Tie Ta’s identity was not normal. Thus, they made the smart decision off not making a sound. At that moment, the atmosphere had become slightly strange.

After quietly pondering for a while, Luo Jian was the first to break the silence, “Brother Tie Ta, this is a problem between me and Changyang Xiang Tian; I hope you don’t meddle with our affairs.” Luo Jian’s tone was extremely polite. He clearly understood that although Tie Ta was a commoner, his current status was without a doubt not any less powerful than his. It was even higher than his by a bit. Even if he was the successor to the Luo clan, his status was at most equivalent to Tie Ta’s

Luo Jian’s words made all the spectators shocked. There were quite a few seniors amongst them that recognized both Luo Jian and Cheng Mingxiang, and they knew that although their individual statuses weren’t that high, they both had great clans backing them up. And yet, at the moment, the two of them had suddenly acted polite to Tie Ta. This made the library’s spectators curious about Tie Ta’s identity. They couldn’t imagine what kind of background Tie Ta must have to have been so domineering, and to make the insufferably arrogant Luo Jian and Cheng Mingxiang so cautious and fearful.

Unfortunately, Tie Ta had no intention to appreciate the offer. Without giving face, he said, “I already said earlier, Changyang Xiang Tian is my brother. His problems are my problems. If anyone has complaints, then everyone should direct them towards me.”

Luo Jian’s expression changed colors, and his eyes showed a serious expression. In regards to Tie Ta, he really didn’t dare to offend him too much.

At that moment, Cheng Mingxiang snorted, and he glared at Tie Ta. In a heavy voice, he said, “Tie Ta, do you really want to butt into this business?” Having suffered from Jian Chen’s hands, Cheng Mingxiang had already formed a hatred for Jian Chen in his heart. For a freshman that hadn’t even reached Saint level yet to have put him in such a difficult situation was definitely a humiliation to his genius. If he didn’t clean this situation up now, then he wouldn’t be able to enjoy his time at the academy in the future.

“That’s right, I want to get involved.” Tie Ta’s yelled back, his expression harsh. Even though he clearly knew how powerful Cheng Mingxiang was, Tie Ta still did not show any sign of fear.

Jian Chen pulled at Tie Ta and said, “Tie Ta, this is something between me and him. You shouldn’t come **; otherwise, you’ll just get caught up in more trouble.”

Tie Ta’s eyes flashed with anger, and he suddenly turned towards Jian Chen, frowning, “Changyang Xiang Tian, what kind of words are those? Do you think that I, Tie Ta, is someone who would be scared of these things? Do you not think of me as your friend?”

Hearing this, Jian Chen could not help but feel puzzled. When had he and Tie Ta gotten so close? They barely even met each other; the only time they had really interacted was during the freshmen martial arts competition.

“Hmph, Tie Ta. since you want to suffer so badly, then don’t blame me. Don’t think that just because you’re the headmaster’s apprentice, I won’t dare to attack you. Let me witness exactly how

great the headmaster's apprentice's abilities are.”

Hearing Cheng Ming Yan's words, Jian Chen was internally shocked. He hadn't imagined that Tie Ta had actually become the headmaster's apprentice. If this news was spread throughout the academy, it would spur a great craze.

At this moment, Cheng Ming Yang had already appeared in front of Tie Ta, and directly struck his fist against Tie Ta's chest. Because Tie Ta had a special status, Cheng Mingxiang did not dare to actually hurt Tie Ta, and his fist only used fifth layer force. In his opinion, even if he only used the strength of the fifth layer, it still wasn't an attack that a Saint could receive, let alone someone below that, like Tie Ta.

Faced with Cheng Mingxiang's attack, Tie Ta did not dare to be careless, and his face showed matchless concentration. He roared, then with his right arm seemingly as sturdy as steel, he fearlessly threw a fist at Cheng Mingxiang to meet force with force.

Chapter 30: Vice Headmaster Bai En

“Peng!”

Tie Ta and Cheng Mingxiang’s fists collided into each other, creating a loud boom. A fierce shockwave exploded as the two fighters flew backwards.

Feeling Tie Ta’s power within his fist, Cheng Mingxiang’s face faltered slightly, becoming a look of astonishment. Although Tie Ta’s strength wasn’t at the level of a Saint, the energy in Tie Ta’s fist was something that even a Saint couldn’t release. If it weren’t for the fact that Cheng Mingxiang’s strength was stronger than Tie Ta by so much, then he would have suffered a huge loss from that confrontation. But even though he had made it out relatively unharmed, Cheng Mingxiang’s shoulder had started to ache with pain.

Stretching his right shoulder a bit, Cheng Mingxiang looked at Tie Ta in a new light, “The headmaster’s apprentice is truly marvelous. The power inside your fist is likewise frightening, and completely dominated my own fist. If you were a Saint, then your fist would have forced me into taking a huge amount of damage.”

Tie Ta’s godly strength was an inconceivable amount of power that no one else could compare themselves too. His strength was so strong that even Jian Chen gasped in astonishment. Against such a strong opponent, Tie Ta didn’t suffer a single trace of damage.

Tie Ta boomed with a happy laughter, and said, “Try again, I’ll

return the favor immediately.” He swung his fists in a ready position as he faced Cheng Mingxiang.

Looking at Tie Ta, Cheng Mingxiang’s eyebrows knitted together as he looked the paling Luo Jian. “I’ll stall Tie Ta, you go teach Changyang Xiang Tian a lesson.” Without a pause, he charged at Tie Ta and the two started to fight once more.

Thanks to Tie Ta’s special status within the academy, Cheng Mingxiang didn’t dare to use his Saint Weapon, and instead used his twin fists to fight him. But after a few rounds of close combat exchanges, Cheng Mingxiang began to grumble to himself about how absurd Tie Ta’s strength was. Not only that, but Tie Ta’s body was like steel, so combined with his enormous strength that complimented his Saint Force, there was no way Cheng Mingxiang would be able to defeat Tie Ta without using his Saint Weapon, despite being stronger than Tie Ta. He was using the entirety of his strength, but could only accomplish very little, such as pushing Tie Ta backwards. In addition, he still didn’t dare to fight head-on with Tie Ta for an extended period of time.

The students all watched Cheng Mingxiang fight against the incredibly strong Tie Ta with wide eyes, as they took pleasure in watching the fight. Although many of the students here had never seen Tie Ta before, they all knew him by name. After all, he was the 2nd place winner of the Freshmen Competition, and thus his name had spread throughout the academy. Still, many people were having a hard time believing that someone who wasn’t even a Saint yet could fight toe to toe with Kargath Academy’s talented genius, Cheng Mingxiang.

The news that the Freshmen Ruler of the Freshmen Competition, Changyang Xiang Tian, was able to beat the Saint Ka Di Yun had already shaken the academy. And at the moment, they were completely incapable of accepting the fact that Tie Ta, who wasn't even a Saint yet, could fight one of the strongest Saints, Cheng Mingxiang, to a standstill.

While Cheng Mingxiang fought fiercely against Tie Ta, Luo Jian didn't idle about. Rushing towards Jian Chen, Luo Jian didn't bother to use his Saint Weapon since he was a middle rank Saint, so it would be a waste for him to use it against someone who wasn't even a Saint yet.

Luo Jian quickly ran towards Jian Chen before he could even prepare himself, and used his right leg to kick him. The kick traveled at such a fast speed towards Jian Chen's stomach, that he could feel a cold gale. The kick was both fast and so fierce, and had no hesitation at all. Since it was Jian Chen, Luo Jian would never consider holding back.

Despite Luo Jian's kick being extraordinarily fast, he underestimated Jian Chen's reaction and evasion speed. Just as Luo Jian was about to kick Jian Chen, he narrowly dodged to the side, and so Luo Jian's leg only clipped his clothes. Although it had looked like Jian Chen had only barely dodged the kick by the skin of his teeth, there was not a single trace of panic on Jian Chen's face, instead, there was only a casual look of relaxation.

Seeing his attack miss, Luo Jian's eyes reflected a shocked expression. However the next instant, the cyan Saint Force immediately appeared from within his body. As soon as it

materialized, mysterious breezes began to surround his body.

Suddenly feeling the fierce gale from Luo Jian's kick, Jian Chen's eyes revealed a look of amazement. According to the books he had read earlier this type of attack was an example of a Saint with a wind attribute.

A Saint with an attribute was generally stronger than a Saint without one by a large margin; not only that, but those with an attribute would generally have that added to their strength. Those with a wind attribute would definitely have their speed increased multiple times, and in the higher ranks, there would be very little that could compete with a wind attribute Saint in speed.

A cyan colored Saint Force started to flow out from Luo Jian as his right hand was completely wrapped up in it. With another quick dash towards Jian Chen to attack him, this fist was even faster than before and even left behind a phantom image; the naked eye would not be able to see the fist at all.

His face growing grave, Jian Chen leaned his head to the side and dodged Luo Jian's fist once more. His right leg immediately lashed out towards Luo Jian that was no slower than the fist earlier.

Luo Jian's eyes flashed dangerously as he realized Jian Chen's speed was no slower than his own. Because of the high speed kick, Luo Jian had no time to dodge it. Without any other choice, the wind attributed Saint Force started to concentrate within his left hand as he brought it smashing down onto Jian Chen's incoming leg.

Luo Jian wind attributed Saint Forced infused fist fiercely collided with Jian Chen's leg, causing the weaker Jian Chen to be sent flying back.

Jian Chen's body was thrown back with great speed, but both of his legs dragged against the ground, using the friction to slow his momentum. Leaving behind two exceptionally clear drag marks on the ground, Jian Chen estimated that he had been forced to retreat 10 meters back.

Luo Jian cracked his knuckles and stared at the rarely seen look of solemnity on Jian Chen's face. In that short confrontation, Luo Jian realized that he could not view Jian Chen as a regular person. Although his strength wasn't that of a Saint, his fighting capabilities were.

Luo Jian's eyes started to flash with a small amount of hesitation before he finally came to a conclusion . In this situation, if he wanted to defeat Jian Chen as soon as possible, then he would have to use his Saint Weapon. Although this would be hard to avoid being subjected to everyone's laughter, but he knew that if he didn't use his Saint Weapon he would not be able to defeat Jian Chen in a short amount of time. If it took a long time for someone like him to deal with a freshmen that wasn't a Saint, then it would create an even bigger impact on his reputation.

When he thought about how he, as a middle Saint level, was unable to defeat a person who had not yet reached Saint level, and even had to use a Saint Weapon to do so; Luo Jian could not help but feel vexed. It made his hatred for Jian Chen develop even

deeper. Today's battle, no matter who the victor was, he would still lose a lot of face. On the other hand, Jian Chen would most likely have his reputation increased by today's battle, and his reputation would once again spread throughout the entire Kargath Academy.

Luo Jian's eyes shone with a cold light that could make one shudder, and nobody dared to look at him straight in the eyes. Accompanying his palm, a powerful cyan Saint Force began to frantically rush forth, gradually condensing into a cyan greatsword. It was about 5 feet long and 3 inches wide, and the entire sword was covered in a thick layer of cyan light. That sharp blade emitted blinding light rays from the reflection of the sun light, and the mere sight of it made people quake in fear.

Jian Chen sensed that the cyan greatsword in Luo Jian's hand was emitting a powerful Saint Force, and his face gradually became more grave. Using a Saint Weapon, Luo Jian's power had multiplied, much higher than it previously was. If Luo Jian didn't use his Saint Weapon, then Jian Chen could still deal with the fight, albeit with some difficulty. However, once the Saint Weapon was drawn, Jian Chen could only cautiously take up the challenge. Based on his previous world's experience from the countless life or death battles he had gained, perhaps he would be able to hold off the attack. However, it would be extremely difficult to win.

With his Saint Weapon in hand, Luo Jian's imposing manner suddenly grew stronger. His eyes intensely glared at Jian Chen, as he said, "Changyang Xiang Tian, today I will definitely dispose of you." Luo Jian raised the cyan greatsword high in the air, and its cyan glow sharply increased in brightness, as its strong Saint Force managed to jolt even the few students observing the fight from

within the library.

“Ah!” Luo Jian roared, as he quickly slashed the cyan greatsword down from above his head, leaving a gorgeous cyan trajectory behind it as it moved. The only thing that could be seen was the lightly fast cyan Sword Qi that shot out and headed straight towards Jian Chen.

Sensing that the Sword Qi was extremely powerful, Jian Chen’s face immediately showed matchless concentration; that was definitely not something the current him could withstand. The cyan Sword Qi was so incomprehensibly fast that Jian Chen didn’t have the time to contemplate his actions. He gathered all his power into his legs, to prepare to dodge with all his might. Suddenly, a white figure shot out as fast as lightning at a pace even faster than the cyan Sword Qi, and stood in front of Jian Chen as a shield.

When the cyan Sword Qi shot towards the white figure, it unexpectedly disappeared silently without a trace. Not even a single spark could be seen.

The white figure that approached was a middle-aged man around 40 years old. The man wore a white changpao, and his scholarly face was extremely solemn. His pair of unordinary eyes were completely filled with anger.

When Luo Jian saw the white clad middle-aged man, his expression drastically changed, and his face paled. He made the cyan greatsword in his hand disappear in an instant, and immediately bowed to greet the man respectfully, “Vice headmaster!” These mere two words betrayed the traces of fear

hidden in Luo Jian's voice.

Hearing Luo Jian address this middle-aged male like so, Jian Chen paused. His gaze rested on the male's back for a bit, as his heart realized the man's identity. To his relief, it was the one who held the position second only the headmaster's: Kargath Academy's one and only vice headmaster, Bai En.

Chapter 31: A Breakthrough–Peak Of The 10th Layer

Bai En's terrifying gaze lingered on Luo Jian for some time before snorting loudly. His gaze then shifted over to the still fighting Tie Ta and Cheng Mingxiang before he said in a low voice, "Are you still not stopping?" His voice boomed like thunder, as the two people were struck by the loud echo, causing them to temporarily go deaf.

Tie Ta and Cheng Mingxiang immediately paused; the moment they saw the vice headmaster. Tie Ta suddenly smiled with no small amount of excitement. Cheng Mingxiang's face, on the other hand, changed into one full of fear.

Tie Ta walked up to Jian Chen and slowly looked him over carefully. In a low voice, he whispered, "Changyang Xiang Tian, are you hurt?"

Jian Chen only shook his head before giving him a meaningful stare to stay silent.

Tie Ta only laughed in response; although he had the heart and body of a tiger, he could understand the meaning behind Jian Chen's actions. Without saying anything more, he stood behind Jian Chen and remained silent as per his wishes. However, Tie Ta still continued to look carefully at Cheng Mingxiang and winked at him as if to provoke him. Clearly the fight he had just now wasn't enough for him to fully enjoy it.

The vice headmaster, Bai En, shot a strong glance towards Luo Jian and Cheng Mingxiang, “Luo Jian, you’ve already broken the rules of the academy; you know your crime.”

Luo Jian lifted his head in aggravation, “Vice headmaster, giving pointers amongst students is very common. Changyang Xiang Tian and I were only doing that and not anything else. As for me breaking the academy rules, your student inquires of you, which rule did I break?”.

“Hmph, you still dare to quibble like this!” Bai En growled, “Luo Jian, what is the 66th rule for Kargath Academy?”

Luo Jian tilted his head in thought before answering, “The 66th rule is that fighting in the library and the destruction of the library is prohibited.”

Bai En continued to stare at him, “If it weren’t for me blocking your Sword Qi, then I’m afraid that the library gates would have been broken by you. Luo Jian, do you recognize your crime now?”

Luo Jian’s face suddenly dropped after hearing that; what the vice headmaster said was correct. If the Sword Qi he had shot out was dodged by Jian Chen and continued onwards, then the library gates would have been broken beyond repair and might have also hurt the audience that was watching.

Whether or not Jian Chen would have been able to dodge the Sword Qi, Luo Jian didn’t dare to say. If he did voice out this scenario, then he was afraid of another charge being dropped on

him. Because the school had clear cut rules, it said that students were free to give each other pointers, but if they were to intentionally hurt someone, then they would be severely punished. Besides, he had deliberately used his Sword Qi to injure someone who wasn't even a Saint yet, so the situation was even more complex. Although he had expected this type of end result, he had thought that he would be able to get away with more. But since the vice headmaster was here, the situation had developed into a way he hadn't expected. Right now, in Luo Jian's heart, he could only hope that the vice headmaster wouldn't give them too harsh of a punishment.

“Luo Jian has recognized his crimes.” He said in direction of the vice headmaster, he didn't dare be arrogant.

Bai En snorted once more to himself before saying, “Luo Jian, you have already violated one of the rules of the academy, I therefore sentence you to the Contemplation Hall to reflect on your crimes for a month, do you have any objections?”

The Contemplation Hall was where students who had violated the rules of the academy would go to. Although it had the word “Hall” in its name, it was nothing more than a small stone house. It was smaller than a dorm room and could hold only one person within it. Once the door was closed, the person inside would be placed inside a pitch dark room. No matter how strong the outside light was, it would not be able to penetrate through the stone house. Aside from seeing nothing, no sound would be able to get across either, even if the strongest hail storm was happening, the person inside would not notice a thing.

“Luo Jian has understood with all of his heart, and has no objection.” He said with a bow of his head. His tone was respectful, and no one would have thought that while he looked repentant, the poison in his heart was growing with his grievances against Jian Chen.

The vice headmaster nodded his head, a jollier expression was returning to his face, “You may leave then and look for the Contemplation Hall yourself to reflect.” Afterwards, Bai En turned his eyes towards the anxious Cheng Mingxiang. “Cheng Mingxiang, even with your strength, to think that you were bullying a freshmen, our Kargath Academy has lost face because of you.”

Cheng Mingxiang expressionlessly said, “Vice headmaster’s teachings are correct. Ming Xiang understands his wrongs, and will not repeat them ever again.”

“Cheng Mingxiang, I hope that you bear in mind, this is Kargath Academy, not your Hua Yun Sect. If you want to continue living within Kargath Academy, then you must learn to comply with the rules. Otherwise, even if you are the young lord of the Hua Yun Sect, you will be punished accordingly. I hope that there won’t be a repeat of this event. You may leave.” When it came to Cheng Mingxiang, the vice headmaster was somewhat afraid of the consequences and didn’t dare to punish him anymore.

Cheng Mingxiang did not utter another word, as he and his followers quietly left the place.

Seeing the worst come to past, Luo Yun, Chen Feng, and Karl did

not continue to stick around, and left dejectedly.

Once the crowds had dispersed, the vice headmaster's gaze rested on Jian Chen, and he smiled, "You must be Changyang Xiang Tian."

Jian Chen nodded, and in a tone that was neither overbearing nor servile, he replied, "Yes, I am him."

The vice headmaster properly sized Changyang Xiang Tian up, and his previously solemn expression disappeared. He smiled and said, "Having not yet achieved Saint level and yet still managed to force Luo Jian to summon his Saint Weapon; Changyang Xiang Tian, you're quite good."

"Vice headmaster, you're exaggerating too much. It was only due to a moment of fortune," Jian Chen plainly replied, his expression completely devoid of any arrogance.

As his eyes gazed at Jian Chen's collected expression, vice headmaster, Bai En, nodded his head in praise, "Changyang Xiang Tien, you need to properly cultivate, and aim to become Saint level as soon as possible."

"Many thanks to the vice headmaster's concern. I will definitely continue to cultivate diligently," Jian Chen smiled.

Afterwards, Bei En's gaze returned to Tie Ta, "Tie Ta, although now that you're the headmaster's apprentice, your identity has

changed, you must still remember that only by improving your own power by yourself will you really earn people's respect. Only that way can you support yourself in Tian Yuan continent. Do you understand?"

Tie Ta cleverly nodded, and replied in a muffled voice, "Tie Ta understands."

"Yes!" The vice headmaster nodded, and continued, "Although you are at the peak of talents, and your future is boundless, you cannot, under any circumstance, become confident. You must always face everything in a calm and collected manner. You also cannot learn anything from those aristocratic families, since you are now the headmaster's apprentice. Your future training will be more arduous, and you will have to spend more time on cultivation. You definitely cannot waste the headmaster's painstaking efforts."

At these words, Tie Ta patted his chest and promised Bai En, "Vice headmaster, don't worry. I, Tie Ta, will definitely cultivate diligently. I will absolutely not make master lose face."

The vice headmaster smiled and nodded, leaving the room. Once he had left, Jian Chen and Tie Ta chatted for a bit longer, and after exchanging goodbyes, Jian Chen returned to the library to read his books.

When Jian Chen returned to the library, the students originally watching from within the library all disappeared without a trace. Not long after, the two moving news had travelled around the entire Kargath Academy at an unbelievable rate.

“The freshmen martial arts competition’s second place, Tie Ta, actually became Kargath Academy’s headmaster’s apprentice. Moreover, he had an intense fight with the cultivation genius, Cheng Mingxiang.”

“The freshmen martial arts competition’s Freshman Ruler, Changyang Xiang Tian, used only his bare hands, and managed to force a middle Saint level, Luo Jian, to use his Saint Weapon in a battle. Finally, Luo Jian disturbed vice headmaster Bai En, and ended up being confined in the Contemplation Hall for a whole month as punishment.”

These two pieces of news had already been spread to every corner of Kargath Academy in the short span of two hours time, shocking both teachers and students alike. At the same time, Tie Ta had become the most well-known celebrity in Kargath Academy. He was originally just a commoner, but now that his identity had gone through world-shaking changes, nobles that had originally looked down on him because of his background now looked at him with new expressions. From that day on, Tie Ta had also become the child that people with varying amounts of influence tried to rope into their families.

Although Jian Chen’s name had also spread around the academy, it had already completely been overtaken by the extreme radiance from Tie Ta’s news. However, Jian Chen paid no mind to it.

Despite this, there were still many female students that looked at Jian Chen with sparkling gazes of infatuation. Jian Chen’s appearance was extremely handsome, and was definitely not any

lower than any other male in Kargath Academy. Combined with his unique grandeur and his powerful abilities, he was definitely a lady killer. Thus, in Kargath Academy, Jian Chen had become the white prince in many of the girls' hearts.

Ever since the battle at the library, Jian Chen's days had been anything but calm. Every time he entered the school grounds, he would be swarmed by countless male students trying to come up with various excuses to fight him. Even when he went to the library to read, he would still be harassed by quite a few people, making it so that he couldn't even read peacefully. Up until now, Jian Chen had also acted and disciplined a few people because they had been condescending children from rich backgrounds. However, perhaps because Jian Chen was too forgiving in his discipline, his attempts had close to no deterring effects, and were pretty much completely overlooked. Finally, the helpless Jian Chen was forced to bring the books back to his dorm to read under the vice headmaster's permission. Aside from reading, Jian Chen spent almost all his spare time cultivating.

The time flew by, and in the blink of an eye, three months had already passed. It was morning, and the sun had just risen. Sitting cross-legged on his bed, Jian Chen gradually opened his eyes, and in that instant, a light flashed within his eyes.

Jian Chen lowered his head and slowly spread out his palms. He saw that his hands were empty, as the Class 3 Monster Core he had been holding had already completely disappeared.

Sensing the strong Saint Force flowing through his body in a manner similar to great rivers, Jian Chen finally smiled—he had

broken through to the 10th Saint Force layer.

After three months of cultivation, he had already broken through to the 10th layer. He was only one step away from reaching the Saint level, and could break through at any moment. The Class 3 Monster Core from the freshmen martial arts competition had already been completely used up by him. Although it was said that Class 3 Monster Core contained large amounts of energy, the amount that Jian Chen needed for his cultivation was far greater than that of an average person's. After all, the abilities that he achieved through his cultivation were extremely terrifying. Thus, a Class 3 Monster Core that could allow an average person at the 8th layer reach a middle Saint level, could only help Jian Chen reach the peak of the 10th layer.

Chapter 32: Monster Core Hunt

Jian Chen looked outside at the sky from his window. The sun had been out for a while, so Jian Chen knew that it was no longer early in the morning.

Today was a special day for Kargath Academy since this was when they would hold a large scale event where all the students and teachers would take part in. This event was called the Wilderness Survival. Every student would have to leave Kargath Academy to live in the forest 20 miles away for 3 days. Within the 3 days, every student had to have at least 2 Class 1 Monster Cores. For those who reached the Saint level, then they would need 2 Class 2 Monster Cores. The amount of Monster Cores wasn't limited, but whoever got the most Monster Cores would be gifted with a rich reward—an earth attribute Class 4 Monster core as well as a Space Ring.

The reward was so tempting, that if put under the nose of the children from rich backgrounds, even they would become emotionally moved from it.

At the same time, any student that had reached this standard could also access the books about various battle skills and cultivation methods on the library's fourth level. This reward was especially enticing to those from average commoner families.

Battle skills were techniques that could create strong attacks. Along with the distinct uses of Saint Force, it could boost one's power to 120%, making them techniques that would completely surpassed one's original abilities.

On the other hand, cultivation methods could only be used when one reached the Saint level. Some commoner families didn't even know the lowest level cultivation methods and so children born in these families have to rely on the superficial breathing method given to them to cultivate Saint Force. These breathing methods were circulated around the entire Tian Yuan continent. Their steps were extremely simple, so most commoner families knew everything about these methods. The only downside was that these breathing methods could only help them cultivate to the 10th Saint Force layer, and were completely useless to people who had already reached Saint level. Thus, battle skills and cultivation methods were seen as unattainable treasures to commoners.

On Tian Yuan continent, all the battle skills and cultivation methods were divided into four levels: Human Tier, Earth Tier, Heaven Tier and Saint Tier. Every Tier were then split into 3 separate levels: Primary, Middle and Advanced.

After leaving the dorms, Jian Chen headed straight for the sports field. The event had already been announced three days ago and by now, almost all the students had finished their preparations for it by sharpening themselves to the peak of their abilities.

By the time Jian Chen had arrived at the sports field, the place was already swarming with people. However, it was still obvious to see that the people were split into two groups; one of the groups was a gathering of all the nobles and the other group was entirely made up of commoners who did not have any major backgrounds.

All the students that had not yet reached Saint level were holding

a steel weapon that were glistering under the sun. Since they were facing beasts, the school administration had allowed them to choose their own weapons.

Jian Chen walked over to the weapons rack. However, when he saw all the weapons there, his brows could not help but knit together. The good weapons had pretty much all been chosen by the students already and the only ones remaining that were of decent quality were the heavy type weapons that required a lot of strength to use; they were not at all compatible with Jian Chen.

Jian Chen swept a glance over the entire weapons rack. When he noticed a fractured iron rod that was about the thickness of his finger, his eyes suddenly lit up. He exerted all his strength to pull it out, only to discover that the iron rod was about three inches long and its surface was already completely covered in dark yellow rust marks. One of the ends had an extremely sharp point.

Jian Chen weighed the rusted iron rod in his hands and then tested its sturdiness, before nodding in satisfaction. This iron rod seemed somewhat unsuitable at a glance, but its heaviness and length were compatible with Jian Chen and amongst the remaining weapons, only this iron rod would be able to bring out most of Jian Chen's abilities.

At this moment, Tie Ta walked out from the crowd. On his back was an enormous axe that was practically as large as him. It made Tie Ta seem even more impressive and powerful.

Tie Ta walked up to Jian Chen and his gaze rested on the stained iron rod in Jian Chen's hands. His eyes could not help but show

confusion as he asked, “Hai, Changyang Xiang Tian, what are you doing with an iron rod?”

Jian Chen laughed, “What else could I do with it, of course its to be used as a weapon.”

“No way, Changyang Xiang Tian, you’re actually using this lousy iron rod as a weapon? You....you....is your brain ok?” Tie Ta asked in shock.

Jian Chen chuckled and did not explain any further.

Although Tie Ta could not understand why Jian Chen would use such a lousy iron rod as a weapon, he did not continue to pursue this question. Instead, he said, “Changyang Xiang Tian, how about the two of us team-up? If we join hands, then none of the Class 1 magical beasts can obstruct us. We would even be able to overwhelm a Class 2 magical beast. Moreover, I’ve been hunting wild beasts in these types of forests since I was young, and I’ve gradually learned quite a bit of experience about surviving in the wild. If you’re together with me, I promise that you won’t have any hardships.”

Jian Chen considered it for a while. Finally, he nodded his head in agreement at Tie Ta’s offer. The school did not prohibit students from forming groups of 3-5 people to kill the magical beasts, so many students ended up moving together as small groups.

At that moment, a handsome noble carrying an arrogant air

walked up to Tie Ta and smiled, “Hello Tie Ta, my name is Xiu Mi Si. I’m at the peak of the 10th Saint Force layer. Do you want to become partners with me? I believe that if we join hands, hunting magical beasts will be much easier for us both.”

Tie Ta glanced at Xiu Mi Si and shook his head, “No need, Changyang Xiang Tian and I together are enough. We don’t need anymore people to join.”

Faced with Tie Ta’s rejection, Xiu Mi Si did not show any despair. He turned to look at Jian Chen, and his face immediately turned haughty, “This person must be Changyang Xiang Tian, the fourth lord from Lore City’s Changyang clan. My father is the leader of the Xiu Mi clan in Forbidden City. Does junior Changyang Xiang Tian welcome me into your group?” Although Xiu Mi Si’s words were still in a relatively respectful tone, his words hid a threatening force behind them.

Forbidden City was a King City, and when it came to the Gesun Kingdom, Forbidden City was considered to be an Imperial City because the Imperial Palace was situated in Forbidden City.

Hearing the forcefulness behind Xiu Mi Si’s words, Jian Chen knit his brows. He swept his gaze over Xiu Mi Si’s handsome face, and coldly replied, “I apologize, but we no longer need any additional people. After all, we’re only facing Class 1 magical beasts, so we don’t have the time to spare babysitting others.”

Hearing this, Xiu Mi Si immediately turned the color of pig liver. His face darkened at Jian Chen’s meaning, and it was obvious that Jian Chen was looking down on Xiu Mi Si’s abilities.

Xiu Mi Si's face grew stormy, and he maliciously glared at Jian Chen's indifferent expression, before coldly snorting and walking away.

After Xiu Mi Si left, quite a few people from complex backgrounds approached. These people did not want to greet Tie Ta, but only wanted to join his group. However, all of them were rejected. Tie Ta had no feelings for any of this people, and he was unwilling to interact much with them.

After everyone had left, a youth around 20 years old, with a tall and sturdy stature, not very different from Tie Ta's, walked over from the distance. He walked straight towards Jian Chen, and reached his hand out to strongly pat Jian Chen's shoulder and laughed, "Fourth brother, you've become the school's celebrity now. Amongst all of Kargath Academy's students, I'm sure that at this point, there is nobody that doesn't know of your reputation. Not bad, not bad. You haven't lost Changyang clan's face, and your older brother has been able to draw on some of your spotlight too." The sturdy youth was Jian Chen's older brother, Changyang Hu. He was currently sporting an extremely happy expression, and it was clear that his excitement was genuine.

Jian Chen smiled, "Big brother, stop joking around. Oh right, you've come at a perfect time. Why don't we join groups for this event?"

Changyang Hu shook his head as he seemed to have thought of something. He happily replied, "Fourth brother, if you had asked me a week ago, perhaps your older brother would have agreed to

form a group with you. However, I can't right now, because a week ago, your brother finally broke through to the Saint level, thus becoming a Saint. This means that during today's event, I will be entering the third layer to kill Class 2 magical beasts, so I can't be together with you." While saying this, a powerful Saint Force was emitted from Changyang Hu's body, his hands glowing with a yellow light, forming a large, double-edged battleaxe. The battleaxe was about as large as a washbasin, and gave off a yellow glow.

"Fourth brother, not bad, right? After I broke through to Saint level, I was shocked to discover that I actually have the earth attribute," Changyang Hu said proudly. Saints that had attributes normally had huge advantages when fighting Saints without attributes. If the two had the exact same levels of strength and fought each other, under normal circumstances, the Saint with attributes would ultimately be the victor.

A person could only discover if their Saint Force had attributes after breaking through to the Saint level. Thus, anyone that had not yet become a Saint were not able to detect if their Saint Force had attributes or not. However, the chances of having an attributed Saint Force were extremely low. On average, 1 out of 1000 Saints could use attributes in their Saint Force.

In addition, pretty much all of the ones gathered in Kargath Academy were the ones that had the highest potential in all of Gesun Kingdom. That's why it was perfectly normal for many Saints to have attributed Saint Force amongst a group of a thousand students.

Seeing the double-edged battleaxe in Changyang Hu's hands, Jian Chen could not help but happily smile, "Big Brother, congratulations for successfully breaking through and becoming a Saint. You even have an attribute."

Changyang Hu's expression was extremely happy, and he reached his hand to point at a few youths that were with him, "That's right, fourth brother, I must introduce these people to you. These are the relatively outstanding children directly under my command. Their names are Changyang Ao Jian, Changyang Feng, and Changyang Xiao Tian."

"We greet the fourth master!" The three youths simultaneously bent over in greeting, their attitudes extremely respectful. The hierarchy in the Changyang clan was extremely strict, so although they were the more outstanding members of the Changyang clan, their statuses were much lower than Jian Chen's. Even though they were all older than Jian Chen, they still had to treat Jian Chen with a respectful manner.

Moreover, while saluting the younger Jian Chen, the three of them did not feel any traces of unfairness; on the contrary, they actually felt a sense of pride. After all, Jian Chen had managed to defeat the Saint, Ka Di Yun, when he was only at the 8th Saint Force layer, and had managed to fight to a standstill while bare-handed against Luo Jian. Finally, he had even forced Luo Jian to use his Saint Weapon. All of Jian Chen's achievements made the entire Kargath Academy sigh in admiration.

In the presence of the other members of the Changyang Clan, they couldn't help but feel proud. Not just because Jian Chen was a

member of their clan, but that because he was the fourth lord of the Changyang Clan.

Chapter 33: Viper

After Jian Chen introduced Tie Ta to his older brother Changyang Hu and talked for a while before being split up by the vice headmaster Bai En.

After the headmaster Bai En had made a speech, he had the rest of the students clean up a bit before taking away everyone's Space Ring in order to prevent people from storing their own monster cores within it. He gave them a cheap Space Belt to compensate, a single one of these belts weren't all that expensive and were actually a very common item so the academy could afford to hand out a thousand of them.

The space within the belt was very small as well, and could only hold up to a meter squared. However, it was sufficient for holding monster cores, for now, each belt held a small amount of medication just in case of an injury.

Once all of the preparations were complete, all 1000 students left the academy in a grand exit. Heading for the forest 20 miles away, a few dozen teachers accompanied them. Their mission was to split up in the forest and rescue any student in a life threatening situation with the vice headmaster Bai En to lead the group.

After exiting from the academy, everyone's speed gradually picked up. Since the weakest student amongst them was around the 8th Saint Force Layer, the speed could definitely be faster, although they were already traveling at very fast speeds.

After two hours of traveling, everyone finally reached the outskirts of the forest where they could all see a faint white light illuminating from within.

Jian Chen looked strangely at the white light that covered the forest, he had read many books in the library, so he understood the reason behind the white light.

300 years ago, this place had been a grassy wasteland with no forest in sight. Using 1000 people from Kargath, they finally developed the area and after 1 year of work, a forest was created. Although at that time, the area of the forest was only 50 kilometers. After hundreds of years, the forest had developed into what it was today.

After the forest had grown, Kargath Academy's headmaster Brian personally spent 3 days and 3 nights in the forest and enshrouded it in light before splitting it into 3 regions. Each region had a strong enchantment on it, and in the middle of the forest the headmaster had released weaker magical beasts to breed so that they would create stronger magical beasts for the students from the academy to learn to fight.

Headmaster Brian had created this forest for the geniuses of Gesun Kingdom and expended a great amount of effort creating the forest. However, the headmaster Brian had long since retired, having another person take his role.

At that moment, the headmaster walked on over and said, "Dear students, starting from today, you will have to survive in the forest for 3 days and have to hand over two monster cores at the very

least. If you give up halfway or do not obtain two monster cores, then that will be considered as a loss and you will not be rewarded.” His clear voice was transmitted to every student’s ear.

“Right now, everyone will be separated. Those students who aren’t a Saint may partner up with someone in the second region to hunt for monster cores. For those students who are Saints, please make your way towards the 3rd region.”

Afterwards, everyone started to scatter while Jian Chen and Tie Ta naturally walked together. Because the area was enchanted against magical beasts, everyone who entered this area would not be attacked by any magical beast.

As they entered the enchanted area, Jian Chen and Tie Ta were both already in the first region. The first region had beasts with very weak strength, so weak that they would be no match for a Class 1 Magical Beast. When it came to weak beasts like these, the entire Tian Yuan Continent just called them wild beasts, and it was only when they reached the first class that they would be considered a Magical Beast.

All 1000 students entered at the same time, scaring the wild animals into a sense of submission and made the trip relatively peaceful. Quickly the students all made it through the enchantments and into the second region. All of the monsters in this area were Class 1 Magical Beasts, so for those who weren’t a Saint, even a Class 1 Magical Beast could pose a threat to them.

Entering the 2nd region, Tie Ta and Jian Chen broke away from the rest of the students and headed for the dense parts of the

forests. All around them were weeds that were as tall as a person and majorly impacted their vision. Not able to see the road, they could only look down and track the footprints left behind by the magical beasts.

“Changyang Xiang Tian, from here on out magical beasts will be appearing often, we definitely can’t be careless.” Tie Ta said with a solemn face. He had been hunting in forests for magical beasts since he was young, so it could be said that he had a rich experience about them. He also understood the dangers that lived within the forests, and if one wasn’t careful, then they would lose their life easily.

Jian Chen’s face contained a look of conviction, “Don’t worry, even if you run into trouble, it doesn’t mean that I’ll run into trouble.” With the memories from his previous world, he did not take this forest lightly. In his previous life, he had often traveled through forests, and his experience was even more extensive when it came to forests when compared to Tie Ta. Combined with the fact that Jian Chen had read up on magical beasts in a book, he learned a great deal about the magical beasts in the forest.

Tie Ta held onto his giant battleaxe as he watched around himself with no small amount of vigilance. “Although I’ve killed many beasts in the past, I’ve never killed a Magical Beast. They have the same strength of a Saint, so even if one was a Saint, it wouldn’t be a definite kill. I’m not sure if we would be able to kill a Class 1 Magical Beast if we come across one, and if by chance one runs away, we won’t be able to catch up.”

Jian Chen smiled and said, “Tie Ta, could it be you don’t have

that much faith in your own strength?”

Tie Ta's face started to redden as he scratched his head. With a honest answer, he said, “It's not that, I have faith in my own strength. My teacher even said that my strength was strong enough to defeat the regular Saint. But I've never killed a Class 1 Magical Beast, let alone seen one...”

While Tie Ta was speaking, Jian Chen's face went rigid before bringing his hand up to stop him from talking. His eyes narrowed slightly as he started to look around.

Noticing how Jian Chen suddenly became serious, Tie Ta realized that danger was approaching. Holding his battleaxe in front of him, he cautiously looked around at the surrounding grass.

Jian Chen stared around himself for the most potential spot of danger, but the grass had been growing unhindered and healthy for years and obstructed his view; so Jian Chen wasn't able to see anything.

Jian Chen's right hand clenched onto the iron rod in his hand as he blinked once. His ears started to shake as he strained to listen to his surroundings.

A few deep breaths later, Jian Chen suddenly opened his eyes to reveal a bright glow to them. Straight away, Jian Chen stamped forwards with the corroded iron rod in his right hand starting to exude a bright yellow glow. Just like lightning, the rod shot forward with a whooshing sound.

At the same time, a green stick suddenly flew forward from the grass like a bullet and quickly approached Jian Chen with frightening speeds.

In midair, Jian Chen's rod and the green stick collided with each other, causing the green branch to stop moving. As it slowly stopped, Jian Chen saw that the iron point of the rod had pierced straight through the body of it.

At that moment, the two of them suddenly realized that the stick was actually a green viper. It was as thick as an adult's arm, and the part of it that was currently visible was 2 meters long.

A powerful wind rushed past Jian Chen's ear, as he saw Tie Ta swipe his large battleaxe towards the viper with an ear-splitting noise.

The large battleaxe slashed at the viper's body, and its power was so strong that the viper was flung almost 10 meters backwards before it fell to the ground with a soft noise. However, the weeds around their current location grew so lush that, putting aside 10 meters, Jian Chen and Tie Ta could barely see 5 meters ahead of them.

"Hurry up and chase after it. We cannot let it hide itself." Jian Chen clearly understood how unfavorable the situation was for them. His body flashed as he chased after the viper at high speeds. Under these circumstances, if the viper managed to carefully hide away from sight, then the two of them would be in huge trouble.

After all, every step in front of them was covered with weeds, and it was difficult to see anything on the ground. It would be extremely difficult to defend against the viper if it prepared to lie in wait.

Without any hesitation, Tie Ta ran towards the direction that Jian Chen had raced in. Once Tie Ta caught up with Jian Chen, Jian Chen had already stopped moving. About 3 meters away, that viper had lifted its head up high, its ice-cold eyes looking at them, its forked tongue flicking in and out.

When the viper lifted its body, it was 1.5 meters tall. Its body, which was as thick as an adult's arm, had two wounds on it. One of them was the bloody hole that Jian Chen had left; it was so deep that the viper's bone could be seen. The other was the long wound that Tie Ta had left; it stretched down the viper's thick body. The outside of the wound was a mess of flesh, with fresh, red blood pouring down ceaselessly from it.

Jian Chen's eyes cautiously followed the viper's movements. Although the viper in front of them was a species with relatively weak attack, it was still a Class 1 Magical Beast. Its power would not be any weaker than a Saint that had already condensed his Saint Weapon.

Tie Ta looked at the viper with a serious expression. The veins on his hands popped out as he gripped his battleaxe tightly, prepared to attack with all his strength at any moment.

While both parties were in a deadlock, Jian Chen finally acted. The short 3 meter distance was nothing to him, and with a sway of

his body, Jian Chen had already covered 2 meters of distance. In an instant, he appeared in front of the viper. The iron rod in his hand made an ear-piercing cry as it was thrust forward faster than the naked eye could see, headed straight for the viper that was currently seven inches away.

The viper gave a rough cry as it nimbly darted its body to the side to evade the fatal blow.

Despite this, that corroded iron rod still managed to deeply pierce a hole through its body, the sharp tip poking out through its other side.

“Si!” The strong pain made the green viper cry out hoarsely, its mouth open wide.

“Yahei!” Tie Ta’s movements were quick, as he used all his strength to slash his battleaxe down hard towards the viper’s head.

The battleaxe passed through the fist-sized viper’s head, sending it flying high up into the air. A rain of blood fell down, and fresh blood crazily spurted out from the wound on its green body. In an instant, the surrounding weeds were covered in red.

Chapter 34: Casually Hunting For Monster Cores

Looking at the detached head spin through the air as the body spasmed spraying blood, Tie Ta's face was full of alarm. At this moment they had easily killed a Class 1 Magical Beast, allowing himself to feel more confident about his strength. The cyan colored viper hadn't even made Tie Ta expend a great amount of his energy at all.

Jian Chen slowly separated the body of the viper from the iron rod and wiped the blood onto the surrounding grass. It had actually been Jian Chen who contributed the most in killing the Class 1 Magical Beast; if it were not for his lightning quick thrust through the viper's body and dealing it a huge wound as it was pierced, then Tie Ta's battleaxe would not have been able to sever the snake's head.

Recollecting his battleaxe, Tie Ta's face looked at the detached head proudly while stepping on the viper's dead carcass. "Changyang Xiang Tian, this is a Class 1 Magical beast? How weak it was!"

Jian Chen laughed as he heard Tie Ta, "It's not that the magical beasts are weak, it's because us two combined are too strong. Besides, this Class 1 Magical Beast wouldn't give much trouble for even a person who just recently broke through to becoming a Saint."

Tie Ta returned Jian Chen's smile and wiped his battleaxe dry from the blood. Bringing it to his shoulder, he let loose a laugh and

said, “If you say that, then doesn’t that mean we can casually walk around and kill Class 1 Magical Beasts?”

It looked as if Jian Chen had come to a realization as his face revealed a joyful smile, “Not bad, with our two strengths, even if we were to fight against a Class 1 Magical Beast by ourselves we would be able to kill it easily. But if we were to join together, then no magical beast in the 2nd region would be able to bring us trouble. The magical beasts here aren’t strong because the academy had meant for them to be for students to help pick up battle experience. There won’t be any strong magical beasts here, except...” He trailed off in thought.

Jian Chen’s silence caused Tie Ta to pause, “Except what...”

“Unless we come across a group of magical beasts. However, we still don’t know what’s here or not.” Jian Chen’s face was serious as he spoke. With his strength, Jian Chen would not find any problems if he came across a Class 1 Magical Beast, but if he came across a whole group of them, then there would be no way at all.

Tie Ta wrinkled his eyebrows together and said uncertainly, “That shouldn’t be likely. I’ve been in the forests many times and never saw a whole bunch of magical beasts together.”

“It’s not for sure we won’t, I’ve read up in the library on books pertaining to magical beasts. There are a few types of magical beasts that all live in a group together. Together, their power is strong and very rarely do they travel by themselves.” Jian Chen walked over to where the decapitated snake head was and only then did he realized that the viper was only 6 to 7 meters long.

Using the iron rod to cut 7 meters in, he took out the rod from the viper's body to reveal a bloody crystal.

Within the Tian Yuan continent, there were many different types of monster cores, while their monster cores were not at all like each other. Some magical beasts had their monster core in the head, some in the pit of their stomachs, and some in their abdomen. The viper for example had its monster core within its tail, but Jian Chen had already known that a long time ago.

“Peng!” Tie Ta brought down the battle axe on his shoulder into a tree. It sunk into the tree as smoothly like water in a bucket before he cried out loudly, “If there really are magical beasts that are in a group, I Tie Ta will definitely kill them all!”

Jian Chen held the monster core he got from the cyan viper and rubbed it clean of blood with the nearby grass. Throwing it to Tie Ta, he said, “Alright, there's no need to yell. There's a lot of magical beasts that travel in herds in the Tian Yuan continent, but it doesn't mean we'll meet up with one for sure. Nothing is for sure, after all, this is the magical beast forest.”

Tie Ta snatched the monster core thrown at him and looked at Jian Chen weirdly, “What are you doing giving this to me?”

Jian Chen laughed, “The viper was slain by you, so this monster core is yours by rights.” Seeing Tie Ta trying to find a way to find a reason against this, Jian Chen continued to say, “This monster core is yours, don't say otherwise. Just take it. After all we still have 3 more days, at our current rate we'll definitely be able to get a lot more, so I don't really care for this one monster core.”

“Haha, okay then. I’ll be taking this monster core. The next monster core will be yours no matter who kills it then.” Holding the bloodstained monster core high up in the air, Tie Ta was extremely happy. Though that was for sure since this was the first monster core he had gotten after killing a Class 1 Magical Beast.

Afterwards, the two of them continued on their way. Now that he knew that Jian Chen had an acute sense for detecting danger, Tie Ta had simply handed the patrolling duties to Jian Chen. On the other hand, he began to ceaselessly hack at the grass in front of them to clear their path. Although constantly waving the heavy battleaxe around expended a great amount of energy, it was as simple as eating a meal to Tie Ta, who had godly strength. To him, this action wasn’t the slightest bit taxing; after all, his strength was great enough to frighten others, and he seemed to have infinite amounts of energy as well. Thus, it was impossible for him to become exhausted in a situation like this.

Not long after the two had left, Jian Chen’s ears twitched, and his footsteps came to an abrupt halt. He stretched his hand out towards Tie Ta, who was currently slashing at the grass in front of them, and gestured at him to be silent.

Tie Ta intuitively understood the situation, and stopped his attempt at hacking through the weeds. Tightly gripping the battleaxe, he returned to Jian Chen’s side, and stood shoulder to shoulder with him. Tie Ta’s eyes flashed, as he inspected their surroundings with caution.

Their breathing became very faint, as their expressions were

filled with caution. The difference between the two was that Tie Ta was constantly looking around, while Jian Chen had gently closed his eyes in attempt to sense everything around them.

It was currently extremely difficult to discern anything among the grass. Even if there really was an unknown danger lurking around, it would unfortunately not be something that one could use the naked eye to see. Thus, Tie Ta could not discover anything despite sweeping his gaze around all four corners for a long period of time.

Jian Chen lightly closed his eyes, his keen ears twitching periodically as they tried to catch all noises coming from his surroundings. At the same time, his consciousness also reached new heights, and he used his powerful “Soul” to reach out and sense the world around him.

At that moment, Jian Chen could not help but recall one of his fights against Dugu Qiubai. Eventually, just as he was about to die, his powers had suddenly broken through and reached the Realm of the Sword God. At that moment, his “soul” had become incomparably strong and could even manifest it outside his body into the surrounding air. Whenever he spread his “soul” out into an area, then there would be no way anyone or anything inside would be able to escape his perception.

However, what made Jian Chen feel regret was that after entering this world, although his soul was extremely powerful, he could no longer extend it outwards. Otherwise, this dense forest would not give Jian Chen any difficulties at all. Searching for a hidden magical beast would be extremely easy.

Jian Chen's soul densely concentrated together, and he exerted all his efforts to sense his surroundings. Slowly, his spirit entered a unique state; although he had not extended his soul, at that instant, his soul seemed to have established a subtle relationship with the various plants around him, fusing together. This feeling was extremely mysterious.

However, as soon as Jian Chen entered this state, he senses immediately shot up to new levels. Finally, a barely discernable breathing sound entered his sensing range. The breath was so faint that even if one stood next to it, one most likely wouldn't have been able to hear it.

In an instant, Jian Chen's opened his eyes, and in a flash, he had already disappeared from his original location, and was flying towards the side at high speeds. While moving, Jian Chen constantly twisted and adjusted his body to evade the branches obstructing his path.

In an instant, Jian Chen had already crossed over a distance of 10 meters. He quickly thrust out the iron rod in his hands at lightning fast speed, silently cutting away the surrounding leaves and weeds, the tip aimed towards the the black figure hiding within the grass.

“Ao!”

A shriek of pain suddenly rang out, as a dark shadow jumped out from the grass, leaping towards Jian Chen with its ferocious

mouth wide open.

This was a black panther, around 2 meters long. Its head had an open wound where fresh blood was pouring out from. The blood flowed down through the black fur on its face, intensifying its fierce appearance.

Jian Chen's gaze was as sharp as a sword as a sneer began to form on his face. He shook his arm, and once again lashed out with the iron rod in his hand at an unfathomable speed, his objective being the black panther's neck. Up until the end, the black panther had absolutely no time to react, as the iron rod's sharp point plunged deeply through its throat. In addition, since the black panther's body was currently lunging in the air, its heavy body quickly dropped downwards, pushing the iron rod deeper and deeper through its neck. Eventually, the point had drilled a hole directly through, and the end had come out of the other side.

This time, the black panther didn't even have the time to cry out before it had already died. It fell to the ground with its eyes wide open, grief instilled in its gaze.

At that moment, Tie Ta finally caught up from behind. When he looked over at the ground, he saw the corroded iron rod pierced through the black panther's throat. Immediately, his eyes widened in extreme shock.

"Changyang Xiang Tian, this....this....did you kill this?" Tie Ta's voice was trembling in shock. Even though he had witnessed the moment that Jian Chen's weapon had pierced through the black panther's throat, he still couldn't believe the scene no matter how

hard he tried. That was because the period of time that had passed was way too short; when Jian Chen had charged over, Tie Ta had already followed behind at his fastest speed. However, by the time he had caught up, all he saw was the Class 1 Magical Beast dying by Jian Chen's hands. The amount of time that had passed was definitely not even long enough to take a breath, or even half a breath.

Being able to kill a Class 1 Magical Beast in half a breath's time was natural for some professionals. However, Tie Ta clearly knew that Jian Chen's abilities had not yet reached Saint level. Moreover, the weapon he was using was a mere corroded iron rod.

Jian Chen placed his foot on the black panther's head, and gradually pulled out the iron rod. As if nothing had happened, he said, "That's right, I killed it. However, it was just a coincidence. Originally, there was no way it would've died so quickly. However, it kept approaching my weapon, and in the end, its life was extinguished before it could even cry out in despair."

Hearing this, Tie Ta rubbed the back of his head, and doubtfully glanced at Jian Chen's indifferent face. In disbelief, he asked, "Is that true? You're not lying to me?"

Jian Chen laughed, "Of course it's true. Why would I lie to you?"

Seeing Jian Chen's sincere expression, Tie Ta was beyond puzzled, and muttered, "Do such stupid magical beasts really exist, to actually give itself up to a weapon?"

Chapter 35: Liang Xiaole

Taking out the black panther's monster core, Jian Chen and Tie Ta continued on their trip to kill magical beasts.

To easily kill a Class 1 Magical Beast while not having the strength of a Saint was something that any new student would have said was an incomparably difficult task. Life threatening dangers could happen at any time, but to Jian Chen and Tie Ta, it was almost as if they were playing a game. The 2nd region was like a treasure trove of monster cores for those two.

The day passed quickly and nightfall came, both Jian Chen and Tie Ta found an open area in the forest to camp out in. Between them was a campfire with a fire that pulsed as it illuminated the pitch blackness. The two boy's shadows danced behind their backs, making their reflections seem like devils threatening each other.

The darkness surrounded them from all four corners, and if they were to go outside the range of the bright fire, then they wouldn't even be able to see their own hands in front of their faces in the darkness. It wasn't that peaceful however, as somewhere in the distant forest, a magical beast could be heard howling away. Just the sound of it would terrify anyone, and for someone who was absolutely scared already, the sound would cause them to be scared stiff.

Tie Ta turned the monster core in his hand over the fire, causing the light of the fire to shine on it. One look at the two boys revealed that their clothes were not in great condition and were splattered with blood.

The blood was all from Magical Beasts while their clothes had been cut open due to the thorny shrubbery.

“Changyang Xiang Tian, you’re really awesome! I didn’t think that you would be able to wield a corroded iron rod to such an amazing degree, all of the magical beasts we fought against today were killed by you! It was only the initial viper from earlier that I managed to kill.” Tie Ta exclaimed as he heaped praise onto Jian Chen.

Jian Chen’s face had a big smile on it, “I only took a chance when I saw one, if it weren’t for you dealing out damage with your axe, then it would have been even harder to kill those magical beasts.”

Tie Ta laughed, his heart finally taking comfort in his words, “Changyang Xiang Tian, could you tell me, how is it that you’re able to tell if we’re near a magical beast or not?” Tie Ta was naturally very curious about this, the whole day he had been puzzling over it, but it was only now that he found the perfect time to ask.

Jian Chen didn’t bother to hide anything and instead pointed at his ear and head, “I used this and this.”

Tie Ta looked at Jian Chen point at his ears and head in a curious way before asking, “You use your ears to listen and your mind to think?”

“You’re only half correct!” Jian Chen took the iron rod by his

side and began to polish it on a small chunk of rock. Absent mindedly responding, he said, “Aside from relying on my ears to listen, I use my spirit to feel my surroundings. However, this method would be too difficult for you to do.”

“Oh!” Tie Ta nodded his head in understanding while thinking it over in his head.

Jian Chen felt the fine point of the iron rod before putting it down. Grabbing onto his Space Belt, he said, “Tie Ta, let us check out our earnings from today.” Shaking his Space Belt, the stored monster cores began to fall out.

One after another, monster cores started to drop out from the space belt and gradually the spot in front of Jian Chen began to pile up with monster cores until it was a foot high.

Tie Ta followed suit and started to shake his own Space Belt. In the end, a small mountain piled up in front of him as well.

“I have 48 monster cores here.” Jian Chen laughed, his profits for today had been huge.

“I have 49 here, I’ve beat you by one.” Tie Ta was extremely happy, he had never seen this many cores before. This was a first for him, since he had never even seen a single monster core before. To Tie Ta who was born in a common household, these monster cores had a huge price tag on them despite all of the cores being Class 1.

“For the first day to be this profitable, not bad! I don’t know how many monster cores we’d need in order to be the ones with the most monster cores. After all, the prize is quite rich; a Class 4 Monster Core and a Space Ring.” Even Jian Chen had been tempted by the prizes, he really wanted that Class 4 Monster Core, the energy inside would be many times stronger than a Class 1 Monster Core.

At this moment, Jian Chen’s eye suddenly grew dark as he whispered, “Quickly store all of the monster cores, people are coming.” After saying that, he immediately started to store all of the cores into his belt and put it back on.

Tie Ta moved quickly as well, the moment he heard Jian Chen start, he had already started to store all of the monster cores. Tie Ta had finished by the time Jian Chen did.

After the two had stored their monster cores away, after a few nervous breaths, the distant grass moved to the side with a rustling sound as a very thin person came walking out. The moment the person saw both Tie Ta and Jian Chen sitting by a fire, a look of surprise came over their face before suddenly letting loose a cry of joy. It was a weak little lady holding onto a rice straw for support who came stumbling over.

“I finally found someone, I finally found someone! I beg of you, please don’t leave me behind. I’m afraid, really really afraid. The magical beasts want to eat me...” The person’s voice was fairly frantic and was full of panic; however, her voice was still gentle somehow.

Hearing her, Jian Chen and Tie Ta then realized the person in front of them was a girl as the fire behind them illuminated her body, showing her Kargath Academy uniform to the both of them. However, the uniform had been cut open by the branches and thorns, some parts of her body could already be seen underneath and even her underwear could be seen poking out. The uniform itself was muddy as if she had fallen multiple times.

The girl's face was dirty with mud to the point where her appearance couldn't even be seen clearly. However, on her face could be seen evidence of her crying as she pleadingly looked at Jian Chen. Looking at the pitiful sight, there was nothing but helplessness reflected in her eyes.

“Sit down.” Jian Chen tried to make himself as kind as possible, looking at her situation, he had guessed what type of trouble had taken place. In this environment, even the most reckless of boys would feel horrified, let alone a little girl.

Seeing that the person was actually a pretty girl, Tie Ta's guard loosened. Carefully putting down the battle axe in his hands, he looked at the girl curiously.

Jian Chen calmly looked at the young girl, and asked, “Can you tell me what your name is?”

“My...my name is Liang Xiaole,” The young girl stuttered back. Seeing both Jian Chen's and Tie Ta's eyes flash, she could not help but feel fear, as well as some faint traces of concern and insecurity.

“Why is a lady like you not with others? If you’re so afraid, why would you walk through this forest alone? Just a few random sounds have even scared you to such an extent,” Tie Ta asked in a muffled voice.

Liang Xiaole looked at Tie Ta timidly before she said quietly, “I came here with a few friends at first, but unfortunately we came across a magical beast. That magical beast was quite strong, and my group of friends weren’t able to beat it. Soon after most of us were injured and we all scattered to run away, but I got lost.”

Hearing this, Tie Ta began to choke on his own saliva before saying, “Even with a group you were unable to beat a Class 1 Magical Beast? How useless, just Changyang Xiang Tian and I have already killed over 100 magical beasts today.” A proud look came over his face as he remembered that fact.

“Gululu!”

At that moment, a strange sound suddenly rang out. In an instant, Jian Chen and Tie Ta both directed their gazes to the origin of the sound. It turned out to be Liang Xiaole’s stomach, which at the moment, still would not stop grumbling loudly.

“You must be hungry,” Jian Chen smiled.

“Yes!” Liang Xiaole nodded in embarrassment, and delicately said, “I haven’t eaten all day.” The corner of her eyes could not help but light up as she glanced at the bonfire, where the finely cooked, golden magical beast meat was currently dripping with

rich oils. She greedily inhaled its aroma, but the more she did this, the louder her stomach grumbled. Eventually, both Jian Chen and Tie Ta could only hear rumbling sounds in their ears.

Jian Chen smiled. He picked up the skewer with the magical meat on it, and unafraid of the heat, directly used his hand to tear off a large chunk of the meat. Handing it over to Liang Xiaole, he said, “Go on and eat this. Be careful it’s hot though.”

Liang Xiaole twisted her hands, and ripped the corners of her clothes to wipe clean the dirt on her hands. Tenderly, she reached over to receive the magical beast meat. Once it had cooled down, she directly ate it with large mouthfuls, not caring to keep up her appearance in the least.

Liang Xiaole was probably starving, because after she quickly finished that large piece of meat, she still gazed at the remaining piece with a wistful look in her eyes.

Jian Chen smiled, and ripped off another large chunk of magical beast meat. He handed it over to Liang Xiaole and said, “Go ahead and eat this.”

Seeing the piece of magical beast meat that had placed in front of her, Liang Xiaole hesitated for a bit, and in the end, still didn’t reach out to receive it. Instead, she gazed at Jian Chen and Tie Ta and softly asked, “If I finish it, what will you guys eat?”

Tie Ta laughed, “Don’t worry, we still have another one left. Look under that tree.” As he said this, Tie Ta extended a finger to

point in the direction.

Liang Xiaole looked at where Tie Ta was pointing, and sure enough, she noticed that underneath a large tree nearby, an unknown magical beast had fallen to the ground. One of its legs had already disappeared, and the ground was covered with fresh blood marks.

Staring at the magical beast's corpse, Liang Xiaole swallowed hard and said, "You guys are really formidable. To think that the two of you alone could kill a Class 1 Magical Beast."

"Che....What does that mean?" Tie Ta said, completely unperturbed.

The time stealthily flew by. Jian Chen and Tie Ta had finished eating, and were now preparing to rest.

"Hey, where should i sleep?" Liang Xiaole asked with difficulty.

Jian Chen pointed at a large tree not too far away and said, "Go rest on top of that tree. That way, even if magical beasts try to attack in the middle of the night, you won't be harmed."

"Ah, magical beasts still attack during the night?" Liang Xiaole's face turned ashen at these words. Her eyes were filled with fear, and her whole body began to tremble.

"Then what about you guys? Where would you guys go? You

can't just leave me behind alone, otherwise I'll definitely be eaten by some savage magical beast," Liang Xiaole asked in a panicked tone. She nervously glanced at Jian Chen and Tie Ta, as if afraid for her life if they ran away and abandoned her.

Jian Chen internally sighed. He really couldn't do anything about the cowardly Liang Xiaole. People like her who had been born and raised in noble families as a precious little girl had never experienced the stormy sea. From birth, she had grown up into a sheltered environment, so encountering any danger drove her heart and mind into disarray.

"Don't worry, we won't go far. We're just going to rest in the other tree over there," Jian Chen said.

Liang Xiaole felt slightly comforted after hearing these words. However, traces of fear still remained in her heart, refusing to go away.

"That damned school, that damned headmaster! Why do they have to force everyone to attend this type of event for no reason at all? Isn't this just deliberately trying to send us to our deaths?" Whenever she thought about how she had gotten into her current situation, Liang Xiaole could not help but start cursing in anger. Eventually her words gradually began to turn into sobs.

Chapter 36: A Pack Of Wolves

During the night, Jian Chen and Tie Ta sat under a tree cultivating. The torch by their side had long since burned out, and in a tree branch 5 or 6 meters above them, was Liang Xiaole. She nervously looked around whenever she heard the howl of a magical beast in the night, she wasn't able to sleep at all.

Liang Xiaole's bright eyes looked down at the cultivating pair, Jian Chen and Tie Ta, as if she was monitoring them. In her eyes, this was a matter of life or death. She did not want to see the two people she had found, after a long time of searching, to abandon her and lose her only type of protection.

At that moment, a light breeze blew through the forest and through the tall grass. Meanwhile, the cross-legged Jian Chen suddenly opened his eyes. Immediately, his eyes grew bright as he stared deep into the tallgrass, before standing up onto the ground with the iron rod in his hand.

Liang Xiaole was confused as she watched Jian Chen stand up. Not knowing what was happening, her heart was suddenly very agitated.

"Hey, what's happening?" Liang Xiaole whispered carefully. In this situation, she didn't dare use a loud voice to speak, for fear of attracting another magical beast.

Jian Chen didn't answer her and instead turned to the still cultivating Tie Ta. "Tie Ta, wake up, some magical beasts are

attacking.”

“Ah, what did you say? Magical beasts are attacking?” Liang Xiaole became frightened, her face instantly draining of color. Thinking about what was about to happen, her whole body began to shake in fear.

While Tie Ta was cultivating, he didn’t dare immerse himself completely, so he still remained on guard while cultivating. Thus, when Jian Chen called for him, Tie Ta immediately woke from his cultivation state and stood up with his battleaxe rested against his shoulder.

“Changyang Xiang Tian, where are the monsters?” He asked as he looked around. He couldn’t see any footprints around them, or even hear a single sound.

Jian Chen slowly turned his head as he looked around, “Tie Ta, this time, be careful. This time it isn’t a single magical beast, but a group of them.”

“A group!” Tie Ta’s face immediately changed from careless to surprise, then it hardened into a ready expression.

“Ah! What! A group! It can’t be! Hey guys, please don’t scare me like that.” Hiding in the trees, Liang Xiaole pleaded with them. She would have rather heard a threat from Jian Chen than this.

Jian Chen’s eyebrows knitted together before lightly

commanding the crying Liang Xiaole, “Could you please be quiet? Do you want to attract magical beasts from all over?”

Jian Chen’s command proved to be extremely useful, as Liang Xiaole immediately used her hand to clamp her mouth shut to make sure she didn’t say anything.

“Changyang Xiang Tian, how many magical beasts do you think there are?” Tie Ta asked.

“A lot, 10 at the very least. They’re all prepared to attack and already have us surrounded.” Jian Chen’s face was very grave.

Tie Ta’s expression grew hard as he heard Jian Chen. If it was just one magical beast, he wouldn’t have been worried, three magical beasts and the both of them combined could take them on. But now that there were at least 10 of them; Tie Ta didn’t dare to have a swelled head now.

When Liang Xiaole had heard Jian Chen, her already pale face had turned even paler, and her mind was wracked with fear. Only one thought was occurring in her head, “It’s over, we’re screwed! We’re not going to survive this...”

The tall grass began to sway as a cyan colored light appeared in front of them. There was one in every direction, with no less than 50 points of origin. As Jian Chen and Tie Ta looked on amazed, they realized the bright spots of light were actually the eyes of magical beasts, and there were at the very least 20 of them.

“This is a Class 1 Magical Beast Blue Wolf. Tie Ta, if you want to live, hurry and climb up a tree now,” Jian Chen said as he looked at the 20 Blue Wolves from all 4 directions.

Tie Ta glared in anger before brandishing his battleaxe, with a heroic voice he said, “Don’t worry. Changyang Xiang Tian, there are only 20 Class 1 Magical Beasts, I guarantee they won’t take us down.”

The moment she heard that there were 20 wolves invading, Liang Xiaole was practically scared to death. At this time, even if she believed in Jian Chen’s and Tie Ta’s strengths before, she would never believe that their strengths would be able to beat 20 magical beasts, as they hadn’t even reached Sainthood yet. Unless one of the school teachers were to come save them now, they wouldn’t be able to escape alive.

“Teacher, where are you? Please come save us...” Liang Xiaole looked around in all directions as she pleaded for a teacher to come. She could only trust that the teachers would come to save them now, but it was a shame that there were so many magical beasts, so she was too scared to cry out too loudly. Just in case the magical beasts focused on her.

The 20 Blue Wolves slowly walked towards Jian Chen and Tie Ta, their oily gazes staring attentively at them. It was only when their distance was less than 5 meters away that they stopped moving.

Jian Chen and Tie Ta grabbed onto their respective weapons. Although they were surrounded by 20 magical beasts, neither of the two had a single expression of fear..

“Aooo!”

Suddenly, a Blue Wolf started to cry out into the sky. Immediately afterwards, the 20 wolves surrounding them started to howl as well. Their howls filled the air as they began to overlap with each other, before turning into a large soundwave that targeted a wide area.

Hearing the wolves howl, Liang Xiaole’s entire body slipped. Her body fell to the ground as she started to tremble. At this point, her face was entirely drained of blood, and had become a deathly pale shade.

5 kilometers away from Jian Chen, a middle aged male dropped down onto a tree branch. When he heard the howls, his face changed. His previously closed eyes opened as he stared off towards the direction of the sound.

“Not good, that’s a pack of Blue Wolves. Judging by the howls there are at least 10 of them. It looks like someone has met up with danger then.” The middle aged man’s face grew solemn as his hands touched the tree he was standing on. He jumped down from the tree before sprinting off towards the direction of the howls without stopping.

“I hope that I can make it.” The middle aged man was anxious, but he was already going at the fastest speed he could possibly go at. The magical beasts in the 2nd area weren’t that strong, but the opponents Jian Chen and Tie Ta were facing were Class 1 Magical

Beast Blue Wolves; their chances of success weren't looking well.

At the same time, in 3 different places, 3 different people all heard the yell before putting down whatever was in their hands and quickly started to run towards the howl.

The wolves' howl was the signal for the wolves to attack, as the 20 wolves suddenly rushed at Jian Chen and Tie Ta.

"Go die!" Tie Ta snarled as he brought his battle axe up in preparation to strike. He swiped at a nearby wolf with his axe, slamming the axe into its stomach. The wolf cried out with an ear-piercing shriek.

"Peng!"

The Blue Wolf that charged at Tie Ta was immediately cut down by his battleaxe's powerful attack, and it now sported a giant wound on its body. The wolf was sent flying away from the mighty swing; despite it being a Class 1 Magical Beast, it was no match for Tie Ta's strength.

Tie Ta brandished his 100 pound battleaxe with ease as if it wasn't heavy at all. Whenever a Blue Wolf approached, he would send it flying away. Thus, any wolf that got too close to him was sent flying, with a new wound on its body. However, the skin of a Blue Wolf was tough, so even Tie Ta couldn't kill one with ease.

As the wolves approached him at the same time, Jian Chen's eyes

instantly grew cold as he dashed forward. In a flash, he brought the sharpened iron rod through the throat of a nearby wolf.

“Puu!”

With some resistance, the iron rod finally pierced through the wolf’s hide and bore through the wolf’s throat. He took out the rod and tilted his body to the side to dodge the attack of another wolf who jumped at him.

The wolf who had its throat pierced by Jian Chen fell helplessly to the ground, as its four legs spasmed in its final death throes. It couldn’t stand up on its legs no matter how much it tried, as bright red blood leaked out from its wound.

The throat was the weak-point for almost every single living thing, and magical beasts were no exception. Right now, since the Blue Wolf had its throat skewered, its life was quickly fading. Even though it was trying to avoid the temptation of death, its struggle would not last long.

Jian Chen relied on the nimbleness of his body to weave in and out of the pack of wolves, and he used his iron rod to leave behind stab wounds wherever he attacked. Despite being surrounded by 10 wolves, Jian Chen had used his strange but unpredictable style of movement to dodge with ease. The sharp teeth and the claws of the wolves couldn’t touch him at all, and whenever it had seemed like the wolves would be able to get him, Jian Chen moved out of the way just in time.

The battle hadn’t even lasted for more than a few deep breaths before 3 of the wolves had their throats pierced by Jian Chen. As

the wolves lost blood, they stumbled to the ground in a final struggle to live, but after one final breath, they died on the ground. Many of the wolves had suffered from multiple wounds, but none of them were fatal, and were focused on the joints of the beasts.

Jian Chen proceeded to travel in between the wolves as the iron rod in his hand continued to stab at them. Not only were his movements swift, but there was a certain grace to them; it was almost as if he was dancing instead of fighting for his life.

On the other side, Tie Ta let loose a snarl and brought his 100 pound battleaxe down through the air, producing an after image thanks to the speed. The few wolves surrounding him were continuously sent flying through the air with exceptionally terrifying wounds. Although the wounds were from Tie Ta's sharp battleaxe, to the Blue Wolves, these injuries would not threaten their lives at all.

Although Tie Ta was looking quite powerful and majestic at this moment, he was not invincible. And with Jian Chen's success so far, Tie Ta's own achievements were nothing much. After all, ever since the start of the battle, Tie Ta had not yet been able to kill a single Blue Wolf.

Chapter 37: Teacher's Shock

A mere few seconds passed. Another wolf died by Jian Chen's hands, while countless others were being injured.

The cowering Liang Xiaole didn't hear Tie Ta's or Jian Chen's screams of pain at all. All she could hear was the howling of the Blue Wolves mixed in with whimpers. Because of her curiosity, she fought her fear and looked down on the ground, and her eyes grew wide in shock. She couldn't believe that Jian Chen and Tie Ta were still fighting the Blue Wolves, and she was shocked speechless.

Every single swing from Tie Ta's axe was capable of smashing a wolf into the air with ease. No wolf was able to get close to him because of that, and most of the Blue Wolves were covered with frightening wounds that had covered their entire bodies with blood. Jian Chen, on the other hand, was moving rapidly between the wolves and attacking them from every direction. Whenever he thrust his iron rod forward, another wolf would be riddled with wounds. His movements were too fast for Liang Xiaole to follow; the only thing she could see was a constant blurs.

She had never experienced such a hair raising bloody spectacle like the one below, but on the outside, her face had already started to regain some color. However, her body had not yet stopped trembling. After all, it was her first time seeing such a bloody mess, and no matter who it was, a person wouldn't be able to take in a sight like this easily their first time.

At that moment, a Blue Wolf took advantage of Tie Ta's lack of attention, and jumped at his shoulder. Using its strong teeth, it bit

deeply down on his shoulder and blood started to flow freely from the wound.

The acute pain caused Tie Ta's face to darken as he looked at the Blue Wolf biting at his shoulder. Tie Ta's eye blinked in pain as he looked at the Blue Wolf with a fierce glare. Dropping his battleaxe, his right hand grabbed onto the wolf's head, and with his monstrous strength, he ripped the wolf off his shoulder, leaving behind deep incisions in his skin.

Tie Ta grabbed onto the wolf's snout with both hands, and the veins in his arms swelled up with his muscles. With a furious roar, his hands gripped onto the yelping wolf and tore its head from its body. At the same time, blood splattered everywhere onto Tie Ta, dyeing him blood red.

Tie Ta's act of strength caused the surrounding wolves to cower in fear, as they watched Tie Ta hold onto the two halves of the wolf's carcass.

But Tie Ta didn't plan to let the wolves get away. Dropping the body, he picked up his battleaxe and sliced down onto another wolf's head.

The wolf tilted its head and dodged Tie Ta's battleaxe. Bringing its head up towards the sky, it let out a great howl before launching itself at him.

Hearing the howl, all of the wolves had their fear dispelled, as they instantly charged at Tie Ta.

Tie Ta sent a kick towards the abdomen of a wolf, sending it flying through the air. The sharp blade of his battleaxe cut into the neck of the wolf. Leaving behind a trail of blood, the wolf flew backwards like a rocket.

After his battleaxe had chopped through the head of a wolf, Tie Ta stopped where he stood. He brandished his battleaxe in a menacing way for the other wolves to see.

“Peng!” A wolf was too late in dodging and was hit by Tie Ta’s battleaxe. The wolf was split in two as it gave one last final howl.

After being injured, it looked as if Tie Ta became even stronger. In a flash, he had already killed 2 wolves.

Jian Chen, on the other hand, was still wrestling fiercely with the wolves. Suddenly, a wolf jumped from above, down onto Jian Chen.

Jian Chen immediately turned around and glared at the incoming wolf with his flashing eyes. The iron rod in his hand shot forth like lightning and stabbed deep into the wolf’s abdomen, piercing its heart. The moment he felt the rod stop, he immediately pulled it out and then moved away from his position.

The moment he left from his spot, the group of Blue Wolves immediately lunged at him.

The wolf that had been skewered in the heart whimpered as it gave its final breath, and fell down to the ground, spasming before finally becoming still.

The battle persisted for some time, and as time passed, the amount of Blue Wolves that had died by the hands of Jian Chen and Tie Ta grew larger and larger. Gradually, the pressure on the two boys reduced, as the number of Blue Wolves dwindled.

Jian Chen pulled out his iron rod from another wolf's throat; he had already killed over 10 Blue Wolves, yet his clothes were relatively unstained by the blood.

Jian Chen looked to Tie Ta only to see 7 or 8 Blue Wolves left; however, each of the 8 wolves were already bloody, as if they had been bathed in blood. His already ragged clothing was becoming even worse, and was almost like a strip of cloth now. His clothes were no longer protecting his body, and instead revealed his chest underneath. Even the trousers had rips in parts, with blood dripping from the wounds beneath it.

Without any hesitation, Jian Chen rushed towards Tie Ta and immediately started to fight off the 8 wolves with his iron rod.

Because Tie Ta had gave the wolves many heavy injuries in a long battle, the wolves were all exhausted beyond relief, so Jian Chen's job was relatively easy. Without expending much energy, he ended their lives by accurately piercing each of the wolves' throats.

After the invasion of the pack of wolves, even Jian Chen couldn't

help but breathe hard. Even though he was not weak at all, he had used up the majority of his energy to fight against the pack of wolves.

Tie Ta let out a long sigh as he looked at the pile of dead bodies around him. On his face was a happy smile; although they had just fought a long and hard battle, he didn't show a single trace of exhaustion. Instead, his fighting spirit was awakened.

“Changyang Xiang Tian, let's kill the rest of the Class 1 Magical Beasts.” Tie Ta laughed. In his lifetime, he had never killed a Class 1 Magical Beast before, so it was natural that he was excited.

Jian Chen smiled as well before looking at the wounds on Tie Ta, “You're hurt, how bad is it?”

Tie Ta looked down on his body to inspect his wounds before saying, “It's no problem. Although the bites hurt, they're mostly superficial wounds. Hehe, my skin has been thick since I was small, so regular beasts could never bite me before.”

Jian nodded his head in understanding with a thoughtful face. He knew about Tie Ta's strength and vitality first hand. Tie Ta was even stronger than a steel bar, so the Blue Wolves must've been ferocious to bite through his skin.

“Ah, that's right, Changyang Xiang Tian, are you hurt?” Tie Ta asked with concern as he looked at Jian Chen.

Jian Chen shook his head, “Don’t worry, the wolves didn’t hurt me at all.” He shifted his stare to the tall grass and said loudly, “Haven’t you seen enough, how long do you plan on hiding there?”

Hearing Jian Chen, Tie Ta went blank for a second as he was puzzled by what Jian Chen was saying. But he soon figured it out and immediately grabbed onto his battleaxe with both his hands.

“Who’s hiding over? Hurry up and come out otherwise I’ll chop you in half!” Tie Ta yelled.

As Tie Ta spoke, the tall grass rustled before them as four figures leapt out in front of Tie Ta and Jian Chen.

Seeing the four shadows jump out, Tie Ta immediately went on the defensive, while Jian Chen didn’t move a muscle except for a small smile on his face. Although they couldn’t see the appearances of the four due to the darkness, but Jian Chen had long since guessed their identities.

When the four shadows reached 2 meters away from Jian Chen, they suddenly stopped. Jian Chen could finally see their faces clearly; two of them were middle aged men while there was an elder and a 30 year old female. All four of them had a look of astonishment and were stupefied as if they saw an inconceivable event.

“Honorable teachers, so it was you.” Tie Ta finally recognized the four people and cried out in surprise.

The four people quickly regained their composure, but their eyes still revealed traces of shock.

“Changyang Xiang Tian, no wonder there are rumors about you being able to beat a Saint. I didn’t think too much about it at first, but after seeing this, the rumors have to have some sort of truth to them. For a single person to use a corroded iron rod to kill dozens of Class 1 Magical beasts, even Saints who condensed their Saint Weapons wouldn’t be able to replicate this easily.” The elder said with a laugh as he praised Jian Chen.

Jian Chen laughed and said, “Honored teacher gives this one too much praise. My strength isn’t as strong as you think; the wolves may have been Class 1 Magical Beasts, but their attack power wasn’t that high. If I had came across a stronger Class 1 Magical Beast, then I’m afraid I would’ve struggled a lot more.”

Hearing this, the elder looked at Jian Chen appreciatively before looking at Tie Ta with a laugh, “Tie Ta, your strength is also very strong, it’s no wonder the headmaster noticed you and took you in as an apprentice.”

Tia Ta scratched his head with a modest smile, but he didn’t know what to say in response to that.

“Elder Yun, it would appear that we came here for nothing. These two are absolutely abnormal in strength, nothing in the 2nd region would be a match for them.” Said the 30 year old woman.

The other 3 bitterly smiled as they listened to her. When they had

heard the howls of the wolves, they naturally knew that a student was in danger. For that reason alone they had all rushed towards the howls at the fastest speed possible to rescue them. On the way, each one of them prayed that the students would be able to hold on for as long as possible, but when they had arrived, they were subjected to an inconceivable sight. Two students who weren't at the Saint level had been able to fend off 20 or so Blue Wolves without trouble. In the end, they had been able to slaughter all 20 of them, and none of the 4 could believe their eyes at this end result.

Chapter 38: Liang Xiaole

“Oh, by the way, Changyang Xiang Tian, how did you detect us?” A middle aged man asked, his tone full of curiosity.

The other three teachers were curious to know as well as they stared at Jian Chen. The four of them were extremely interested in knowing how they were detected while hiding in the tall grass because they had not made a single sound or made any movement, so there was no way that they would have been noticed by Jian Chen.

Jian Chen laughed and said, “I had found out the moment the honorable teachers arrived.”

“What! You found out the moment we arrived? How is that possible?” The woman cried out in disbelief.

The other 3 people couldn't believe what Jian Chen said either.

Jian Chen opened his mouth, “While I was fighting the pack of wolves, I was still paying attention to my surroundings. Otherwise, we might have been subjected to random attacks from someone else; how would I dare lose track of what was happening around me at such a crucial point?”

Hearing this, the four teachers nodded, approving of what Jian Chen had just said.

Jian Chen continued to explain, “The honorable teachers didn’t make a single sound at all, but when you arrived I saw a bunch of obvious movements, so I found out since the very beginning.”

Hearing this, the four people realized their mistakes as the elder sighed in admiration, “Amazing, just amazing! Changyang Xiang Tian, I really have no other choice but to admire you. And to think that when I was your age, I was nowhere near the level you are now.” The elder then paused before saying, “Since you students aren’t in any danger, then we’ll take our leave now, after all, there are still students to save.” Although the elder had said that, he looked as if he was reluctant to leave.

“Please wait!” Jian Chen suddenly cried out towards the four teachers. Pointing at Liang Xiaole who was still hiding in the tree, he said, “Honored teacher, could you please help escort this student out? She doesn’t have the courage to stay here any longer.”

The teacher frowned as he thought about it, “This won’t be a problem, but even if she hands over two Class 1 Monster Cores, this will still be considered as a loss. After all, she didn’t stay here for all 3 days.”

“No, I won’t leave, I’ll definitely stay here for all 3 days.” Liang Xiaole said from the treetop as she dropped 5 or 6 meters down onto the ground. In one long stride she went over to where Jian Chen was.

“Hey, these four teachers can take you out of this forest so you won’t have to worry about magical beasts hurting you. Why don’t you want to go home?” Tie Ta was rather discontent, since Liang

Xiaole was really too cowardly. The moment she saw a magical beast she cried out loud; this really annoyed Tia Ta...

Liang Xiaole looked at Tie Ta timidly and whispered, “I don’t want to go.”

“Could it be you’re no longer afraid of magical beasts?” Tie Ta asked curiously.

“I am!”

“So you’re scared after all, then why don’t you want to get out of here?”

“Because you two are still here.”

With such a straightforward answer, Tie Ta couldn’t find a response.

Jian Chen looked at Liang Xiaole helplessly before trying to persuade her, “Liang Xiaole, you should go with the teachers, the magical beasts in this forest are many, and so there’s no guarantee that we can protect you.”

Liang Xiaole’s face became miserable as she realized that she would need to depend on Jian Chen. Imploring, she said, “Senior, please let me go with you, this was my first time seeing a magical beast and the first time I’ve been here. That’s why I was scared initially. But I guarantee you, the next time we come across a

magical beast, I won't cry out loud." After experiencing Jian Chen's and Tie Ta's strengths, Liang Xiaole wouldn't have to worry about getting into any trouble with those two around. Plus, Liang Xiaole had clearly that the four teachers all said that the 2nd region of the forest had nothing that they couldn't handle. So with such good protection, there was no way she would give up that easily.

Jian Chen suddenly felt a headache coming. Liang Xiaole was a pampered noble since birth, so she would definitely be a burden to them. When they battled any magical beasts in the future, they would have to look after her as well.

"Changyang Xiang Tian, with you and Tie Ta, there are no magical beasts in the 2nd region that can pose a threat to you. so you might as well take her along. Students should look out for one another. And besides, for you two, this shouldn't even be considered a test anymore." Laughed the middle-aged woman.

Jian Chen inwardly sighed in exasperation. Since even the teachers wanted Liang Xiaole to tag along, he couldn't find any reasons to object.

Although Jian Chen was giving in, Tie Ta was still not satisfied, but he didn't say anything. After this first day, he had already started to see Jian Chen as the pillar of the team. Whatever his decision was, Tie Ta would not object to it. Jian Chen's mind was better at strategy and he had more experience dealing with beasts than Tie Ta's. So it could be said that no matter what, Tie Ta would concede to Jian Chen.

After the four teachers left, Jian Chen and Tie Ta didn't pay attention to Liang Xiaole and instead went to the dead bodies of the Blue Wolves. Since it was over 20 Class 1 Monster Cores, they wouldn't dare to squander this.

Because the monster cores of the Blue Wolves were in their heads, Tie Ta and Jian Chen were trying to find a way to extract them. They definitely needed to strike and break at the part of the head where the monster core was, so Liang Xiaole's face went pale as she observed them. Perhaps Liang Xiaole had changed only slightly, it was almost as if she no longer felt out of her league. With great difficulty, she was able to quell the cowardly nature within her, as she diligently watched Jian Chen and Tie Ta work at extracting the cores. It was almost as if she was learning from the experience.

The night passed quickly and peacefully after the initial Blue Wolves raid.

As the dawn sun slowly rose over the edge of the horizon, the cross-legged Jian Chen finished his cultivation, and stood up to stretch.

Just as Jian Chen stood up, he heard Tie Ta start to awaken as well. He followed Jian Chen up, and although the two were in the middle of cultivating, they were still aware of their surroundings. They had put up a guard while cultivating, and as long as the wind blew through the tall grass, then the pair would be able to track anyone.

"Tie Ta, go find some dry branches for the fire. I'll go fetch the

magical beast meat; it's about time we prepare some breakfast," Jian Chen said.

"Oh!" Without any objects, Tie Ta turned around and entered the forest to search for some dry firewood.

Soon after, Tie Ta carried over a pile of dry firewood. At the same time, Jian Chen had prepared a huge chunk of bloody magical beast meat from the Blue Wolves that had been killed by them last night.

Since there were no sources of water in the area, the magical beast meat was not washed. Instead, it was directly skewered with some sticks, and was placed above the bonfire to begin roasting.

Not long after, the roasted magical beast meat began to emit a fragrant aroma. Although it did not have any spices, the quality of the magical beast meat was originally high. Moreover, the higher the class of the magical beast, the more delicious its meat would taste, and the more beneficial it was to the body. It was said that a Class 5 Magical Beast's meat could even boost one's strength.

Perhaps because she could smell the magical beast meat's fragrance, Liang Xiaole awoke from her nap on top of the tree, and jumped down. The 5-6 meter height was nothing to Liang Xiaole, who had reached the 8th Saint Force layer.

"Wa...it smells so good." Liang Xiaole bounced over to the bonfire, and seeing the golden magical beast meat dripping in rich oils, she could not help but swallow hard. Although she had eaten

many exotic delicacies, she had never eaten wild game like this before. After all, eating the same type of meat for so long, one would obviously think of anything else as more appetizing, even if it was just some cabbage.

Tie Ta shot a dissatisfied glance at Liang Xiaole, and murmured in a quiet voice, “Last night you were crying so loudly; now you’ve forgotten about it all so quickly. I hope that when we encounter more magical beasts later, you won’t start wailing again.”

Tie Ta’s voice was extremely soft and unclear. Most likely, aside from himself, nobody would have been able to clearly hear what he had whispered, even Jian Chen.

Liang Xiaole looked at Tie Ta in curiosity, “Tie Ta, what are you saying?” Last night, the four teachers had called out Jian Chen’s and Tie Ta’s names, so Liang Xiaole had already learned their identities.

“Ah, nothing.” Tie Ta waved his hands as if he was feeling guilty for something.

Liang Xiaole didn’t pay any mind to it. She gazed at Jian Chen and Tie Ta and smiled, “No wonder you two are so powerful that you can kill 20 Class 1 Magical Beasts. It turns out that you two are actually Tie Ta and Changyang Xiang Tian. The fact that I was able to meet you two was really great luck.” The current Liang Xiaole seemed to be an entirely different person from the person yesterday evening. After only a single night, she seemed to already have pushed yesterday’s events to the back of her mind. Now, her face didn’t show a single trace of fear and dread from the thought

of magical beasts.

Jian Chen lifted the well cooked magical beast meat, and then ripped off a section, throwing it over to Liang Xiaole, asking, “There are a lot of magical beasts in this forest. Moreover, if we don’t stay for 3 more days, then we definitely cannot leave. Aren’t you afraid?”

Liang Xiaole accepted the piece of magical beast meat, and while she lightly chewed it, she said, “Although I’m still scared, I believe that I will eventually get used to it. In addition, the two of you are not much older than me, yet you both faced those fierce Blue Wolves last night without a trace of fear. The two of you even managed to slaughter all of them. This is much more impressive than those other boys. Hmph, those boys were so useless; the five of them together couldn’t defeat a single magical beast. In the end, their incompetence forced me to get separated from my sisters.”

Liang Xiaole suddenly stood up, and loudly declared, “I’ve decided now. I will definitely use these next two days to properly learn from you two seniors.”

Hearing this, Jian Chen inwardly nodded to himself. Liang Xiaole’s statement had already gained Jian Chen’s approval. Although she was timid, and was extremely afraid of magical beasts, that wasn’t important. The most important factor was she was willing to change her ways, and to learn more.

After all, nobody was born with the ability to do and understand everything. All knowledge retained is a result of one going out to learn it. Of course, Jian Chen was an exception.

On the other hand, Liang Xiaole was born as the eldest daughter in a noble household. She had been spoiled since she was young, and had grown up in a sheltered environment. Obviously, she had never experienced any hardships. Thus, it was to be expected that she would inevitably be frightened during her first encounter with a savage magical beast. After all, this was the equivalent to an average person meeting a ghost for the first time; anyone would feel fear.

Chapter 39: Plans

After eating breakfast, Jian Chen and Tie Ta both grabbed their respective weapons before continuing on with their journey. However, trailing behind them was the dainty Liang Xiaole, who was empty handed. She looked around herself carefully due to her own weapon being long gone after she had been separated from her group and chased through the forest.

Tie Ta lifted his battleaxe; his clothes were already swapped out. This time, he was wearing Blue Wolf leather along with some grassroot to hold it together. His academy uniform was long since torn apart from yesterday's battle to the point where he couldn't wear it anymore.

In the blink of an eye, another day came and went. By looking at the profits, they weren't as good as the first day, but they weren't bad either. In total, they had killed 70 magical beasts, making Liang Xiaole feel shocked.

On this second day, Liang Xiaole went through a major change. Ever since the spectacle with the Blue Wolves, her entire personality had transformed. At the very least, whenever she saw a magical beast, she wouldn't scream in terror anymore. And whenever Tie Ta and Jian Chen would slaughter any enemy magical beast, she didn't even flinch at the sight of the blood. She was slowly starting to adapt to her situation..

Not only that, but in the same day, she had unexpectedly learned much about the dangers of the forest and gained knowledge pertaining to them. Her capacity for learning was extremely high,

and even Jian Chen couldn't help but admire it. Of course, what was important was looking at her talent for cultivation, since in the Tian Yuan continent, one's own strength was what dictated who they were over everything else.

Liang Xiaole was also extraordinarily smart. Although she wasn't very strong, she definitely didn't cause trouble for Tie Ta or Jian Chen, nor was she a burden like the two had previously thought she would be. She would stay behind the two, and whenever the two fought against a magical beast, she would stand far away so that she wouldn't get caught up in it.

After that day, both Jian Chen or Tie Ta had a new levels of respect for Liang Xiaole, and no longer belittled her in their hearts.

Later that night, the three of them sat by the campfire to count the pile of monster cores.

“Dear seniors, have you two really not condensed your Saint Weapons and become Saints yet?” Liang Xiaole asked as she stared at them with her bright eyes. What a strange question. Her clothes were already filled with holes from the trees and thorns that stabbed and cut into her, and her pretty face resembled a kitty from the whisker like cuts. Since there were no water sources, she had to rely on drinking the blood of the magical beasts in order to stave off the thirst, and so there was no way she could wash off the filth on her face.

“If we were Saints, why would I be using this axe?” Tie Ta looked at his bundled up and heavily nicked battleaxe with no small amount of dissatisfaction.

After continued usage with Tie Ta's strength, the giant battleaxe had finally worn out; the previously sharp edge was now becoming blunt after use. Even the previously sharp point on Jian Chen's corroded iron rod had nearly become flat.

Liang Xiaole's face was full of admiration as she stared at the two, "You two are really amazing; you're not even at the Saint level yet and you can easily kill Class 1 Magical Beasts. In my opinion, once you reach the Saint level, you will be able to kill Class 2 Magical Beasts with ease."

Jian Chen shook his head, "How would it be easy? These are magical beasts that were bred by the academy, so they have weak attack power. When we meet magical beasts with a stronger attack, then we will definitely have a harder time with it."

Liang Xiaole nodded her head and said grimly, "That's right. I've heard my dad say before that there are some amazing Class 1 Magical Beasts that can spit out some low level spells with a high amount of attack power. They're so strong, that some normal Saints aren't powerful enough to beat them."

Jian Chen looked at Tie Ta, who was focusing on the campfire, "Tie Ta, right now there isn't anything in the 2nd region that could stand a chance against us, so I want to move to the 3rd region. How do you feel about that?"

Tie Ta gave it some thought before saying, "Right, the 2nd region is already very easy for us since there isn't a challenge anymore."

Okay then, Changyang Xiang Tian, I'll enter the 3rd region with you. It's time to see how strong the Class 2 Magical Beasts really are."

Hearing the two talk, Liang Xiaole who was sitting nearby said, "It can't be, you two haven't reached the Saint level and you still want to enter the 3rd region to fight Class 2 Magical Beasts? Without a Saint Weapon, there's no guarantee of survival, and the skin of a Class 2 Magical Beast is stronger than that of Class 1 Magical Beasts, so it's even tougher. You two only have a worn battleaxe and corroded iron rod, so that'll make killing even harder. Not only that, but the environment in the 3rd region isn't good at all; I've heard that there's even a marsh filled with poisonous vipers inside. There's a high chance you of losing your lives in the dangerous 3rd region."

Tie Ta laughed as he looked at my weapon, "That's right, Changyang Xiang Tian, over these past 2 days, our weapons have been in constant use, and my battleaxe has lost its sharpness. Even your own iron rod is almost flat, so it would be hard to kill Class 2 Magical Beasts."

Jian Chen laughed, "There's no rush, there are still plenty of students in the 2nd region. We still haven't met with other students because we're still far away from them. We should return tomorrow, and exchange monster cores for weapons, since the students would be definitely interested."

"Yea, that's a good idea," Tie Ta nodded in agreement.

Jian Chen continued, "Liang Xiaole, let's split up tomorrow. If

you're with other students, then you should be able to safely pass through your last day. After all, anyone who has been able to endure 2 days here must have some real skills."

Liang Xiaole nodded wordlessly. Her expression was a bit disappointed; after all, she also knew of the 3rd region's dangers. She was unsure if Jian Chen and Tie Ta would be able to go against those magical beasts. If she continued along with them, even if Jian Chen and Tie Ta agreed to let her accompany them, she would only be a baggage that would hold them down.

The night passed without incident. Soon, the sky began to brighten. Jian Chen and Tie Ta finished their night of cultivation, and began to prepare breakfast.

After the three of them had finished eating, the sun had already gradually began to rise into the sky. They continued on their way; however, this time, they had begun walking back in the direction they had come from.

After two days of battles, the two boys had already become extremely skilled at sensing and avoiding danger, so it didn't take long for them to arrive at their destination.

Under a large tree, nine students in tattered clothing were tiredly sitting underneath, catching their breaths. They were a group of commoners mixed with some nobles. At the moment, their clothes were ripped all over the place, with some dried out bloodstains covering them as well. They also sported injuries on their bodies, and not far from them was a carcass of a magical beast lying on the ground.

“Everyone, hold on for just a bit longer. This is already the last day. After this day ends, we can leave,” a commoner student breathlessly said.

“It’s unfortunate that we don’t have enough Magic Stones yet, we still need five more. It looks like we still have to slaughter five more magical beasts to pass.” said a young noble. Originally, the nobles hadn’t been willing to stay together with the commoners, but after encountering the savage magical beast, they were immediately scared out of their wits. Faced with life or death, who would care about people’s statuses? Protecting oneself was the greater priority. Thus, the few nobles had gradually decided to join the commoner students. After all, everyone knew there was strength in numbers. In addition, perhaps because the commoners had been raised in harsher environments, they did not show any signs of retreating when faced with savage magical beasts. This changed the arrogant nobles’ views of the commoners. Eventually, they had all slowly become friends.

Moreover, after constantly fighting against magical beasts, the nine of them had become more comfortable working together. Eventually, they had formed an unexpected bond that held all of them together with close relationships.

At that moment, there was a movement in the grass off in the distance.

“Everyone, be careful. A magical beast is attacking.” A student immediately reacted and loudly warned the others. Instantly, the nine of them stood up and stared with wary expressions towards

the direction the sound had come from.

The grass swayed vigorously. Eventually, they saw a figure wearing beast leather swinging a large hatchet around, cutting down the weeds in his way. Right after the group noticed him, they saw that there were two other figures following behind him as well. Although their clothes were tattered, it was obvious that they were all wearing the Kargath Academy uniforms.

Perhaps because they had been traveling through the lush forest for so long, but their faces were dark, and they had random twigs in their hair. Only their general facial structures could be seen; their appearances were already indistinguishable.

Realizing that the figures were people and not magical beasts, the nine students immediately sighed in relief, and smiles slowly spread across their faces. At this point, if they could get those new people to join them, then the overall strength of their group would definitely rise. Hunting magical beasts would be much easier. In addition, all of them were smart enough to realize that these people who had stayed here for 3 days must be quite powerful.

Of course, these three people were Jian Chen, Tie Ta, and Liang Xiaole. After backtracking for half a day, they had finally discovered a group of people.

Since it was already the last of the three days, there weren't many people remaining in the forest. Most of them had already ran away, and so there were very few students that were still here.

When Liang Xiaole's gaze rested on a gorgeous girl standing amongst the group of nine, she showed a pleasantly surprised expression.

“Ah! Li Sha!” Liang Xiaole shouted out with an extremely excited voice, as she immediately flew towards the gorgeous girl.

Hearing a slightly familiar voice, the girl blinked her large, shining eyes, and gazed at Liang Xiaole, who was running towards her, in slight confusion. Currently, Liang Xiaole's face was covered with quite a bit of dirt, making her look like a calico cat. Even if this girl called Li Sha did know Liang Xiaole well, it was difficult for her to recognize Liang Xiaole with her current appearance.

Liang Xiaole rushed to the girl, and excitedly hugged her tightly. In a tone filled with joy, she said, “Li Sha, I hadn't imagined that I would've been able to see you again here. I thought you had already left the forest.”

Hearing the overly familiar voice, the girl named Li Sha finally recognized who Liang Xiaole was. Pleasantly surprised, she said, “You...you're Xiao Le.”

Chapter 40: Exchanging Weapons

“That’s right, Li Sha. I’m Xiao Le,” Liang Xiaole spoke, her voice dripping with emotion as she confirmed her friend’s words.

“Xiao Le, it really is you, that’s great! I thought that you had already escaped from this place, I never would’ve imagined that I would see you here.” Li Sha, the girl in front of Liang Xiaole, was just as happy, and continued to hug her once-thought-to-be-lost friend.

The two girls joined in a tight embrace, Li Sha was laughing out loud “Liang Xiaole, I didn’t think we’d be able to meet again after losing each other in the forest This really makes me happy!”

“Hello,” said a youth wearing clothing as tattered as the other two. “I’m so glad to have met the two of you here. Um... How should I put this? I’m not sure if you want, but would you be willing to join our group? If you do, I can certainly guarantee that together our group will be much stronger and consequently will make hunting magical beasts a lot easier. And besides, danger lurks around every corner in these woods, it’d be better if we worked together.” His tone was first likeable as he walked up to Jian Chen and Tie Ta, but as soon as he saw that Jian Chen’s clothes were entirely crimson with fresh blood, he couldn’t help but express shock. The youth seriously doubted that the blood was all from Jian Chen, because anyone who lost that much blood would definitely be beyond weak. There was no way such a person could firmly stand there, with such a sharp look.

Jian Chen shook his head, politely refusing, “I’m sorry, but we

were just planning to leave this place, so we cannot join your group.”

The youth had an expression of regret on his face; however, he still reconciled, “My two fellow students, although the magical beasts here are quite formidable, we have strength in numbers. As long as everyone is willing to work together, even if we meet two magical beasts at once, they definitely won’t pose any threat. If everyone hands over two Class 1 Magic Stones, I believe that we will soon gather enough.” The youth continued to press the issue. His gaze was quite sharp, and it was obvious that he had already realized that Jian Chen’s and Tie Ta’s strengths were above average.

“We really do not have any other options. The two of us have already decided to leave here, so we cannot join your group. Please forgive us.” In order to reciprocate the formal request, Jian Chen’s tone was just as amiable.

Hearing that Jian Chen and Tie Ta were set on leaving, the youth could not help but be disappointed. He really could not understand why, although only one out of the three days was remaining, the two people refused to stay. As long as they paid up two Class 1 Magic Stones, they’d be able to successfully join. Yet, Jian Chen and Tie Ta still chose to leave the area. Could it be that the two of them really wanted to pass up such an opportunity?

The youth thought that Jian Chen and Tie Ta had given up and wanted to leave the forest. He couldn’t have ever imagined that their “leaving” actually meant leaving the second region to enter the third region, not actually leaving the forest.

At that moment, Tie Ta glanced at the battleaxe that one of the students was holding. His eyes lit up in happiness, and he directly walked over to the student with an intrepid air, and asked in a muffled voice, “Hey, if I give you two Class 1 Magic Stones, will you trade your battleaxe for them?” Asking this, Tie Ta pulled out the battleaxe on his back with one hand, and used his other hand to retrieve from his Space Belt, two Class 1 Magic Stones that were still covered in fresh blood.

It was at that moment that the group of people realized that the large battleaxe in Tie Ta’s hands was covered in fresh blood. The entire surface had been dyed crimson. The appearance alone was beyond shocking; it looked as if was a murder weapon that had been constantly doused by blood. What was even more disbelieving was that the battleaxe made of firm metal as hard as steel, had already been completely riddled with cracks. Moreover, some parts of the blade were even bent.

Most people would not be able to believe this sight; they had all assumed that when Tie Ta had chosen his weapon, it had been like this from the beginning. There was no way they could’ve imagined that all of the axe’s damages had been caused by Tie Ta himself.

The student with the intrepid air looked at the beaten up axe in front of him, which was so red that it looked like it had been made from blood, and was at a loss for a moment. When the other students heard Tie Ta’s request, their eyes immediately lit up, and looked at the intrepid student with looks of envy, as if they were about to offer up their own weapons to trade with Tie Ta.

“My fellow student, I can exchange this sword of mine with you.” A student carrying a giant one-handed sword walked over to Tie Ta and said with a smile.

Hearing, Tie Ta looked down at the battleaxe that was in his grip, shook his head and spoke, “No need, I still prefer to use the battleaxe.”

Hearing this, the male suddenly had a face full of disappointment. At this moment, getting two Class 1 Magic Stones was more important than anything else. Not to mention him, if the others could, they would also be willing to trade their weapons to Tie Ta for two Class 1 Magic Stones. Even if their weapons were worth more than two Class 1 Magic Stones, they would still not hesitate.

The tall and sturdy male was not dumb. After considering it for a bit, he happily handed over his battleaxe to fulfill the exchange. Who would be willing to refuse such a profitable exchange?

After the exchange was completed, the group of people began to look at Tie Ta with a different light. A few of the smarter students had already connected the battleaxe's battered state to the possibility that Tie Ta had caused it. From this point, they could directly confirm Tie Ta's extraordinary strength. Otherwise, why else would he just casually hand over two Class 1 Magic Stones? This place wasn't like outside; before entering the forest, the school administration had already confiscated any devices the students had. They had even patted the student's bodies down to thoroughly check. There was absolutely no way the Magic Stone could've been brought in from the outside. The only way that

Magic Stones could be gained inside the forest was to hunt magical beasts.

However, there was just one thing the people couldn't understand. If Tie Ta and Jian Chen had the strengths to hunt magical beasts, why didn't they want to stay in the forest for all 3 days? After all, the academy's rules clearly dictated that they could only pass if they stayed for 3 days and paid up two Class 1 Magic Stones. If only one was fulfilled, they wouldn't pass.

“Could it be that they don't care about the rewards? Or perhaps they had lied about leaving, and actually just didn't want to kill magical beasts together with the few of us?” Everyone could not help but think of these possibilities. When considering these thoughts, a few of the people immediately began to gaze at Jian Chen and Tie Ta with expressions of discontent.

Jian Chen did not pay any mind to their expressions. He looked at the Liang Xiaole and the girl she was hugging, and said, “Liang Xiaole, since you've found your friend now, why don't you just stick with this group? They have more people too.”

Liang Xiaole slowly separated from the girl, and looked back at Jian Chen and Tie Ta. She nodded, “Then you two have to be careful.”

Afterwards, Tie Ta and Jian Chen didn't bother wasting any time, and immediately left the area.

After the two of them had left, the girl called Li Sha asked in a

resentful tone, “Xiao Le, who are they? They’re so arrogant that they don’t even think they should be with us.”

“Li Sha, you’re mistaken. It’s not that they don’t want to be together with you guys; they really do want to leave here.” Liang Xiaole explained.

“That can’t be!” Li Sha exclaimed in disbelief. “Li Sha, the fact that they could casually give away a Class 1 Magic Stone means that the two of them have the strength to kill magical beasts. Plus, when they were trading the two magical stones away for the weapon, it was obvious that they were planning on continuing to fight. How could they possibly be leaving this place?”

“That’s right, Xiao Le, you’ve been tricked by them.” A youth standing on the side added.

Liang Xiaole smiled, “They’re definitely leaving this place, but they didn’t explain it clearly to you guys. They want to leave the second region, and move on to the third region to hunt the Class 2 Magical Beasts.”

“What! Liang Xiaole, what kind of joke are you trying to pull? It’s impossible for the two of them to go to the third region to hunt Class 2 Magical Beasts!”

“Could it be that their strengths have already reached Saint level? But that can’t be right either. If they had reached the Saint level, then there would be no need to change weapons.”

“Those two are really reckless, to want to go to the third region.”

“They’re definitely seeking death.”

.....

Immediately following Liang Xiaole’s words, the group of people immediately broke into chaos as they began to discuss in a frenzy amongst each other. None of them thought that Jian Chen and Tie Ta would be able to survive the third region.

Li Sha pulled at Liang Xiaole’s hands, and in a clearly disbelieving tone, she asked, “Xiao Le, they aren’t really crazy enough to run over to the third region, right?”

Liang Xiaole nodded, “That’s right, they really did go to the third region. Li Sha, you cannot underestimate the two of them, they’re really formidable.” Liang Xiaole said with conviction.

“Could it be that the two of them really are Saints?” Li Sha asked in shock. The school administration had clearly declared that all students that were Saints had to enter the third region. There was no way they could’ve appeared in the second region.

Liang Xiaole shook her head, “No, their powers haven’t reached Saint level yet, because they still haven’t condensed their Saint Weapons.”

Hearing this, Li Sha’s shock grew even more pronounced.

Without reaching Saint level, surviving in the second region was already difficult enough, let alone being in the third region. After all, the magical beasts in the third region were Class 2 Magical Beasts, which weren't any small amount stronger than Class 1 Magical Beasts. The two classes could not even be compared.

Li Sha and Liang Xiaole were close friends. Therefore, Liang Xiaole didn't feel the need to hide anything from Li Sha. In a soft voice, she said, "Li Sha, I'll just tell you this. Yesterday, I personally witnessed the two of them kill 70+ magical beasts by themselves."

Li Sha was beyond shocked by this, as she exclaimed, "What! Xiao Le, are you joking? The two of them killed 70+ magical beasts by themselves in one day?" Li Sha was so astonished that she couldn't contain her voice. She had gradually become louder and louder, until the other 8 people were able to hear her quite clearly. In that instant, all of their expressions changed at the thought of Jian Chen and Tie Ta achieving what Liang Xiaole had said, and their expressions were beyond disbelief.

"Li Sha, what did you say? Which two people were able to kill 70+ Class 1 Magical Beasts in a day?" A youth asked. He could not accept the possibility that "the two people" were actually Jian Chen and Tie Ta, whom they had just met.

Li Sha tried to calm her breathing, and grasped at her chest before pointing to Liang Xiaole. In a trembling voice, she said, "Xiao Le said that she personally witnessed the two people just now kill 70+ magical beasts in one day." Li Sha's tone reflected the fact that she thought such a possibility was inconceivable.

Chapter 41: Flaming Cloud Beast

“It can’t be, Liang Xiaole, what you’re saying is ridiculous. Those two aren’t even Saints yet; to think they could kill over 70 Magical Beasts in a day? That’s impossible.” A youth with a pike said incredulously.

“That’s right, it’s too ridiculous. Even a Saint wouldn’t cut it; I think even a Great Saint wouldn’t be able to kill that many Class 1 Magical Beasts in a single day, let alone half. I doubt their Saint Force is that unlimited.” A bow wielding girl said with doubt.

At that moment, the youth that had invited Jian Chen and Tie Ta into the group said, “Liang Xiaole, do you know who they are? When did our Kargath Academy have such amazing people in it? They aren’t Saints, but to easily defeat Class 1 Magical Beasts? Just who are they?” Saying this, he seemed to have immediately realized something, as his face rapidly changed colors.

Liang Xiaole’s face looked proud as if she had done something honorable. With a laidback tone, she said, “I can tell you this: the one that just traded you a monster core for your battleaxe was the one that set the academy abuzz—Tie Ta: the headmaster’s apprentice. The other person is the Freshmen Ruler of the annual Freshmen Competition—Changyang Xiang Tian.”

Everyone cried out in alarm before talking amongst themselves in excitement.

“So it was those two abnormal people; no wonder their strength

was that strong.”

“It can’t be, it’s said that Tie Ta fought Lord Cheng to a standstill at the library...”

“That Changyang Xiang Tian was the one who beat the Saint Ka Di Yun in an intense duel. I was there watching the fight; Changyang Xiang Tian’s strength was really amazing.”

“I heard that outside the library, the middle ranked Saint Luo Jian wasn’t able to deal with Changyang Xiang Tian, and was even forced to use his Saint Weapon in the end.”

.....

Without the burden of having Liang Xiaole anymore, Tie Ta and Jian Chen’s speed had risen exponentially, and so the two soon reached the third region.

When they first entered the 3rd region, they initially saw no difference in the two regions. But the further they advanced, the more hellish it became. Compared to the 3rd region, the 2nd region could be called a paradise.

There were all sorts of magical beasts in the forest, and the land was full of swamps, so if one wasn’t careful, they would find themselves stuck deep inside the waters. However, most of the swamps were man-made, so they weren’t too deep. Otherwise, if no one came to rescue them, they wouldn’t be able to escape with

their lives.

Perhaps it was because of the ground, but there wasn't much grass in the 3rd region, so line of sight was much better than the 2nd region.

Jian Chen and Tie Ta cautiously trekked through the swamplands with a small amount of powder on them. This type of powder was a type of repellant that would prevent insects from biting them.

“Changyang Xiang Tian, it seems like you're familiar with the forest. Could it be you've been here before? How could you be this amazing?” Tie Ta said, while looking at the layer of green dust on his body.

Jian Chen chuckled and said, “I read up a lot of books in the library about various places, so my understanding of the forests is relatively high.”

“Ah, no wonder.” Tie Ta realized.

Right after Tie Ta spoke, Jian Chen's face stilled before becoming serious. At the same time, the ground began to shake, as if an earthquake was occurring.

But before Jian Chen could say anything, Tie Ta had already sprung into action, his new battleaxe coming to rest in both his hands.

Jian Chen glanced towards his left and spoke cautiously, “Tie Ta, be careful. This time it looks like we’ve come across a large magical beast.”

“Yea!” Tie Ta nodded his head as the expression on his face grew solemn. Because they were in the 3rd region, this wasn’t a Class 1 magical beast, but a Class 2 Magical Beast that was stronger than a Class 1 Magical Beast by many times over. It could fight against a Great Saint on even footing.

Although its attack power wasn’t all that strong yet, its strength still couldn’t be underestimated.

As the two of them nervously looked around, the magical beast finally came into view. Its entire body had red fur, and it spanned 3 meters tall and 5 meters wide. Protruding from its mouth, it had two long tusks, that looked as if they could penetrate through muscle with ease. If it weren’t for the fact that the magical beast had a short nose, then Jian Chen would have thought that this was an animal that he had met in his previous world—the elephant. But this magical beast was a lot bigger than the elephant.

“Tie Ta, be careful, this is the Class 2 Magical Beast—the Flaming Cloud Beast. It can spit out fire from its mouth and is quite hard to deal with.” Jian Chen uttered the magical beast’s name. Because he had read so many books in the library, he could recognize most magical beasts, and even knew of some of their special abilities.

Tie Ta only nodded, as he wordlessly focused all of his attention

on the Flaming Cloud Beast, ready to strike at any moment.

“Hou!” The gigantic Flaming Cloud Beast roared as it started to move each of its four hooves towards Jian Chen and Tie Ta. With each stamp on the ground, the earth would to shake.

Jian Chen’s eyes flashed in concentration, “I’ll attack it from the front; Tie Ta, you go around and attack it from behind.” Charging forward, he jumped into the air straight towards the Flaming Cloud Beast’s head.

The moment Jian Chen had moved, Tie Ta started to move as well, and circled around the beast to come towards its behind.

Standing on top of its head, Jian Chen let out a yell as his Saint Force gathered within his iron rod, before fiercely stabbing it into the head of the beast.

“Ding!” As if made of steel, the head of the Flaming Cloud Beast deflected Jian Chen’s iron rod. It had only left a shallow line on its head, unable to penetrate through its defense.

Jian Chen’s face changed into a grimace; although he knew the Flaming Cloud Beast had a strong defense, he hadn’t thought that it would be so strong that his iron rod could do no damage to it. He had used all of his strength in that attack, and it had unexpectedly done virtually nothing.

“Ahe!” With a roar, Tie Ta jumped forward and used his

enormous strength to slash at the butt of the Flaming Cloud Beast with his battleaxe. However he didn't do any better than Jian Chen. Although his battleaxe had cut through the skin of the magical beast, it had done no damage at all.

Their attacks had evidently angered the Flaming Cloud Beast, because it roared in response. Whipping its head back and forth, it threw off Jian Chen, who had been standing on its head.

As Jian Chen flew through the air, he quickly readjusted himself. Using both of his feet to jump off a tree trunk, he flipped himself upright onto a nearby tree branch.

After throwing off Jian Chen, the Flaming Cloud Beast turned around and tried to bite into Tie Ta.

Tie Ta immediately leapt aside to avoid its mouth, and simultaneously swung his battleaxe into one of the giant tusks.

"Ding!" The battleaxe smashed against the tusk, breaking it off near the root. However, after the tusk was broken off, Tie Ta's battleaxe chipped off in several places as well.

"Hou!" The Flaming Cloud Beast roared in anger as it stampeded towards Tie Ta once more.

Tie Ta's eyes flashed dangerously as it watched the Flaming Cloud Beast charge towards him. Without bothering to dodge, Tie Ta dropped his battleaxe onto the ground and used both of his

hands to grab onto the remaining tusk and the root of the broken one, before pushing back at the monster, resulting in a deadlock.

At that moment, it was as if Tie Ta had turned into a fierce beast. Grunting out loud, his hands pushed against the Flaming Cloud Beast's tusks, as if trying to compare his strength to it.

Despite Tie Ta's heavenly strength, he was still a delicate tiny figure compared to the heavy and gigantic Flaming Cloud Beast. So even though his own strength wasn't lacking, he found himself being pushed backwards a large distance, his feet leaving behind two deep marks in the ground .

“Ah!” Tie Ta's eyes revealed a crazy look within them as he roared. The veins within his arms bulged as both of his arms swelled up in an instant, as he began to exert more force.

“Pa!” Another crisp sound was heard as the remaining tusk was snapped off by Tie Ta, causing the Flaming Cloud Beast to release a blood curling roar of pain.

Despite having used a good amount of his strength, Tie Ta was not yet satisfied, as he grabbed onto the freshly broken off tusk and used it to pierce it into the head of the Flaming Cloud Beast.

The tooth of the Flaming Cloud Beast was extraordinarily sharp, and was far stronger than Jian Chen's weapon. But despite its sharpness, it had only penetrated into the head by a tiny amount, causing a small amount of blood to spurt outwards.

Seeing Tie Ta use its own tusk to stab it, the Flaming Cloud Beast's eyes grew extremely red as it opened its mouth wide. With a loud roar, it unleashed a trail of fire that moved around, almost like a serpent emerging from its gaping jaws, with the intention of roasting Tie Ta alive. Instantly, the surrounding temperature had started to increase exponentially.

Sensing the astonishing heat radiate from the stream of fire, Tie Ta's expression immediately changed, as he desperately threw himself away from the attack. But despite his efforts he had not been able to dodge the attack of the fire serpent, and so his entire body caught on fire.

Seeing Tie Ta's body catch on fire, Jian Chen turned pale with fright. Immediately snapping off a thick tree branch, he jumped off against a tree trunk and sped towards the Tie Ta like a speeding bullet.

"Hou!" The Flaming Cloud Beast roared once more as it stamped towards the still burning Tie Ta. Opening its jaws wide, it tried to swallow him, not caring if he was on fire or not.

Just as the Flaming Cloud Beast was about to consume Tie Ta, Jian Chen had finally reached Tie Ta. Using both of his arms, Jian Chen waved the tree branch in his hand to drag Tie Ta a good 10 meters away from the jaws of the magical beast.

Jian Chen quickly dislodged Tie Ta from the branch and without caring for the fire's heat, he quickly extended his arms and tore away at the wolf leather Tie Ta was wearing.

Because the fire had caught onto the fur of the wolf leather, the moment it was removed from him, Tie Ta was no longer on fire. Tie Ta's tattered academy uniform was exposed underneath.

Tie Ta didn't bother to get up from the floor, but instead started to roll on the ground while complaining, "Hot, hot! I'm dying from the heat, it burns..." Seeing him complain like that, Jian Chen deduced that Tie Ta had not suffered any major harm. However, all of his hair had been burnt off, leaving him bald. Not a single hair remained; even his eyebrows and eyelashes had been burnt away!

Chapter 42: Roadside Robbery

“Tie Ta, are you alright?” Jian Chen asked in concern.

Tie Ta shook his head. He let out a long breath, and spoke in a muffled voice, “I’m fine, but the heat really got me; it was difficult to endure.”

“As long as you’re fine.” Jian Chen sighed in relief. When he saw that Tie Ta was engulfed in flames, Jian Chen had honestly felt quite concerned for Tie Ta’s well-being.

Suddenly, Jian Chen’s eyes hardened as he turned back to look at the lush tree. His eyes gleamed as his mouth also rose up to show a hint of a smile.

“Hong! Hong! Hong!”

The ground began to shake again as the Flaming Cloud Beast stamped towards Jian Chen. With each step it took, the earth trembled. The Flaming Cloud Beast kept breathing fire out of its mouth, almost as if it was excited.

Tie Ta’s face hardened as he stared at the approaching Flaming Cloud Beast, “Changyang Xiang Tian, this guy’s skin is fairly tough. How do we go about killing him?”

Jian Chen also looked at the beast with a grave face, “The Flaming Cloud Beast’s body is entirely covered by a strong layer of

skin. Unless we reach the level of Saints, our weapons will barely be able to slice apart its pelt. At the moment, our only chance is to attack through the Flaming Cloud Beast's eyes to stab its brain."

As Jian Chen trailed off, the Flaming Cloud Beast roared, and opened up its jaws to release another serpent fire.

Jian Chen and Tie Ta both dove towards the side to dodge it. Jian Chen tightly clenched the iron rod, as he cried out, "Tie Ta, distract it for me!"

"Don't worry, leave it to me!" Tie Ta picked up a nearby rock and threw it at the Flaming Cloud Beast, and ran towards the opposite direction.

The rock twirled in midair before hitting the Flaming Cloud Beast precisely on the spot where Tie Ta had broke off the tusk.

Since the spot was still tender for the Flaming Cloud Beast, its eyes turned red with bloodlust as it began to breath fire at Tie Ta once more.

Jian Chen watched as Tie Ta distracted the Flaming Cloud Beast. He gripped the iron rod so hard that it had began to deform. Quickly running forward, he dashed towards the head of the Flaming Cloud Beast.

Jian Chen's speed was fairly fast. As he dashed across the ground, the grass around him swayed from the rapid air currents, which

made him seem like he was flying.

In a short moment, Jian Chen had reached the head of the Flaming Cloud Beast. Not even caring for the intense heat from the streams of fire the beast was spitting out, he jumped into the air once more to land on the head of the beast. With the iron rod in his right hand, he quickly stabbed it into the eyes of the Flaming Cloud Beast.

Although Jian Chen had moved quickly, the Flaming Cloud Beast wasn't slow to react either. Before the iron rod could pierce the eye, the beast suddenly shut its eyes.

Jian Chen's eyes flashed for just a brief second as he saw the Flaming Cloud Beast close its eyes. Focusing, Jian Chen condensed his soul and willed it to enter his iron rod. As it covered the sharp point of the iron rod, he tried to ram it into the eyelid of the Flaming Cloud Beast.

The iron rod then pierced through the eyelid with no difficulty or resistance. Immediately, blood came pouring out of the eye of the Flaming Cloud Beast.

"Hou!" The Flaming Cloud Beast suddenly let loose a desolate cry that shook the heavens themselves, as it whirled and struck out randomly in all directions.

Jian Chen exerted more pressure on his right arm, pushing the iron rod in even deeper in attempt to strike at the brain from the eyes.

The Flaming Cloud Beast's screams became more desolate as it started to sway back and forth. It attempted to remove the iron rod from its eye, but the rod had already sunk in far too deep, making it difficult to remove. As it shook its head to remove Jian Chen, the pain grew more intense. After two attempts at shaking its head, the pain was so fierce for the Flaming Cloud Beast that it didn't dare to move at all anymore.

Endlessly wailing in pain, the Flaming Cloud Beast dropped to the ground, where it began its final struggle to fight. Although the wound wasn't fatal, the damage done to its cranial nerves was excruciatingly hard to bear.

Seeing the Flaming Cloud Beast fall to the ground, Jian Chen flashed in glee as he yelled "Tie Ta, quickly drive the iron rod deeper in." Given Tie Ta's heavenly strength, this task couldn't be more appropriate for anyone else.

"Alright, I'm on my way." Tie Ta cried out happily as he ran over, having now realized that victory was on hand.

Tie Ta approached the Flaming Cloud Beast quickly and grabbed the iron rod before pushing it one meter deeper into the eye of the Flaming Cloud Beast with his right hand. Only a small portion of the rod was left sticking out.

"Hou!" The loudest cry yet came out of the beast, causing Tie Ta and Jian Chen's ears to momentarily go deaf. With that, the Flaming Cloud Beast expended the last of its energy and slumped

onto the ground. It stopped twitching, and its other eye gradually closed.

Seeing that the beast had finally died, Jian Chen and Tie Ta could not help but exhale in relief. The Class 2 Magical Beast Flaming Cloud Beast wasn't that amazing, but its defenses were extraordinarily high. Thus, killing it was an extremely difficult task.

“It finally died; this magical beast was too troublesome. It even breathed out fire and burnt away all my hair.” Tie Ta touched his bald head with a depressed expression.

Jian Chen could only laugh as he watched Tie Ta gloom over his hair and clothes. “You should at the very least put something on!” He said as he took out another wolf pelt from his Space Belt. The wolf pelts were something he and Tie Ta had prepared; there were many sets stored within their belts just in case they needed a new change of clothes. Because they were in a forest where battle was a common occurrence; a change of clothes could not be in high enough demand.

Tie Ta took it without another word, and in a flash, he had transformed the pelt into wearable clothing.

Afterwards, Jian Chen and Tie Ta extracted the Monster Core and continued on their way.

After Jian Chen and Tie Ta disappeared from view, a red clad figure dropped down from the trees. The figure was a tall woman,

around 30 years old, clad in fiery red clothing. Her appearance was not extremely beautiful, yet she gave off a gentle, calm air.

The woman stared at the carcass of the Flaming Cloud Beast with astonishment written clearly on her face. Letting out a deep breath, the woman muttered to herself, “Tie Ta and Changyang Xiang Tian, you two truly have well deserved reputations. To think your strengths are this amazing; you two aren’t even Saints yet and you managed to use regular iron weapons to kill a Class 2 Magical Beast known for its defenses. I am truly awestruck; I must report this to the headmaster.” After saying that, the woman immediately vanished into thin air.

As soon as the woman disappeared, another 5 youths came into the clearing. Each of the 5’s faces were covered by darkness, so their appearances couldn’t be easily seen. However, their shabby academy uniforms could be seen as they held their weapons up. Two held greatswords while another held up a large axe. The last youth with a tall and sturdy body held his sledgehammer up as he followed the group.

“Judging from the sound, the cry came from this area.” One of the greatsword wielding youths said to the rest.

The axe carrying student nodded his head, “Not bad, if the magical beast didn’t run too far away, then it should still be in the vicinity...:” He trailed off as his eyes widened at the sight in front of him, “You guys, look! What is that...” He pointed.

Hearing their friend, everyone’s eyes drifted forward as they saw a mountain-like fiery red body lying on the ground that seemed to

resemble a magical beast.

“Let’s go look.”

In a flash, all five of them approached the body of the magical beast. However, after they recognized the magical beast, their faces all grew serious.

The most experienced one amongst them got close to the body and touched the bloody fur with one hand before saying, “This is a Flaming Cloud Beast. Its defenses are very high, but its attacks aren’t all that strong. The blood hasn’t dried yet and is still warm, so it must have just died. It would appear that the howl we heard earlier was from this.”

The sword youth looked around himself before looking at the direction of Jian Chen’s footprints. “Come, let’s go follow those footsteps and see who exactly killed this Flaming Cloud Beast. If their strength is good enough, we can add them to our group so we can easily hunt more beasts. But if they’re weaker than us...” A small smile started to creep up on his face.

Hearing this, the other 4 youths all thought of the same thing, their faces revealing evil smiles. Soon after, the 5 of them immediately chased after Tie Ta and Jian Chen.

At the moment, Jian Chen and Tie Ta were cautiously walking within the forest. In order to protect themselves from magical beasts as well as a few of the swamps on the ground, the two of them were not advancing very quickly.

At that moment, Jian Chen's ears detected something. Holding his hand up to stop Tie Ta, he said, "Be careful, there's some people coming from behind us."

Tie Ta immediately stopped moving and turned around in curiosity.

In the blink of an eye, the people who had been following Jian Chen came into view. There was a total of 5 people, but Jian Chen couldn't see their faces since it was covered by the shade, but he could tell that they were strong from the amount of Saint Force they were emitting from their weapons.

When the 5 saw Jian Chen and Tie Ta, they let loose happy smiles to each other, as if they had mutually agreed on something. Increasing their speeds, the 5 of them quickly reached and surrounded Jian Chen and Tie Ta.

Seeing this development, both Tie Ta and Jian Chen felt a bad premonition within themselves.

"Dear students, might I ask what you're doing?" Jian Chen asked.

One of the youths brandished his sword with an evil smile, "You're asking us what we are doing?"

"Hand over your space belts obediently. We definitely don't want

to embarrass you, but if you don't comply...hahaha..." The sledgehammer wielding student sneered at them.

Tie Ta's face grew angry as he heard the demand, "You want us to hand over the space belts? Hmph, don't even think about it." Tie Ta understood what was going on now; this was a roadside robbery.

Jian Chen patted the space belt on him gently with a smile, "The space belts with all our monster cores are inside, if you have the skill, come and get it then."

Although they knew that all 5 of them were Saints, neither Jian Chen nor Tie Ta felt a hint of fear.

"Hmph, since it came down to this, then don't blame us for this. Everyone, attack together." Immediately the 5 of them rushed forward to attack the two, but their attacks were not aimed at fatal areas. The 5 clearly understood that they were still all students stealing was one thing, and so was fighting, but they were not allowed to fatally threaten the opposing party's lives.

Chapter 43: Counter Steal

Jian Chen and Tie Ta immediately dove to the side. After two days of relentlessly fighting magical beasts, even the thick skulled Tie Ta had started to pick up battle experience. This paid off; as Tie Ta dodged the incoming attack, he instinctively swung his battleaxe at the leg of the assailant in a swift counterattack.

However, the group in front of them was proving hard to deal with. Just as the battleaxe was about to hit one of them in the thigh, a sword flew out and hit the battleaxe with a colliding sound.

“Deng!”

Metal met metal, as Tie Ta’s battleaxe was obstructed. Due to Tie Ta’s terrifying strength, the battleaxe continued to slide down the blade of the sword before stopping at the hilt. Immediately, the youth holding the sword suddenly felt his entire arm go numb, as the battleaxe smashed itself against his arm, causing his whole hand to shake.

The youth was astonished and cried out to his friends, “Everyone be careful, this guy’s strength is abnormally strong. It’s best if you don’t get into arm’s reach of him!”

Hearing the warning, the other two students fighting Tie Ta immediately became more cautious, and tried to avoid his giant battleaxe.

On the side, Jian Chen was fighting intensely with the other youth holding a sword. Although Jian Chen's weapon was only a corroded iron rod, his fighting capabilities weren't any lower than Tie Ta's. He wasn't any weaker either since he could easily use his agility to move around his opponent's moves. Seeing an opening, Jian Chen quickly stabbed his iron rod into the opponent's thigh with a lightning fast speed. Since this was another student at the academy, he didn't dare to aim to kill, but instead aimed to injure.

Jian Chen's speed was so fast that the student didn't have time to react, and could only watch in shock as the iron rod stabbed into his thigh.

"Ah!" The youth cried out in pain as his face drained of color, and sweat dripped down his forehead.

Hearing his companion cry out, the other sword wielder's face changed. Unable to fight Jian Chen personally, he cried out to his friend, "Harry, are you okay?"

Although that youth wasn't attacking Jian Chen anymore, Jian Chen wasn't going to let him off that easily. As Jian Chen moved towards him, the Saint Force condensed into Jian Chen's fist as he suddenly punched the youth in the chest.

Still moving at fast speeds, he refused to listen to the youth's complaints, or even wait for the youth to react. Jian Chen's palm struck out silently like a viper, and hit the other squarely on the chest.

“Peng!” The youth was sent flying through the air from Jian Chen’s fist, as blood came spurting out of his mouth.

After dispatching the two, he immediately went to go assist Tie Ta. At the moment, Tie Ta was embroiled in a tough battle, and had already taken damage from the 3 people. The wolf pelt he was wearing had already been slashed apart and ruined by the blood that was leaking from his wounds. If it weren’t for his extremely durable body and godly strength, the others would not have been afraid to fight against him and knock him to the ground.

With the appearance of Jian Chen, Tie Ta’s pressure was alleviated by quite a bit. Jian Chen’s strength in battle was extremely strong, and even normal Saints wouldn’t be able to fight him on equal footing. After a few seconds of close combat fighting against Jian Chen, the three that had surrounded Tie Ta had already started to lose. Each of them were sporting new injuries, and soon after, all 5 of them were writhing on the floor in pain, no longer having the energy to move.

Jian Chen looked at the many wounds on Tie Ta, and asked with some concern, “Tie Ta, are you okay?”

Tie Ta nodded his head and said, “I’m fine, my body’s pretty tough.” He pointed to the group of 5 people writhing on the ground, “What should we do with them?”

Thinking about it, Jian Chen suddenly grew a strange smile on his face, “Tie Ta, go gather their Space Belts and take all of their monster cores before giving the belts back.”

Hearing Jian Chen, the 5 people on the ground went rigid as their faces paled; a few of them were growing red with indignation. The cores in their Space Belts were earned over the span of 2 days of constant struggles for their lives; right now there was only half a day left until the 3rd day passed. If they were to lose all of their monster cores now, then they would definitely fail the mission.

Tie Ta laughed. Without hesitation, he immediately followed Jian Chen's orders, and grabbed all 5 of the space belts from them. Jian Chen stared them down with the bloody iron rod in his hand, like a tiger watching his prey to prevent them from making any sudden movements.

The five students originally had planned to fight back, but when they saw Jian Chen grip the bloody iron rod, they immediately gave up all thoughts about resisting, and obediently let Tie Ta take their space belts.

After gathering all of the space belts, Tie Ta brought them back to Jian Chen and began to count the monster cores one by one. In total, they had only 12 monster cores, all of which were Class 2 Monster Cores.

Jian Chen laughed as he grabbed 6 of the monster cores and put them in their own space belts before saying, "Tie Ta, let's split these in half, you get 6, I get 6."

"Alright!" Tie Ta said as he placed his share into his own space belt.

But when the 5 heard Tie Ta's name, all 5 of them went still, as their faces became unsightly to look at. When it came to his name, everyone in Kargath Academy had heard of him since he was the headmaster's apprentice. Although he wasn't a Saint, when it came to the entire school, no one dared to mess with him.

By this point, the 5 students started to regret their actions so much that their intestines became green. If they had known earlier that one of them was Tie Ta, then they wouldn't have tried to steal from the headmaster's apprentice no matter what. But now, not only were they robbed of what they were trying to steal, but they couldn't even get revenge now that they knew who he was; their sufferings couldn't be summed up in words.

TL Note: Intestines go green after the body dies. Basically they regret their actions so much they want to die.

After storing all of the Class 2 Monster Cores, Tie Ta was smiling even brighter. "Changyang Xiang Tian, it's because you're so amazing and beat all 5 of them so quickly. I, Tie Ta, just can't compare to you at all."

Jian Chen laughed and said, "Alright, let's get back on the road now and hope we can kill a few more magical beasts for the sake of our cultivation,"

Soon after, Jian Chen and Tie Ta didn't see the paralyzed looks of the 5 students on the floor as they walked away.

When the two disappeared into the forest, one of the youths started to curse out loud, “F*cking hell, what bad luck we have! To think we came across the apprentice of the headmaster and then failed the assignment. Not only that, but we had our monster cores stolen away from us without us being able to get revenge. Such wretched luck!”

The youth who had carried the sledge hammer earlier said in a hoarse voice, “That’s not all of it, don’t forget that it wasn’t just Tie Ta who attacked us; there was another.”

Everyone’s eyes lit up, “You’re talking about Changyang Xiang Tian.”

The sledgehammer student nodded his head, “That’s right, Tie Ta has the support of the headmaster, so we can’t get revenge on him. But Changyang Xiang Tian doesn’t have that same support.”

“But Changyang Xiang Tian’s strength is so strong though. The 5 of us couldn’t beat him while he was alone, how would we ever beat him?” Another person asked.

“That’s right, and the most important fact was that Changyang Xiang Tian was far too fast, we couldn’t even dodge any of his attacks.” One of the sword wielders said; it was the very same person who had his thigh pierced by Jian Chen.

Then, the person with the axe opened his mouth suddenly, “You guys forget that Changyang Xiang Tian already offended a lot of people at the academy like Lord Cheng and Master Luo, whose

strength is higher than ours. If we can find an opportunity to join them, sooner or later we'll find a chance to strike at him."

.....

In the blink of an eye, the colors of the sky began to dim. The magical beasts in the 3rd region were far less abundant than the ones in the 2nd region. Half a day had passed, but Jian Chen and Tie Ta had only found a few magical beasts. Everytime they encountered one, they experienced an arduous battle to kill it. Within that afternoon, the two of them had only gained another 7 Class 2 Monster Cores. Compared to their bounty in the 2nd region, this number was clearly insignificant. But when they thought about how the 5 students who attacked them earlier had only gained 12 Class 2 Monster Cores in 2 days despite being Saints, their hearts felt a bit more relieved.

It was a lot more restless in the 3rd region than the 2nd, since the monsters were a lot harder to kill. Also, since the number of monsters were less, more people were willing to rob others for their cores. After Jian Chen and Tie Ta had fought against the 5 students from before, they had another 3 encounters with robbers. At the very least each group had 4 people in it and at the most a group had 7 of them. But in the end, they had overcome each challenge victorious, and took all of the monster cores from the other groups. But what had made Jian Chen depressed was that the group of 4 that attacked them earlier didn't have a single monster core, but the other 2 groups had a total of 33 Class 2 Monster Cores in the end.

When night came, Jian Chen and Tie Ta sat down next to the fire

as they roasted the meat of a magical beast. The two looked exhausted; compared to the 2nd region, the 3rd region was far more tiring.

At this point, Tie Ta's academy uniform was essentially gone. On his chest, his gains were showing. Only the most important part of his body was covered up by one of the extra wolf pelts, making him look like a savage. He was already covered with scars all over, and although they looked painful, they were only superficial wounds that didn't affect Tie Ta at all. This was a strong body that even Jian Chen looked at with jealousy.

Jian Chen, on the other hand, was not faring much better. Although he still stuck with wearing his academy uniform, it had already been dyed red from blood, staining the clothes black after oxidizing.

Suddenly, Jian Chen could hear the sounds of a distant battle. With his acute ears, he could heard the faintest of sounds.

Jian Chen stood up from where he was sitting, and looked off to where he heard the sounds, "Tie Ta, there's a fight going on over there."

Chapter 44: Coincidental Meeting With Big Brother

Tie Ta didn't seem to care at all, "I bet it's someone fighting against another magical beast."

At first, Jian Chen thought so too, but the knowledge from his previous life had told him that these were the sounds of battle between people. In this environment, no matter what sound it was, Jian Chen was always on alert, especially since he had already been attacked by his fellow students multiple times earlier that day. Jian Chen had seen those older and more experienced students fall due to not always being on guard, Jian Chen didn't plan to end up like them.

Straining his ears to hear the most minute of sounds, Jian Chen tried to catch the sounds he heard earlier. But as soon as he furrowed his eyebrows in thought, he heard the sound again. It wasn't the sound of a person fighting a magical beast, but of two people fighting each other. In addition, the sounds were getting closer.

Jian Chen looked at Tie Ta and said, "Tie Ta, that's not the sound of a person fighting against a magical beast, but of two people fighting each other. The sounds are getting louder and louder, so you should prepare yourself; we might end up fighting." Jian Chen didn't choose to change locations. With their current strength, they could easily protect themselves. In addition, he wasn't afraid of anything.

Tie Ta immediately became interested as he grabbed his battleaxe

and asked, “How many people do you think are fighting? Changyang Xiang Tian, do you think we should take a look?”

Jian Chen held the iron rod over the fire, “No need, even without our interference, they’ll be approaching us soon enough.”

“Ah!” Tie Ta sat back down after that with a look of serenity.

Soon enough, the sounds of battle became louder and louder, to the point where even Tie Ta could hear it. A group of figures quickly came scurrying out from the bushes, and ran to where the bonfire was.

Right behind them, a person wearing black flashed in, clearly chasing the other group.

“My two friends, the group behind wants to steal our monster core. Not only are they strong, but their numbers are greater than ours, I hope that we can combine forces and fight them off; otherwise, the hard work we had painstakingly earned over the last 2 days will be taken by them.” One person shouted from a distance. Although Jian Chen and Tie Ta were only 2 people, if they joined them then they would be able to fairly go against the opposite party.

Hearing that voice, Jian Chen’s eyebrows knitted together. He felt that this voice was very familiar to him, as if he had heard it before. However, he couldn’t place a name on the voice; clearly it hadn’t left much of an impression.

The four people that were running away were getting closer and closer to Jian Chen now. The person chasing them from behind suddenly sped forward and blocked off the four from moving forward anymore. Holding his giant sword up, he swung his sword at the ones who were still running.

The one leading the team fought back with his own Saint Weapon to block against the sword.

“Deng!”

The two people had a huge difference in strength that could easily be seen, as the one who had blocked the attack was thrown backwards violently.

With this distraction, the people chasing from behind had finally caught up and once more started to attack those who were trying to run away. There were 8 people that had come in pursuit, and all of them quite strong. The difference between their numbers only added to the pressure; without reinforcements, the ones who were trying to run away would ultimately lose.

“Luo Jian, just wait there, I won’t let you get away.” One of the ones who were running away snarled.

Hearing this, Jian Chen who was standing not too far away went rigid. The voice who spoke out was one he was familiar with; it was his older brother Changyang Hu.

“Big brother!” Jian Chen cried out in astonishment. Immediately his face became one of shock, and without hesitation, he rushed on over with his iron rod in hand.

Seeing Jian Chen move, Tie Ta began follow Jian Chen with his battleaxe in hand. For the past 3 days, Tie Ta had started to follow all of Jian Chen’s commands without even realizing it.

Over the course of the 3 days, Jian Chen’s strength had been fully revealed. With his experience of surviving in the forest and his strategy, Tie Ta had been humbled by Jian Chen’s talents.

Flying across the ground, Jian Chen ran across the grass towards where the fight was taking place. His hands blurred as the iron rod flew through the air and pierced into one of the people his brother was fighting. He was relieved to hear that one of the people coming towards him was his older brother, Changyang Hu.

Although everyone had noticed Jian Chen and Tie Ta, and were all cautiously guarded against the two, Jian Chen had moved far too fast and without warning. In their limited lines of sight due to the darkness, no one had noticed to the iron rod in Jian Chen’s hand.

The pointed end of the iron rod stabbed into the Changyang Hu’s attacker, causing him to scream out in pain into the night sky as he whirled around. Without waiting for the guy to react further, Jian Chen immediately brought his leg to his chest and kicked him away into the air.

“Agh!” At this moment, Tie Ta also charged over. He swung his axe around, hacking away at the enemies, causing them to be batted away.

But the person Tie Ta was swinging at wasn't slow to react either. Watching the axe come down on them, his face didn't reveal the smallest amount of fear, and instead, he brought his sword up to block the axe.

“Deng!”

Once the sword met the battleaxe, Tie Ta and the other were brought to a deadlock with a loud clang. Their weapons shook; Tie Ta remained where he stood, while the other person was forcibly sent flying backwards.

With Tie Ta's godly strength, unless one was a giant, then he/she would stand no chance against Tie Ta. But the person who was fighting against him was no giant, and so he had taken a huge loss.

However, even with that development, Tie Ta's battleaxe chipped once more. Although the difference in strength was huge, if Tie Ta had not enveloped his battleaxe with his own Saint Force, then the battleaxe would have long since been destroyed.

“Ah!” Tie Ta let loose a snarl as he brandished his battleaxe. The group of robbers then dispatched another 2 people to face off against Tie Ta.

“Dang!” After his clear clang, another person who didn’t understand how strong Tie Ta was collided against him one more time. Immediately, he was launched into the air by Tie Ta’s battleaxe, which caused his battleaxe to chip even more.

Although Tie Ta’s battleaxe was strong, it was far from being on the same level as a Saint Weapon, because every Saint Weapon had a great amount of energy within it. With a Saint Weapon, one could release an attack far stronger than normal blows. However, these people Jian Chen were fighting against were far too weak, and some of them were still at the primary levels of a Saint. While Tie Ta could go toe to toe with those primary leveled Saints, his battleaxe had been through far too many collisions.

“Be careful, his strength is extraordinarily high, and watch out for his battleaxe.” The one who was blown away from him yelled as a warning.

Hearing his companion’s warning, the remaining youth became extremely cautious. He dodged the battleaxe, and grabbed onto Tie Ta’s Space Belt...

Jian Chen was moving around with the speed of lightning. as his iron rod flashed this way and that. With his body moving like a spirit’s, he fought alongside with Changyang Hu. Already dyed red with blood, the iron rod was concealed under the shade of the night, as if it was a viper. As he wandered about the area in the darkness, his iron rod shot out silently, in a silent manner that was difficult for his enemies to detect.

Jian Chen was striking out with his iron rod so fast that even the

person fighting Changyang Hu were not able to react in time, as his thighs were speared through with the iron rod.

The person's face grimaced in pain as he let out a painful scream, and clenched his hands in reflex. Changyang Hu was not courteous enough to wait for him to simmer down, and immediately sliced at his opponent's left shoulder.

Immediately, he cried out in pain again as his left arm was cut, the sword cutting the bone clean off, leaving his arm to be connected to his arm by a small amount of flesh. A torrent of blood came spurting out as he grabbed at it.

A cyan colored light illuminated the night as they all saw a giant sword appear and slash down towards Jian Chen.

“Wind attributed Saint Force!” Seeing the cyan light envelop the sword, Jian Chen's own face hardened. He immediately used the Profound Steps and melted away into the air like a mirage. As soon as he had faded away, the cyan sword immediately slashed through at the spot where Jian Chen had just been standing.

Jian Chen reappeared 3 meters away, not too far away. The person who had slashed at him stood arrogantly at the spot; wearing a raggedy academy uniform dyed red with blood, his face was covered by the night, so Jian Chen couldn't recognize him.

Jian Chen's eyes focused on the group. He snorted and said in a low voice, “Luo Jian, I didn't think I would meet you here.”

The youth Jian Chen addressed was startled. He thought the voice was far too familiar, so he carefully stared at Jian Chen. Although it was nighttime, there was still a gleaming light in the sky that allowed him to see Jian Chen's face clearly.

However, after 3 days of constant fighting in the forest, without any clear water, everyone's faces were jetblack. It was impossible for people to see each other's appearances with ease.

However, the nearby Changyang Hu heard the voice of Jian Chen, and his face became one of shock; he couldn't believe his eyes or ears, "You're...you're fourth brother!" Changyang Hu was astonished; when it came to Jian Chen's voice, he was all too familiar with it.

Luo Jian suddenly came to a realization as he laughed, "No wonder I thought your voice was familiar. So it was Changyang Xiang Tian after all. I didn't think you would breakthrough to becoming a Saint; I really am amazed at that." After saying that, his eyes flashed dangerously.

Jian Chen turned around and faced Changyang Hu, "Big brother, we'll talk later. Right now, I'll remove the crisis in front of us. You go help the others, and leave Luo Jian to me."

Chapter 45: Luo Jian's Defeat

“Alright then, you take care of yourself fourth brother. Luo Jian’s strength has already reached the middle ranked Saint level.” Changyang Hu immediately went off to help his friends. Although seeing Jian Chen in the 3rd region was unexpected, he knew that now wasn’t the time to try to figure out how or why.

Because Jian Chen and Tie Ta’s sudden appearance, the originally disadvantaged Changyang Hu and his group were now on an even playing field. Moreover, because of Tie Ta’s existence, the winds of battle were blowing in their favor. The playing field was now sloped towards them in a short amount of time.

Looking at the Luo Jian’s dark and swarthy face, Jian Chen laughed, “Luo Jian, it looks like your plan to steal our monster cores will end in failure, your monster cores will be given to us instead.”

Luo Jian’s face grew angry as his eyes flashed dangerously, “Changyang Xiang Tian, you don’t have the power to take away my monster cores.”

Jian Chen looked at Luo Jian with some disdain before saying, “Then let’s test it out; let’s see if I have the power to snatch away your monster cores or not.” Jian Chen said nothing more after that, as his body started to sway before charging quickly at Luo Jian. His hand held the iron rod and struck like a viper towards Luo Jian’s chest, using the darkness of the night as its cover.

A flash of killing intent went through Luo Jian's eyes as he held his cyan colored sword up. He brandished it in an imposing manner before slashing at Jian Chen. Since Luo Jian was not only a middle ranked Saint, but also had wind attributed Saint Force, his attacks were even faster than before. So much that whenever he swung his blade an after image would appear.

Seeing the sword come down towards his head, Jian Chen dodged to the side, and continued to thrust the iron rod towards Luo Jian's chest.

Luo Jian's face changed as he realized the speed the iron rod was traveling at was extremely high. At that critical moment, his sword was too far out to bring it back to protect himself, but his reaction speed wasn't too slow either. Reabsorbing the wind Saint Force into his body, he forced his body to move backwards and bring back his sword.

Luo Jian's speed became faster; the moment Jian Chen's iron touched Luo Jian's clothes, he had already escaped from Jian Chen's range of attack. As soon as he had escaped Jian Chen's range, he immediately started to gather the Saint Force into his hands again to slash at Jian Chen again with the sword.

Luo Jian's attack was fairly simple, but to Jian Chen's eyes, it was a mess of an attack; not a single amount of technique or finesse was shown. However, Jian Chen still didn't dare to belittle it too much.

Jian Chen leapt into the air to dodge Luo Jian's sword. Immediately springing off from a tree trunk, he flew towards Luo

Jian, his arms shaking, causing a faint mirror image to appear behind him. Jian Chen's arm was already traveling at high speeds, and the iron rod was traveling at the speed of lightning towards Luo Jian, so even the naked eye wouldn't be able to see it.

Luo Jian's eyes widened in realization as the iron rod had already reached him. This time Luo Jian was unable to defend himself from Jian Chen's attack nor was he able to dodge in time, resulting in the iron rod piercing deeply into his chest.

Luo Jian's face hardened as he stared at the impaled iron rod within him, a dumbfounded expression appearing on his face. Not only was there a tinge of disbelief on his face, but despair and fear as well. When the iron rod had pierced into him, he had been unable to mount any type of resistance against it. He had no defense, due to the iron rod being a lot faster in speed than he had been able to react to. Even if he was a wind attribute Saint, the iron rod had still skewered straight through him, causing a fatal injury.

What followed afterwards was beyond everyone's expectations. The moment Jian Chen's iron rod had pierced into Luo Jian's chest, everyone had stopped moving. Then, a pure amount of Saint Force transferred from the iron rod into Luo Jian's body. With the removal of the rod, the support disappeared, and Luo Jian dropped onto the ground.

When Jian Chen had sent his Saint Force infused soul into Luo Jian's body, it was as if his body had exploded. The energy rippled through Luo Jian's body like an energy wave, wreaking havoc within his organs.

“Pff!” Luo Jian immediately spit out a mouthful of blood. The fierce pain he was feeling inside his body was strange and unknown to him; he let loose a blood curling scream as he rolled on the ground.

Luo Jian’s scream was abnormally desolate and immediately caught the attention of all those still fighting. However, as their eyes looked at the rolling Luo Jian, everyone except Tie Ta was stunned into silence. What they were watching caused them no small amount of shock, and many of them still couldn’t believe their eyes.

Even after finishing off Luo Jian, Jian Chen didn’t consider letting the group of robbers go. Holding his iron rod as he stood in the middle, he thought that it was lucky that he had met his older brother Changyang Hu now. If he had met Changyang Hu later, then Jian Chen was afraid that his brother would have lost all of his monster cores to Luo Jian’s group and been left with a heavy injury.

With Jian Chen entering the battle, the opposition no longer had the upper hand. Although Jian Chen wasn’t a Saint like everyone else, he undoubtedly was the most powerful amongst everyone present.

In his past life, Jian Chen was a traveling wanderer who had practiced the way of the sword, to the point where he had reached perfection with it. His moves were hard to detect since he moved so fast that it was inconceivable at some points. People who were relying on only their eyes wouldn’t be able to see him. Since Jian Chen was only using an iron rod, his true strength could not be

brought out. The opponents in front of him were mere students with little battle experience. With his extraordinary sword knowledge, he could quickly end the battle.

Until the end of the fight, no one had realized that the weapon Jian Chen was using wasn't actually a Saint Weapon, but actually just a common iron rod.

After the fight, all of the injured students that took part in the robbery sat down on the ground. Each one of them had a different type of wound on different spots, and they all looked at Jian Chen with terror.

Looking at the 8 youths on the floor, although Changyang Hu and his team of 4 were heavily injured, they couldn't help but reveal the joy of victory while looking at Jian Chen with stares of respectful admiration.

“Changyang Hu, I didn't think you'd unexpectedly have such an amazingly strong fourth brother. His strength really leaves me astonished!”

“That's right, Changyang Hu. Although we heard about your fourth brother's strength a long time ago, I didn't think that he was this amazing until now. Even the middle level Saint Luo Jian was defeated by him; if it weren't for your fourth brother's help, I'm afraid that our group wouldn't have been able to protect the monster cores we worked so hard to get.”

.....

The three youths and Changyang Hu had a decent relationship with each other. Each one of them sighed in joy as they excitedly discussed the recent events.

At this moment, Jian Chen arrived by Changyang Hu's side and looked at his wounds. With some concern he asked, "Big brother, do you have any serious injuries?"

Hearing this, Changyang Hu shook his head absentmindedly. Looking at Jian Chen with joy and surprise, he replied, "I'm fine, just fine. It's only a small wound. Don't forget, your older brother has the earth attributed Saint Force, which improves my defenses by a lot." Changyang Hu paused for a bit and then asked, "That's right, fourth brother, how did you come across the 3rd region; I remember that before we entered the forest, your strength was still before the Saint level? Also, how did you become so amazing, for you to even defeat Luo Jian?" Changyang Hu asked curiously.

Jian Chen laughed and said, "Big brother, this type of situation should be explained later over a nice and slow talk. Right now, we still have to take care of the problem in front of us." Jian Chen's swept his gaze over at the several students who were on the ground, "Big brother, how do you think we should punish these guys?"

Giving the question some thought, he said, "Fourth brother, this should be resolved by you. If it weren't for you, I'm afraid our group of four would have had all of our monster cores stolen."

Jian Chen's face had a deep smile on it as he said, "In that case, there's no need to be merciful to them. At the very least, we should

collect all of their monster cores from their Space Belts.”

Jian Chen’s suggestion was quickly approved by everyone, and so under the poisonous and hateful glares of Luo Jian’s group, they quickly grabbed all of the Space Belts and collected the monster cores inside. After checking their inventories, the 8 of them had a total of 130 monster cores.

Seeing such a number, even Jian Chen was astonished by the amount. Changyang Hu exclaimed in admiration, “I didn’t think that they would have this many monster cores; it looks like they robbed many people before us. Otherwise, they wouldn’t have been able to kill so many monsters in a span of 3 days with their strength.”

Jian Chen nodded his head in approval before saying, “Big brother, let’s split the cores into 6 parts so that we each get an equal share.”

“That’s no good.” Jian Chen turned towards the new speaker; a youth from Changyang Hu’s team, “Changyang Xiang Tian, the only reason we were able to obtain these monster cores was because of you and your fellow comrade here. We didn’t do anything at all, so you shouldn’t split the cores with us and keep it among the two of you.”

The student’s suggestion was quickly approved by the other two students. One of them immediately said, “Oz is right. Changyang Xiang Tian, if it weren’t for you and your friend, the strength of us 4 wouldn’t have been enough to win. I’m afraid we wouldn’t have even been able to protect our own monster cores. But now that our

monster cores are safe from their grasp, we are satisfied. The monster cores you got from Luo Jian and his friends are something we don't want."

"Right, Changyang Xiang Tian, you were able to get these monster cores with the combined strength of you and your friend. How could we be shameless enough to divide this up?"

Jian Chen's eyes flickered with a bright glow as he looked at their faces, searching for any signs of falsity. However, he could only see sincere honesty, with absolutely no traces of dishonesty. His respect for the 3 grew tremendously, but he truly did admire his older brother the most. He didn't think his older brother would be able to find 3 friends with such good personalities like this. Although Changyang Hu had the body and brain of a tiger, Jian Chen understood that his brother was not at all stupid.

Jian Chen laughed and said, "Everyone had contributed to this situation. If it weren't for you guys stalling them, if they had somehow joined forces with Luo Jian to attack me, I'm afraid that I would have lost then. Let's go with this, Tie Ta and I will take half of the monster cores, and you guys will take the rest and divide it amongst yourselves. That should be fine, right?"

Chapter 46: Rich Profit

“Haha, what fourth brother said is correct. This was something we all worked hard to do, so let’s follow fourth brother’s idea and split the monster cores. Half of it will be given to fourth brother and his other friend here. The other half will be equally split among the four of us.” Changyang Hu laughed. He and Jian Chen were blood brothers, even though they had different mothers, it did not affect the relationship between them; he would not be stingy with him.

With Changyang Hu deciding for them, the other three students couldn’t decline any more and took the monster cores excitedly. After splitting it up, each of the four had gotten at least a dozen, bringing them no small amount of excitement. With this amount, it was more than what they had gotten by themselves after last couple of days.

After this event, no one had any plans to stay put anymore, and after changing their location, they began to start a new fire to roast some meat.

The six people sat in a circle around the fire as Changyang Hu laughed, “Fourth brother, let me introduce you to everyone. These three are my best friends, Oz, Aoba, and Darian.” He pointed at the three, “Fourth brother, Oz and Aoba are identical twins. I guarantee that when they wash the filth on their faces off, you won’t be able to tell who is who!”

Jian Chen smiled and greeted the three one by one. After chatting for a while, they had started to get so familiar with each

other that even Tie Ta's name was known by them.

Suddenly, Changyang Hu's face went still as he asked, "Fourth brother, I remember that before you went into the forest, your strength wasn't at the Saint Level yet. So why is it you're in the 3rd region? And now being so strong, you were even able to defeat the middle-ranked Wind Saint Luo Jian. Could it be that in the three days you were in the forest, you broke through?"

Changyang Hu's three friends paid close attention to this question; both Darian and the twins became interested after hearing Changyang Hu's question, and shifted their attention to Jian Chen. Jian Chen beating Luo Jian, had a huge impact on those three. Although they had long since heard the rumors that were circulating throughout the academy that he was strong, the rumors didn't exaggerate his strength to this extent.

Jian Chen laughed and held his iron rod up towards Changyang Hu, "Big brother, look. If I were a Saint, would I still be using a weapon like this?"

Changyang Hu looked up and down the iron rod; but it looked the same, he had already recognized the bloodstained iron rod in Jian Chen's hands and it was still a normal rusty broken iron rod.

"That's...that's..." Changyang Hu's eyes went wide; he was put in a state of silent shock as he would have never in a million years thought that Jian Chen would be able to defeat Luo Jian using only a rusty iron rod, and if this didn't happen before his very own eyes, he wouldn't have believed it even if he was beaten to death.

At the same time, Darian and the twins looked at the iron rod in Changyang Hu's hands. The three of them were in disbelief, and then looked at Jian Chen as if he was a monster.

Seeing the incredulous looks on their faces, Jian Chen laughed and said, "With the combined powers of me and Tie Ta, there were no magical beasts that were a match for us in the 2nd region, so we decided to move on to the 3rd region."

Hearing this, Changyang Hu and the other three couldn't believe their ears. The 2nd region was filled with Class 1 Magical Beasts. Although they were weaker and had low attack power, even the average Saint would find surviving in the forest a difficult task, and Jian Chen was still obviously not a Saint yet. To say the 2nd region was no longer a challenge, even Changyang Hu and his friends would curse Jian Chen's absurd strength.

After a while, Changyang Hu and his friends finally recovered their senses. Changyang Hu continued to ask, "Fourth brother, you're not even a Saint yet and you're already this amazing. When the day comes and you become a Saint, I really can't guess how much stronger you'll become." Changyang Hu shook his head in awe, "Ah right, fourth brother, when do you think you'll become a Saint?"

Muttering more to himself, "I'm currently at the peak of the 10th layer. After this forest exercise, I'll aim to become a Saint."

Changyang Hu let out a breath of air in surprise and shock as he

looked at Jian Chen, “Fourth brother, you’re simply too amazing for words. Not even a few months ago, you were a new student at Kargath Academy who was only at the 8th layer. I didn’t think that you would reach the peak of the 10th layer in such a short amount of time.”

Hearing this, Darian and the twins couldn’t believe it and their view of Jian Chen completely changed. The strength Jian Chen had shown was ridiculous, his cultivation speed was fast, and could border the line of the unimaginable. Jian Chen was definitely a genius among geniuses. At this moment, the three friends of Changyang Hu quickly came to a decision that, in the future, they would have to treat him well and avoid offending him.

Jian Chen laughed carefreely, “Big brother, I’ve noticed that within the 3rd region, many people are resorting to stealing monster cores from others. How did this happen?”

Changyang Hu exhaled before saying, “I don’t know who started this myself, but it’s said that during the 2nd day, someone started to steal monster cores relying on the fact that he had an enormous amount of people behind him. After this news spread everyone in the 3rd region started to follow suit, forming groups to rob cores. After all, Class 2 Magical Beasts are rare in comparison to Class 1 Magical Beasts, and are even harder to kill. Killing one beast would only get you one, but stealing from another is much easier than hunting, and with good luck, one would get a lot of cores as well..”

“So up until now, all the students started to steal from each other in the 3rd region. Many people have had their hard earned monster cores stolen away from them when they were alone or

were smaller in numbers, The people who were injured decided to quit early, reducing the numbers in the area drastically.”

“Why don’t the teachers that are secretly hidden care about what was happening?” Tie Ta asked.

“As long as it isn’t a life threatening injury or a critical point between life or death, then the hidden teachers won’t show up. After all, the reason why we are in the forest hunting Magical Beasts is so we can temper ourselves, not to mention that we are being tested on how we can unite when being robbed; things like this happen often in the Tian Yuan continent. They’re only letting us experience this sooner rather than later.” Said the twins.

“Ah!” Tie Ta suddenly exclaimed in realization.

Jian Chen let loose a strange smile as he looked at his older brother and his friends. “Since other people have the audacity to rob us of our monster cores, why can’t we rob them first? Are you guys with me on this?”

The group’s eyes went bright as they heard Jian Chen.

“Fine, we’ll do it. Changyang Xiang Tian, we will follow you.” Darian said as he stood up and stared at Jian Chen, the heroic spirit reflected in his voice.

“Not bad, before our strength was lacking, and could only run away blindly. But now that Changyang Xiangtian is here, even if

we meet a middle rank Saint, victory isn't impossible. Since this is the final night, let's have some fun with this." Aoba and Oz laughed.

"Alright, fourth brother, your big brother will listen to you." Changyang Hu said happily.

Tie Ta didn't have an opinion, as he had decided to follow Jian Chen without question for a while now.

After everyone had eaten their fill and discussed their plans, they decided to let the twins search the surroundings for targets, while the rest waited for their return.

The twins soon came back and reported that they saw a group of 5 people nearby.

Jian Chen immediately followed the twins towards where they had reported seeing them.

When Jian Chen's group had reached the place, the 5 people were preparing themselves to rest and were caught unprepared by Jian Chen's sudden attack. Since the group was only at the Primary Saint level, they were quickly defeated by Jian Chen and his group. However, they didn't have that many monster cores, only having around 20 or so.

After taking the monster cores, they didn't continue to harass them and immediately left the area.

For the entire night, Jian Chen and the others didn't sleep at all. Instead, they looked around the forest for more targets. There weren't many people in the 3rd region by now, and ever since he had started his search, he had only come across 3 different groups. But what he and the others found amusing was that halfway through the night, Jian Chen's group had come across another group who had the same idea they had, and so they had immediately started to fight. Both sides had 6 people each, and the other group even had 2 Middle Saints whose strength could be considered pretty strong. However, those two ended up being stuck against Jian Chen and Tie Ta. In the end, Jian Chen had come out victorious against his opponent, and gained 150 Class 2 Monster Cores as a reward. It would seem that many people had had their monster cores taken by this group.

After the third battle, aside from Jian Chen, everyone else was exhausted and could not continue fighting anymore. With no other choice, they spent the rest of the night searching for a secret place to hide and sleep. Although Jian Chen and Tie Ta had wanted to continue, the other 4 weren't in any shape to, and needed the two of them to stay behind and protect them against any surprise attacks.

Without saying, Jian Chen and the group had had an overwhelming harvest; excluding the first group with their 20 monster cores, the other two groups had 70 cores and 150 cores respectively. So in total, they now had 260 cores.

Seeing this many monster cores, Jian Chen was starting to suspect that this was already half of the total amount of Class 2 Monster Cores in the 3rd region.

The night passed peacefully, and the group started to travel towards the outside of the forest. With some herbal medicine, Changyang Hu and the others' wounds were starting to heal slowly. Back when they had first entered the forest, the school administration had already prepared these medicines inside of their Space Belts.

At the moment, Changyang Hu and his friends were all wearing well made wolf pelts that made them look as if they had no injuries at all. The wolf pelts were the ones that Jian Chen and Tie Ta had made from when they had slaughtered that pack of wolves; they had collected quite a large amount of them.

Chapter 47: Returning To The Academy

The group of six headed to the edge of the forest, now that they had completed their 3 days. If they could protect the monster cores until they reached the outside, then they would be able to finish the assignment perfectly. And since the academy would not take the cores, they would be able to use it for themselves.

Traveling on the road, Jian Chen and the rest were very cautious. This was the crucial moment, since they could be ambushed at any given time. Jian Chen and Tie Ta were still full of life but Changyang Hu and the others were not in the best shape. If they were to be attacked by another strong group, then a fierce battle wouldn't be avoidable, which was what Jian Chen wanted to avoid.

Jian Chen walked down the road with Tie Ta behind him while the rest followed in a straight line as they reached to the part of the forest where the white enchantments of the forest rippled outwards. With the end of the 3rd day, the enchantment had suddenly transformed to help the students who were lost to find their way here.

Jian Chen's soul was lashing out around him as he checked his surroundings. The 3rd region was not as quiet as the 2nd region. Not only did they have to protect themselves from magical beasts, but they also had to protect themselves from other students. Other students were waiting around for the perfect moment to strike. So because of that, the closer one got to the entrance, the more dangerous it became. After all, the enchantment was showing a hole in itself to help lead students out, so many of them were trying to leave the forest and made themselves an open target for

those other students waiting to ambush them.

A few hours passed, Jian Chen and Tie Ta were getting closer and closer to the 3rd region's exit. The whole journey had been fairly peaceful, although at regular intervals, they'd encounter a magical beast carcass. Sometimes, there would even be 2-3 magical beast corpses lying in the same location.

A few hours of rushing later, Jian Chen's group of people finally arrived outside of the 3rd region's exit. They smoothly passed through and entered the 2nd region. At this moment, everyone could not help but sigh in relief. They all understood that their monster cores were secured, because after leaving the 3rd region, no matter whether or not others had gathered the required 2 monster cores, their task was complete. There was nobody here that would dare to steal their monster cores.

"Haha, I hadn't imagined that the journey would be so peaceful. This was really against my expectations." Changyang Hu happily smiled, his tone also carrying a hint of excitement.

Aoba also happily said, "That's right, and here I'd thought that we'd fall victim to some surprise attacks. I didn't think that the path would've been so calm. It really goes against all expectations."

Darian reached his hand out to touch his Space Belt and smiled, "I guess the people stealing monster cores in the 3rd region had suffered from injuries, and didn't have the energy to keep stealing from others on the road. In addition, most of the people probably have the same mindset as us, only stressing self-defense. As long as we safely leave the third region, we'll be satisfied. None of us are

interested in the idea of stealing monster cores anymore.”

“Yea, that’s right. What you said makes sense.” Tie Ta nodded in agreement.

Jian Chen shook his head and said, “The situation is not necessarily as you think it is. Actually, throughout the whole journey, there were still some people lying in wait along the way in hidden places ready to ambush us, you guys just didn’t notice them. Those people who were hiding in the darkness perhaps noticed that we have a large number of people, or they didn’t have the ability to discern our strength, so they couldn’t determine if they could destroy us. That’s why they didn’t make any movements towards us. Otherwise, there’s no way we could’ve safely left the 3rd region.”

Hearing this, the people’s expressions all changed.

Changyang Hu let out a long breath and said, “It’s a good thing fourth brother made sure we put on perfect acts of being completely undamaged. Otherwise, if the people knew that the four of us were injured, then I’m afraid we wouldn’t have been so fortunate.” Hearing this, Aoba and the others nodded in agreement, and looked at Jian Chen with gazes filled with respect.

“Alright, we should hurry up and leave. After we return back to the academy, you guys need to properly tend to your wounds.”

The group of 6 continued to walk towards the 1st region. As they got closer to the exit, the nearby academy gradually entered their

lines of vision. Although there were definitely many people that had been unable to endure the task and gave up on it in the middle, at least 1000 people had entered the forest together. Even if more than half had given up, there were still at least a few hundreds of people remaining. However, the mere hundreds of people spread out in the enormous forest rarely met each other, so it was rare to come across others that had decided to remain in the forest.

Jian Chen's gaze swept across the people around him that were similarly heading out of the 1st region towards the academy. He saw that most of the males sported naked torsos, and were covered with wounds. However, without any exception, all the people were in sorry states; their naked torsos were covered with dirt, and their faces could not be discerned with all the filth covering them.

Only some of the females still wore the academy uniforms. However, every single one of the uniforms had become beyond dirty, and there were tears all over the clothing. Even a beggar's clothing was better than theirs. In addition, they used wide leaves to cover the parts that their clothes didn't, making them look like extremely sorry figures.

Amongst all the people, there were also a few people who had serious leg injuries, rendering them unable to walk. They were being supported by their companions the whole way, and approached the outside of the forest, one step after another.

Perhaps it was because there were so so many people present here, but there were absolutely no magical beasts in the vicinity. It was even safer than before.

Soon after, Jian Chen's group followed the direction the enchantment in the sky pointed to in order to exit the 1st region, and they finally exited the forest. Outside stood the vice headmaster, Chang Bai En, wearing a white changpao, his back straight. Behind him stood a few teachers with indifferent expressions. Further behind them was a large group of nearly 1000 Kargath Academy students. They were split into two groups: the group on the right had many more times people than the other group. Among them, some people were wearing academy uniforms that were dirty, but had very few tears. On the whole, they seemed to be in excellent and undamaged conditions.

The other group of people seemed to be in a more difficult situation. Their uniforms were all tattered, and sported quite a few bloodstains as well. Underneath the multiple rips on their clothes, it could clearly be seen that they sported many scars on their bodies.

The people in the left group only had around 200 people. All of them were in sorry states; majority of the people there were wearing clothes made of bark or beast skins, and there were quite a few people that had naked torsos. However, all the people that walked out of the forest were organized by a teacher to join the group on the left.

Afterwards, Jian Chen's group sat on the grass quietly in wait. By this point, he had already understood that all the people in the left group were those that had stayed in the forest for the entire 3 days, and had just left the forest today. On the other hand, the people in the right group were all those that had escaped before the three days were up. According to the academy's regulations, no matter whether or not they had fulfilled the requirement of obtaining 2

monster cores, they still had failed their tasks.

As he swept his gaze in a circle, Jian Chen discovered that many people in the group he was with had melancholic expressions. There were others that looked at certain people with looks of deep hatred, looking like they would spit out flames from their eyes.

At that moment, Jian Chen sensed something. He turned around to look behind him, and saw two people with dirty faces and wearing clothing made of beast skins supporting a student in similar attire. The two were currently glaring at Jian Chen with poisonous hatred, as if burning him into a crisp with their gazes alone....a strong killing intent.

After Jian Chen closely examined the people, his mouth formed a hint of a sneer. He already recognized that the person was actually Luo Jian. Although Jian Chen knew that after what happened the previous night, he had definitely wronged Luo Jian, Jian Chen didn't pay much mind to it. In terms of strength, he wasn't below Luo Jian at all. Once he was able to condense a Saint Weapon and become a Saint, Luo Jian would no longer pose any threat to him.

In terms of family backgrounds, although Jian Chen wasn't completely sure of Changyang clan's strength, they were in no means weak in any sort of aspect. Luo Jian was the son of the leader of a major powerful clan in Forbidden City, but in Jian Chen's opinion, there was no way they Luo clan would bother harassing him over such a trivial matter. After all, Luo Jian had only been injured by Jian Chen because of the training event that the academy had sent them on. In addition, the situation at that time had been because Luo Jian had first attacked his older

brother's group.

Afterwards, once all the people had walked out of the forest, Jian Chen's group had already increased to 300-400 people.

At this moment, the vice headmaster Chang Bai En walked up to the front of the crowd. He looked around at the group of figures that had obviously suffered through difficult situations. He smiled, and loudly said, "Very good. As expected, none of you have disappointed me. I hadn't imagined that this event to hunt magical beasts and stay in the forest for 3 days would have more people remaining this time compared to all the previous times this event has been held. Now, I want everyone to maintain their current formations, and begin walking back towards the academy."

Afterwards, the entire two groups maintained their exact formations and quickly advanced towards the academy. In the middle of the journey, when they encountered a small river, everyone stopped to wash their faces clean, and then continued forward. Very soon, the group of students began to approach the academy, and in the distance, they noticed that a tall platform had been erected in the center of the sports field.

The group of people stopped in front of the platform, and the vice headmaster Chang Bai En, as well as a few teachers, walked up to it. The vice headmaster sat in the chairperson's place with a straightforward and imposing manner, and calmly said, "The Magical Beast hunting competition occurring once every three years has now officially ended. According to the academy's regulations, after the task has been completed, we will now hand

out awards. I would like to now invite all the people who had stayed in the forest for the entire 3 days and have gathered 2 monster cores to simultaneously step forwards.”

As soon as the vice headmaster finished speaking, a hundred or so people immediately walked out of the crowd.

“I will now first count the Class 1 Monster Cores. Students who have hunted Class 1 Magical Beasts, please come up to the platform for the number of monster cores in your possession to be counted.” The vice headmaster continued.

Following this, all the students that had killed Class 1 Magical Beasts, including Jian Chen and Tie Ta, all walked up to the platform. There stood a teacher specifically assigned to count and record the number of monster cores that the students had earned.

Chapter 48: Mu Tian

Among the 100 or so people, the majority of them were below the Saint level, and had performed the event in the 2nd region. When the students that had Class 1 Monster Cores walked up, only a bit over 30 people remained. This made the students who did not know much about the 3rd region's conditions puzzled.

Although the 3rd region had Class 2 Magical Beasts, they all had low attack powers. To a Saint that could condense a Saint Weapon, although it may not be possible for him/her to fight against the magical beast alone, as long as a few people worked together, hunting magical beasts within the 3rd region shouldn't be very difficult to do. It should definitely be easier than a student that had not yet reached Saint level killing a Class 1 Magical Beast. After all, the Saint Weapons that Saints had were extremely powerful, and far surpassed those other ordinary weapons.

Logically, the chances of students completing their task in the 3rd region should definitely be much higher than those in the 2nd region. However, nobody had imagined that the event would end up with such results. In the 3rd region, only a pathetic 30 or so students had completed their task; this was much less than the people who had finished in the 2nd region.

When the first student arrived in front of the teacher inspecting the monster cores, he directly reached into his Space Belt and lightly placed all of his monster cores on the table. This student only took out 3 monster cores total.

Casually gazing at the three Class 1 Monster Cores, the

approximately 50-year old teacher in charge of inspecting the monster cores nodded and said, “Hm, not bad. You qualify as passing. What’s your name?”

“Teacher, my name is Cheng Yun Feng.” The youth that was being inspected excitedly said. The two words “Not bad” had already confirmed the fact that the teacher was praising him. Being complimented by the teacher was the greatest honor to him.

The teacher picked up his pen and recorded the information on a piece of paper, then said, “Go return your Space Belt to the academy. Take your monster cores. Also, this is a badge that represents your glory. You must take good care of it.” The teacher pulled out a badge from underneath the table, and handed it to the student.

The student happily agreed. He carefully and tenderly took the badge, and then he walked off the platform in extremely high spirits.

“Next!”

.....

Afterwards, students walked up in succession and handed their monster cores to the teacher for appraisal, and at the same time, were recorded. The process was quite fast, and in the blink of an eye, dozens of people had already passed. The fewest number of monster cores among them so far had been 2, and the greatest number had taken out 8, which had made the appraising elder

shocked for a moment.

At this moment, a handsome youth with an uncommon air walked up to get his monster cores inspected. The youth had a small scar on his forehead, and it was most likely a recent wound from the forest, since the scar still had a hint of blood on it.

The youth calmly walked up to the elder, and quietly took off his Space Belt. He then began to take out monster cores, and placed them on the table one by one. As he was removing them, the table was soon filled with 6 Class 1 Monster Cores, yet he showed no signs of stopping. He continued to leisurely pull out monster core after monster core from his Space Belt. His movements were not at all rushed, and the expression on his face was indifferent, giving off the impression that he was a very steadfast person.

When the youth first took out 6 monster cores, the inspecting teacher finally returned to his senses. A smile slowly formed on his face, and he lightly nodded while looking at the youth with an expression of admiration.

Soon, the youth had already pulled out 10 monster cores. At this moment, the expression of the elder inspecting the monster cores finally changed. His gaze towards the youth was no longer one of admiration, but one of shock. For a person that had not yet reached Saint level to have managed to kill and retrieve monster cores from 10 Class 1 Magical Beasts was definitely not an easy task. In addition, the youth still showed no signs of stopping, signifying to everyone present that he still had not finished removing all of the monster cores from his Space Belt.

The students lined up being this youth had already been shocked speechless at the sight of him pulling out so many monster cores. They thought back to how much energy they had consumed in the forest just to retrieve 2-3 monster cores; to them, this had already been quite an amazing achievement. Many of them had even felt quite proud of this. Yet the youth in from of them had pulled out many times more monster cores than they had received within the last 3 days in a single breath. How could they not be shocked? Having fought against the Class 1 Magical Beasts quite a few times, they had been left with a deep realization that without reaching Saint level, using an iron weapon to kill Class 1 Magical Beasts with such thick skin was extremely difficult.

The youth did not pay any mind to the onlookers' expressions, as if he didn't see them. His movements had still not stopped, and he continued to pull out monster cores from his Space Belt one after another without a pause. Soon, there were already 15 monster cores piled onto the table, yet the youth still didn't show the slightest trace of stopping. He was still equally unhurried as before, and he very calmly continued to take out more monster cores from his Space Belt.

At this moment, all the teachers on the platform were gazing at the youth in shock and disbelief. For a person not yet a Saint to have killed more than 10 magical beasts within 3 days would perhaps be possible if he worked together with 5-6 people, but to have hunted so many magical beasts in 3 days alone was really something the teachers felt was impossible, unless those magical beasts were all seriously wounded.

Sitting on top of the platform, the vice headmaster Chang Bai En smiled and said, "His name seems to be Mu Tian. He only entered

the academy last year. After only a single year, he went from the 8th Saint Force layer to the peak of the 10th layer. This speed is quite good. It's said that he even tried to attack a Saint. Although he ultimately failed, it has to be admitted that the Mu clan really did send a good young successor this time."

The vice headmaster Chang Bai En paused for a bit, then shifted his gaze towards the lined up Changyang Xiang Tian and Tie Ta and muttered, "I really anticipate Changyang Xiang Tian's and Tie Ta's harvests. It's said that the two of them had actually ran to the 3rd region to hunt Class 2 Magical Beasts on the last day. Their powers are clearly not at the Saint level yet. Heavens, to have relied on iron weapons to hunt Class 2 Magical Beasts, that is really too unfathomable. If I hadn't personally witnessed the two of them kill a completely undamaged Class 2 Magical Beast, I would not dare to believe that such a situation was true. It seems that not only did the headmaster accept a good apprentice, Lore City's Changyang clan which has been silent for so long will soon return to their former glory because of Changyang Xiang Tian in the near future."

Only after the youth had taken out 23 Class 1 Monster Cores did he finally stop. He calmly looked at the inspecting elder taking notes, and said, "Teacher, these are the monster cores I retrieved."

The elder in charge of the inspection swept a glance at the 23 monster cores and let out a long breath. He looked at the youth with bright eyes full of emotions and asked, "What's your name?"

"Mu Tian!" The youth replied in an indifferent tone.

The elder's gaze gradually became more serious as he continued to ask, "Mu Tian, did you gain these monster cores by yourself, or did you work together with others for them?"

Mu Tian's expression did not change, as he had long since expected this would happen. "Teacher, these monster cores were gained by my hard work alone."

Hearing this, the elder's expression immediately changed. He looked intensely at Mu Tian with an expression beyond admiration, then smiled and nodded, "Good! Good! Good! Mu Tian, right? Very good. Your results are extremely outstanding. I hope that you continue to work hard in the future." The elder did not ask how Mu Tian had gained the 23 monster cores; that was not important at all. The important part was that he knew that these monster cores had been gained through Mu Tian's hard work alone. After all, in the Tian Yuan Continent, strength represented everything. As long as one could achieve the final victory, no matter what kind of dishonest methods were used, nobody would say anything about it.

Hearing the elder's words of praise, Mu Tian could not help but smile.

At that moment, the elder took about a sky blue belt and badge. He handed them over to Mu Tian and said, "This is a Space Belt you had previously given us, and this is your badge. Take proper care of them."

Mu Tian calmly accepted the Space Belt and the badge of glory, and re-inserted the 23 monster cores into his Space Belt, before

walking off the platform. From beginning to end, Mu Tian had not shown a single trace of arrogance or pride; he always had the same, indifferent expression.

Jian Chen's gaze followed Mu Tian until he walked off the platform. In his heart, he had already committed Mu Tian's name to memory. Based on his intuition, he felt that Mu Tian was probably quite a complex person, and hadn't used his full potential yet either. In the future, he would definitely accomplish much more; it was simply still unknown which of the two paths he would choose to advance on.

Because Mu Tian had taken out over 20 monster cores, the following students didn't induce any type of reactions when they removed their monster cores. Majority of them had only the minimum 2 monster cores; the number of people that had more than 2 was very few. Aside from Mu Tian's 23 monster cores, the highest harvest had been the previous 8 monster cores.

The inspection went by quickly, and it was soon Jian Chen's turn. At this moment, the gazes of the vice headmaster sitting in the chairperson's seat, as well as a few other teachers, immediately lit up. Their eyes closely followed Jian Chen, showing expressions of extreme concentration. The vice headmaster Chang Bai En who had previously been reclining in his seat could not help but straighten his back, as he gazed at Jian Chen, full of expectations. Although he knew that Jian Chen had killed quite a few magical beasts in the forest, he didn't know the exact numerical value of this "quite a few".

Jian Chen calmly walked up to the elder in charge of inspecting

the monster cores and lowered his head to look at the 2 meter long table. A troubled expression showed on his face, and after some hesitation, he said, “Teacher, can you please change to a larger table?”

“Huh?” Hearing Jian Chen’s words, the elderly man who was closely inspecting paused, and asked in confusion, “What did you just say?”

Seeing that the table was originally not very large, and that there were already some items of little value on top of it, Jian Chen could only show a helpless expression. This table was really too small; there was absolutely no way he could fit all of his monster cores that pretty much completely filled his Space Belt.

“Yes, teacher. Can I please ask you to change this table to a slightly larger one? This table is too small.” Jian Chen continued.

Chapter 49: The Shock

Hearing Jian Chen's words, all the students lined up behind him, aside from Tie Ta, showed expressions of shock. They all gave extremely strange looks at Jian Chen, and quite a few suspected that they had heard him wrong. In their opinion, if you needed to hand over your monster cores, then just hand them over. Why would you bother caring about how large the table being used was? Wasn't this simply asking for trouble?

“Who is that person? He's really reckless, to even ask the teacher to change tables....”

“He's really an idiot, to dare tell Teacher Steve that the table was too small in front of so many people. The most unfathomable thing is that he wants Teacher Steve to change tables for him. Heavens, for him to confront Teacher Steve about the table being used, does he not know that Teacher Steve is the strictest teacher in all of Kargath Academy?”

.....

Quite a few people began to point at Jian Chen in discussion, looking at him as if he was an idiot.

The inspecting elder's expression changed, as he furrowed his brows and stared severely at Jian Chen. He snorted and then in a low voice said, “What's your name? You even tried to confront a teacher like this; this table was prepared ages ago. It's not something that can be changed just because you said it should be

changed.”

Jian Chen’s words not only irritated the inspecting teacher, even a few of the teachers judging from the back could not help but knit their brows as they looked at Jian Chen with displeased expressions. Jian Chen’s words were completely disrespectful to them as teachers.

Not a single one of the people even considered the fact that Jian Chen had requested for change in tables because the current table had no way of fitting all the monster cores inside his Space Belt.

Of course, there were some teachers who were exceptions; their demeanors were still very calm. Their faces only showed a light trace of a smile. These few were the ones who watched Jian Chen and Tie Ta viciously kill a group of Blue Wolf Kings.

At this time behind them, a beautiful girl with a pair of bright eyes stared suspiciously at Jian Chen’s figure, frowning in deep thought and whispering softly, “Strange. Why do I feel that his shadow is a little familiar, maybe I’ve met him somewhere?” The girl’s eyebrows furrowed as she thought hard. Suddenly, her eyes flashed, and a familiar figure appeared in her mind. The next moment, her eyes exposed a look of surprise accompanied by a magical color. She unconsciously shouted, “Changyang Xiang Tian, he is Changyang Xiang Tian!”

The girl’s voice was not concealed at all so many people heard her. The moment everyone heard the name Changyang Xiang Tian, their faces started to change as the students who had been recklessly hurling insults Changyang Xiang Tian started to shut

their mouths like obedient children.

Changyang Xiang Tian was a name that was prominent throughout Kargath Academy and was practically heard of by everyone. However, not many people had actually seen what he looked like, most of who did were freshmen. Jian Chen's face was rendered indistinctive with all of the mud and grime that left very little of his face unblemished, his clothes were also extremely tattered to the point of him looking like a beggar. With his current state of appearance, no one would be able to recognize him even when he was lined up in front of everyone.

After hearing Changyang Xiang Tian's name, the teacher in charge of inspecting the monster cores went blank as he gave a closer look. Apparently, Changyang Xiang Tian was a name even the teacher was familiar with, however, that didn't mean that Jian Chen had the proper authority to be able to command him to bring a new table. The teacher's mouth dropped open one more time in disbelief before preparing himself to speak again, but at that moment, Bai En from the academy board called out, "Someone bring out a bigger table immediately!" There was a smile on his face instead one of discontent, instead, he was looking at Jian Chen with anticipation as if he had already guessed the reason why Jian Chen had wanted a bigger table.

The vice-headmaster Bai En looked as if he was 34 years old, but his prestige within Kargath Academy was exceptionally high, second only to the headmaster himself. When he had spoken, all of the teachers went silent. Aside from a few teachers, the other teachers had not understood what the vice headmaster was trying to say. To think that he had asked for a bigger table even though the original table was more than enough to register a student's

monster core's count, there was just simply no use for a bigger table.

Soon after, a 3 meter long and 2 meter wide table was lifted up to the stage, and the original table that had been used by the inspecting teacher was taken away.

“Changyang Xiang Tian, you should be satisfied with this, right?” The inspecting teacher sat in front of the larger table. His attitude towards Jian Chen was not very amiable; it was evident that Jian Chen's request for a larger table had left an extremely bad impression on the 50-60 year old teacher.

Seeing that the elder's heart had some sort of prejudice against him, Jian Chen could not help but smile bitterly. He hadn't imagined that just because of something like this, the teacher would actually have something against him. This had definitely gone against his expectations, but Jian Chen didn't mind it too much.

Afterwards, Jian Chen directly removed his Space Belt. Unlike the other students that had removed the monster cores one by one, he directly grabbed a handful of at 10 monster cores and pulled them out, lightly placing them on the table. All of these monster cores were faint white in color, and were about one circle larger than the size of an adult's finger.

Seeing Jian Chen pull out 10 monster cores at once, although the appraising elder was previously unsatisfied with Jian Chen's earlier actions, he could not help inwardly nodding. However, just as the appraising elder had assumed these were all the monster

cores Jian Chen had, Jian Chen's hand once again reached into his Space Belt, and continue to pull out a great handful of monster cores. Once again, there were 10 of them in his hand.

Now there were already 20 monster cores on the table in front. Seeing this, the appraising elder's eyes lit up. He looked at Jian Chen in astonishment and inwardly thought to himself, "This Changyang Xiang Tian's reputation is indeed not undeserved. Although he has not yet reached Saint level, he was able to defeat a Saint. It seems that he really is quite skilled."

Following this, Jian Chen continued to reach into his Space Belt and once again pulled out a handful of monster cores to gently place onto the table. "Dong dong dong" sounds rang out as the hard monster cores came into contact with the wooden table.

Seeing Jian Chen once again take out 10 monster cores from his Space Belt, the expression of the appraising elder had instantly changed. His eyes now reflected complete shock, since by now, Jian Chen had taken out 30 monster cores, 7 more than Mu Tian had.

For a student that had not yet reached Saint level to have killed 30 Class 1 Magical Beasts within 3 days inside the forest was undoubtedly a record. Even the elder that had gone around the world and witnessed many things before could not help but be dumbstruck by disbelief. Although these magical beasts had relatively low attack power, it was by no means an easy task for a student only at the peak of the 10th Saint Force layer to kill them.

When Jian Chen grabbed 30 Monster Cores, the teacher

evaluating him became astonished, along with the other teachers behind him as they watched this inconceivable sight. Only a few teachers who had inside information on the matter had a smile on their faces while the students lined up behind him had been dumbstruck when he had pulled the 30 monster cores out.

But Jian Chen didn't bother to look at the stupefied expressions on the teachers and students around him. While everyone was staring at him, his hands went into his Space Belt once more and grabbed another bunch of monster cores to put onto the table. When his hand refused to stop, the teachers all looked on with a sluggish expression, as the cycle repeated and he reached into his Space Belt and grabbed yet another handful...

Soon after Jian Chen had placed a couple handful of monster cores onto the table, the big official table was filled with monster cores. Although they were all Class 1 Monster Cores, because they came from different species, the cores would not be the same size or shape. Small cores were almost the size of the big toe of a person, and the biggest cores were the size of a small child's fist.

Whether it was a student or teacher, both groups had been put into shock by Jian Chen. For a person who was not yet at the Saint level state to hunt and kill almost 100 Class 1 Magical Beast in a span of 3 days; if someone were to try to say this to someone else, they wouldn't be believed. At this moment, aside from a small amount of people, every other person would not believe that it was Jian Chen who had killed all these magical beasts. Many people had thought that the huge amount of monster cores were a result of many people helping him collect monster cores or that he had stolen them. The consensus was that he could not have killed all those Class 1 Magical Beast by himself.

Seeing the official table being covered by a little under 100 monster cores from Jian Chen, the teacher in charge of counting them let out a deep breath. Although in his heart he thought that Jian Chen had to have fought many other groups for their monster cores. He had to admire Jian Chen's strength however, even when it came to dishonorable acts like thievery, the teachers would not care since this is a common event in the Tian Yuan continent.

Seeing almost 100 Class 1 Monster Cores from Jian Chen, the vice headmaster Bai En let loose an incredulous look. He knew in his heart that the reason why the 2nd region had so many less people hunting for monster cores was because they had been robbed by Jian Chen. There was no doubt that Jian Chen had stolen all of the monster cores from someone else, otherwise, everyone would have passed the test with the monster cores they earned by a legitimate show of strength from killing magical beasts.

With this recent development, the vice headmaster Bai En was quite emotional today as even his heart shook. Though at the same time, there was a small amount of doubt, could it be that Jian Chen and Tie Ta could easily kill magical beasts without even adding qi to weapons? Were they just not using cultivation anymore? Unexpectedly, Jian Chen and Tie Ta had both killed around 100 magical beasts over the span of the last three days.

The look in the teacher's eye was quite complicated. Soon after he had started to count the monster cores on the table; the teacher didn't ask how Jian Chen had acquired these monster cores since the definite conclusion was already clear in his mind.

Chapter 50: Over 100 Class 1 Monster Cores

The monster cores were quickly counted. The elder in charge of the appraisal said, “There is a total of 98 monster cores here. This is your Space Belt; please return the academy Space Belt now.” The elder handed Jian Chen an emerald green Space Belt; this was the Space Belt that Jian Chen’s father, Changyang Ba, had gifted him when he had left the Changyang clan.

Jian Chen looked at the academy Space Belt in his hands for a bit, and after some hesitation said, “Teacher, for the time being, please take care of my belt here. After this evaluation ends, I will return the academy Space Belt.”

Hearing this, the elder knit his brows, and asked in confusion, “What?” Perhaps it was because Jian Chen alone had gained nearly 100 monster cores, but the elder’s attitude towards Jian Chen had clearly changed.

“Teacher, I still have Class 2 Monster Cores in my Space Belt, so I still need to take part in the Class 2 Monster Cores evaluation later.” Jian Chen plainly said. Right now, the evaluation was only being held for Class 1 Monster Cores; the evaluation for Class 2 Monster Cores wouldn’t begin until after this one finished.

“Hm, is that so? You still have Class 2 Monster Cores?” Hearing this, the elder had disbelief written on his face, and he looked at Jian Chen with suspicion. It wasn’t only the elder, the other teachers sitting on the platform were currently looking at Jian Chen with identical expressions.

Jian chen nodded, “Yes, Teacher!”

Hearing this, the elder let out a deep breath. His gaze towards Jian Chen grew solemn. Only now did he realize that he had really underestimated the rumors that had been going around about Changyang Xiang Tian. However, he didn’t bother wasting his breath on this matter, and waved his hand, “Alright, store away these monster cores. You can continue to attend the second round of evaluations.”

Afterwards, Jian Chen placed the 100 or so monster cores back into his Space Belt and left the platform. However now, both the teachers on the platform and the students surrounding him looked at Jian Chen with completely different expressions. Their gazes were complicated, mixed with jealousy, envy, and even some with disdain.

After walking off the platform, Jian Chen didn’t rejoin the crowd. Instead, he walked up to the people waiting for the Class 2 Monster Cores evaluation that were currently lined up in wait. All the students awaiting evaluation had already reached Saint level, and aside from Changyang Hu’s group, all of them looked at Jian Chen with expressions of shock and doubts as he walked up to them. They hadn’t even met Jian Chen in the 3rd region, and it was obvious that they found it extremely abnormal for a person not yet a Saint to be able to show off Class 2 Monster Cores. The really found it extremely hard to believe that Jian Chen had actually entered the 3rd region and killed Class 2 Magical Beasts; in addition, he had at least managed to gain two Class 2 Monster Cores.

Lined up behind Jian Chen was Tie Ta. After Jian Chen walked off, Tie Ta also arrived in front of the appraising elder.

At this point, Tie Ta being the Kargath Academy's headmaster's apprentice was no longer a secret; all the teachers recognized him. When Tie Ta walked up, the appraising elder could not help but smile as he said, "Tie Ta, I wonder what your profits were like this time?"

Tie Ta laughed, but did not say anything in reply. Just as Jian Chen had done, he reached his hand into his Space Belt and directly pulled out a large handful of monster cores, before lightly placing them on the table. Tie Ta's fists were slightly larger than Jian Chen's, so each one held 14-15 monster cores every time.

Seeing the 14-15 monster cores on the table, the appraising elder began to smile, as he inwardly thought to himself, "As expected of the person that the headmaster has his eye on. Although he has the heart and body of a tiger and seemed to lack shrewdness, his talent really cannot help but make one sigh in admiration."

After taking out 14-15 monster cores, Tie Ta's movements didn't stop at all. He once again reached into his Space Belt to pull out a fistful of monster cores. The students and teachers all stared at the table as gradually, the number of monster cores increased more and more, until there were multiple dozens.

Only after Tie Ta had finally taken out a little under 100 monster cores did he finally stop. Seeing all the monster cores he had gained, Tie Ta laughed in a straightforward manner and happily said, "Teacher, these are the monster cores I have gained."

At that moment, all the teachers and students in the vicinity were shocked speechless. They all stared at the slightly under 100 monster cores piled on the table with expressions of disbelief.

The appraising elder let out a long breath, and then looked at Tie Ta intensely, and slowly said, “Good, good. Tie Ta, you’ve done very well, and have not lost any face for your master.” Saying this, the elder lowered his head and began to count the monster cores. He did not inquire how Tie Ta had gained those monster cores. In his heart, he had already linked together Tie Ta’s means of collecting the monster cores with Jian Chen’s.

The elder quickly finished counting the monster cores and said, “There are a total of 97 monster cores here.” Saying this, the elder recorded it into his notebook.

After he had finished taking note, the elder took out an exquisite, extremely well-made, black Space Belt adorned with a few gems, and handed it over along with the badge of glory to Tie Ta, and said, “Tie Ta, this is the Space Belt that you had left in our care, as well as the badge of glory that you have earned. Collect your monster cores, and then return the academy Space Belt to the academy.”

It was obvious from a single glance that this high-grade Space Belt had been given to Tie Ta by the headmaster after he had become the headmaster’s apprentice. Otherwise, a child born into a commoner family like him would have absolutely no way of purchasing such a high-grade item like this Space Belt. Although these types of Space Belts were not uncommon in Tian Yun

Continent, it was not something that ordinary people could own.

Tie Ta's gaze was locked onto the black Space Belt for while, before he shook his head and said, "Teacher, I would like to keep this Space Belt under your care. I still have Class 2 Monster Cores."

"What! You also have Class 2 Monster Cores?" Hearing this, the appraising elder looked at him with an extremely shocked expression, with a hint of disbelief hidden as well.

Hearing Tie Ta's words, the other teachers that were sitting on the platform exchanged glances of disbelief with each other. They hadn't imagined that after Jian Chen, there would be another student not yet at Saint level that had managed to gain Class 2 Monster Cores.

That appraising elder hesitated for a bit before replying, "Tie Ta, did you go to the 3rd region?" Although the elder's question was overstepping his responsibilities, he could not ignore the strong feelings of curiosity in his heart. Even though he had already guessed the answer, he would definitely not dare to believe it unless Tie Ta confirmed the situation.

Tie Ta nodded, and spoke in a muffled voice, "Yes, I went to the 3rd region."

The appraising elder continued to ask, "Did you gain your Class 2 Monster cores from killing magical beasts?" Despite the fact he was far overstepping his boundaries, nobody tried to stop him, since it was not only the elder that was extremely curious to know

the answer. Even all of the teachers on the platform felt the same way, and they wanted a clear-cut confirmation.

“A portion of it was gained from Changyang Xiang Tian and I killing magical beasts.” Tie Ta had no intention of hiding anything, but he only said half of the story.

Hearing this, the elder asked in shock and disbelief, “What! You’re saying that you and Changyang Xiang Tian killed Class 2 Magical Beasts?”

Tie Ta nodded and replied, “Yes.”

This answer made all of the teachers on the platform stunned. Many of them couldn’t believe what they had just heard; for two students not yet Saints to have killed Class 2 Magical Beasts was unprecedented in the history of Kargath Academy.

Afterwards, Tie Ta stowed away his monster cores and walked off the platform. He joined the group of people waiting for Class 2 Monster Cores evaluations, and stood behind Jian Chen. However at this point, Tie Ta and Jian Chen had already become the center of everyone’s attention, and the people who had failed the task that were currently standing behind them looked at the two with quite a lot of jealousy. There were many of them that had been pathetically running all over the place to escape from the pursuits of Class 1 Magical Beasts, and they had never imagined that Jian Chen and Tie Ta, who were not at higher levels than them, would manage to not only gain a hundred Class 1 Monster Cores in the 2nd area, but also gain Class 2 Monster Cores. This made them feel extremely disoriented, and quite a few of the upperclassmen felt

embarrassed as well.

Soon afterwards, the Class 1 Monster Cores evaluation ended. The one that had the highest number of monster cores was Jian Chen, with a total of 98 monster cores, while Tie Ta was in second place, with one less monster core. The two of them had many more times monster cores than Mu Tian, who was in third place.

Amidst the crowd of people, Mu Tian's eyes flashed in astonishment at Jian Chen and Tie Ta, and he murmured to himself, "Tie Ta, Changyang Xiang Tian, your reputation is well-deserved. You two are indeed experts that can defeat Saints. I'd love to have a chance to interact with the both of you."

Although he had had his spotlight taken away by Jian Chen and Tie Ta, Mu Tian did not show a single trace of dissatisfaction. He was still just as indifferent as before, as if this was an insignificant matter that had absolutely no impact on him.

At that moment, Changyang Hu walked up to Jian Chen with a happy expression, and said in a low voice, "Fourth brother, the two of you are really too abnormal. Within 3 days, each of you managed to gain nearly 100 monster cores." Changyang Hu's tone barely concealed his happiness, and he looked at Jian Chen proudly.

Jian Chen smiled wordlessly. Suddenly, his gaze shifted as he sensed something. He looked behind him to see a youth with tattered clothes glaring at him with poisonous hatred. The youth's gaze did not bother to conceal his strong killing intent, and it was so severe that Jian Chen could not help but furrow his brows.

However, when Jian Chen inspected the youth's appearance a bit more closely, his heart suddenly skipped a beat. The youth was Luo Jian, who had all of his monster cores plundered by Jian Chen. Luo Jian's monster cores had been entirely stolen from him mercilessly, and he had even been heavily injured. Although it did not greatly affect his movements, since he and his group of companions had completely lost all of their battle spirit, they had been unable to gather the energy to steal others' monster cores or hunt magical beasts afterwards. Thus, Luo Jian's group had ended the task with failure.

Jian Chen smiled, his expression showing a hint of disdain. He paid absolutely no mind to Luo Jian. In regards to people like Luo Jian, Jian Chen had met many of them as a wanderer in his previous world. However, very few of them had the ability to really stir up storms.

The second round of monster core evaluations soon started. The students that had reached Saint levels and finished their task walked up to the platform in succession. However, there were two exceptions among them: Jian Chen and Tie Ta, who had not yet reached Saint level, while everyone else had.

The teacher evaluating the Class 2 Monster Cores was still the same elder, and the assessment progressed quickly. Because of all the stealing that had occurred in the 3rd region, the several hundred students' monster cores had ultimately been gathered by the 30-40 people present. Thus, all of them had much more than 2 monster cores, and many people had over 10 monster cores in their possessions. There were even quite a few people that had gained 23 monster cores.

Chapter 51: Class 4 Monster Core (One)

Quickly, over ten people passed the inspection. At this time, an unusual young man came up. This young man had tattered clothes but the arrogance between his brows was present as ever. When he came up to the table, he quickly brought out a huge pile of Monster Cores to place onto the table.

The old man in charge of the inspection obviously knew this young man and after counting the number of Monster Cores on the table, he said appraisingly, “There are a total of 93 Magic Cores. Pretty good, Cheng Mingxiang, your score is exceptionally good.”

Hearing Cheng Mingxiang’s name, Tie Ta, who was at the end of the line, looked at Cheng Mingxiang standing in front of the table, waiting for his evaluation to finish. Tie Ta’s eyes were bright with battle spirit; he hadn’t been able to forget his last unfinished fight against Cheng Mingxiang. At that time, he wasn’t as strong as he was right now, especially after killing magical beasts in the forest for the past 3 days. Since he had also gained some pointers from Jian Chen, Tie Ta’s current fighting abilities were far greater than they had been before. He believed that with his current strength, as well as his newly gained battle experience, he would be able to fully utilize his godly strength in the fight to make up for the difference in Saint Force between the two of them. There was definitely no way he’d lose to Cheng Mingxiang.

Although Tie Ta appeared to be thick-headed, he clearly understood that this was not the time to spar against Cheng Mingxiang, so he could only angrily glare at Cheng Mingxiang’s back. Eventually, he managed to suppress his strong desire to fight Cheng Mingxiang.

Hearing the elder's praise, Cheng Mingxiang smiled, and his eyes showed pride and a hint of arrogance behind them.

The appraising elder recorded the value in his notebook, then continued, "93 Class 2 Monster Cores, huh! If nothing unexpected happens, then you will definitely be part of the top 3 places for Class 2 Monster Cores. In addition, you are the Cultivation Genius, so your future is boundless. Keep working hard."

"Thank you very much for your praise, Teacher Steve!"

The elder's compliments made Cheng Mingxiang's arrogant expression even more pronounced.

Afterwards, Cheng Mingxiang returned the academy Space Belt and retrieved his own as well as the badge of glory, before stepping off the platform.

After Cheng Mingxiang left, another student with similarly tattered clothes walked up to the table. He directly pulled out a large handful of monster cores; it seemed that he did not have any less monster cores than Chen Ming Xiang.

The appraising elder smiled and nodded, his gaze resting on the youth's face as he slowly said, "Not bad, Huang Dong. It seems that your harvest this time is quite plentiful."

Hearing Huang Dong's name, quite a few students below the

platform exclaimed in shock. Jian Chen's expression also shifted, his gaze immediately locking onto that youth's figure. Jian Chen was no stranger to Huang Dong's name; his strength was third on Kargath Academy's top 10 experts list. Jian Chen had heard that his power had already reached the peak Saint level last year, and he was only one step away from becoming a Great Saint. In addition, once he successfully broke through, it would signify that he could graduate.

Kargath Academy's top 10 experts list referred to the 10 strongest and most formidable students. All of them had already reached peak Saint level, and were not far from becoming Great Saints. Once they broke through, they would leave the top 10 experts circle.

In response to the elder's praise, Huang Dong only smiled, and did not reply.

Soon, the elder had already finished counting the monster cores on the table. Huang Dong had earned a total of 91 monster cores, 2 less than Cheng Mingxiang.

Once Huang Dong had left the platform, more people from the top 10 experts list appeared on the platform. Almost all of them had numerous monster cores, and the first ranked student on the top 10 experts list, Bogadi, had a total of 103 monster cores. However, among these top 10 experts, only 4 of them had completed the task; the other 6 had all been eliminated. They had encountered people of the same level as they were, but had lost to the opposite party due to a difference in numbers. Thus, their monster cores had been plundered.

Very quickly, all the people on the top 10 experts lists had already left the platform. The people remaining were all extremely well-known. At this point, the one who had displayed the highest number of monster cores so far was the first ranked on the top 10 experts list——Bogadi, with a total of 103 monster cores.

The person in second place was the fifth ranked, one of the top 10 experts list: Jing Ming Yue. She was also the sole female on the top 10 experts list. She had earned a total of 101 monster cores, 2 less than Bogadi had.

The person in third place was Cheng Mingxiang, with a total of 93 monster cores. Although he was not on the list of top 10 experts, his power had already reached the upper Saint levels, and he was also a higher-ranked elite at Kargath Academy. His abilities were not much lower than the people in the list of top 10 experts, and at Kargath Academy, he had acclaimed the title of the Cultivation Genius. His cultivation speed was much higher than most people's, and his abilities in battle couldn't be underestimated either.

After the three of them had left, all the people had already determined the top 3 winners, because the only people left in line were people who were not well-known in Kargath Academy. Their powers were all only primary or mid Saint levels, and there was, naturally, no way they could compare to the other three.

Changyang Hu's group of four had managed to pillage quite a few monster cores thanks to being with Jian Chen. Although the four of them had equally split half the cores, each one of them had still managed to get 30-40 of them. Even though this did not count as

that plentiful of an amount, based on their strengths, this number was already quite good. After all, they were only primary level Saints.

Very soon, all the Saints had already finished their evaluations. Although there were people who had quite a few monster cores, none of them had more than the third place holder. Right now, the only 2 people remaining were Tie Ta and Jian Chen.

Currently, both the teachers on the platform and the students below it had their gazes locked onto Jian Chen and Tie Ta. The two of them weren't Saints yet, but they had reached the level at which they could kill Class 2 Magical Beasts. This made quite a few people feel intense jealousy and emotions of turmoil. At that moment, everyone was trying to guess how many monster cores were on these two, who hadn't condensed Saint Weapons yet. Of course, nobody dared to use the other upperclassmen as a basis for Jian Chen's and Tie Ta's earnings; they all guessed that the two of them wouldn't have that many Class 2 Monster Cores on them.

Jian Chen walked up to the appraising elder and removed his Space Belt. At this moment, the elder was looking at Jian Chen with an expression of praise; the previous prejudices he originally had towards Jian Chen had now completely disappeared. Although he was sure that Jian Chen and Tie Ta would definitely not have more than 10 Class 2 Monster Cores in their possessions, just the fact that the two of them had entered the 3rd region and slayed Class 2 Magical Beasts without being a Saint was already something that the elder had to have a whole new level of respect for. After all, this was the first time non-Saints had ever been able to kill Class 2 Magical Beasts in the history of Kargath Academy.

At that moment, the listless teachers sitting on the platform could not help but get excited. One by one, they turned their gaze towards Jian Chen.

Jian Chen calmly swept his gaze across the surrounding teachers. When he confirmed that the teachers were staring at him with eyes that were bright with anticipation, his previous indifferent expression could not help a subtle smile. He directly reached into his Space Belt and removed a handful of Class 2 Monster Cores and placed them on the table; there seemed to be around 10 of them.

After seeing Jian Chen take out the 10 Class 2 Monster Cores, many of the teachers on the platform had expressions of shock and disbelief. It was very obvious that this number had surpassed most of their expectations. After all, in terms of strength, the difference between Class 2 Magical Beasts and Class 1 Magical Beasts was extremely great. Based on their original assumptions, it would've been quite amazing if Jian Chen only had 3-4 Class 2 Monster Cores. However, they hadn't imagined that he would actually have 10 of them.

Following this, without waiting for the others' minds to form any more thoughts, Jian Chen once again withdrew a fistful of Class 2 Monster Cores from his Space Belt.

Currently, the number of Class 2 Monster Cores on the table had already reached over a dozen in number. This amount was already equal to the number of cores that some of the Saint students had gained the past 3 days.

Witnessing this scene, all the teachers on the platform showed

incredulous expressions. Even the appraising elder could not help but be shocked speechless at the dozens of monster cores that Jian Chen had pulled out. Although there were only a few dozen Class 2 Monster Cores, this still made the teachers' emotions surge even more than when Jian Chen had pulled out around 100 Class 1 Monster Cores in a single breath. After all, these Class 2 Monster Cores had been pulled out by a person that hadn't reached Saint level yet.

At that moment, all the teachers suddenly realized that if those dozens of monster cores had been earned by Jian Chen personally killing Class 2 Magical Beasts, then his future achievements would be....

When the teachers thought of a student that was not yet a Saint killing Class 2 Magical Beasts, a dozen of them in fact, they could not help but find it incredible.

Vice headmaster Chang Bai En, who was sitting in the chairperson's spot, had a satisfied smile and murmured, "Not bad, not bad, not bad at all. The only thing that remains unknown is how many of these monster cores you were able to earn by killing magical beasts with your own strength. It seems this will have to be more closely investigated later."

After taking out dozens of Class 2 Monster Cores, Jian Chen's movements still did not stop. His hand once again reached into his Space Belt and pulled out another handful of monster cores. Afterwards, Jian Chen's movements continued to repeat, and under all the incredulous teachers' shocked gazes, he continued to pull out various sized Class 2 Monster Cores, until the whole table

was completely covered.

Seeing the table full of Class 2 Monster Cores, all the teachers on the platform were stuck in a daze. Even the students below the platform that could see what was going on at the table had expressions of disbelief, as if they had just witnessed an unfathomable scene.

The appraising elder inhaled deeply, and tried to quell his emotions of shock as well as he could to calm himself down. The monster cores on the table were ones that he had never in his lifetime seen before, and he had seen many more higher-level monster cores before. Yet these Class 2 Monster Cores could not be described through ordinary means.

The appraising elder looked intensely at Jian Chen before lowering his head to count the monster cores. Soon, the assessment had finished. However, the elder had a shocked expression of disbelief on his face, as his emotions that had just calmed down now began to surge uncontrollably once more. He sat in front of the table in a daze, unable to open his mouth and report the number of monster cores.

A few breaths later, the vice headmaster Chang Bai En sitting in the chairperson's position could finally no longer wait any longer, and said, "Steve, hurry up and report the number of monster cores." Vice headmaster Bei En's tone trembled slightly with excitement, although his expression was extremely calm.

Hearing the vice headmaster's words, the appraising elder took a deep breath, before declaring, "Changyang Xiang Tian, number of

Class 2 Monster Cores gained: 118.”

Chapter 52: Class 4 Monster Core (Two)

After the appraising elder finished his statement, everyone inhaled sharply in shock. The whole arena instantly became so silent, that one would've been able to hear a pin drop.

This number made even the vice headmaster Chang Bei En speechless. His gaze locked onto the huge pile of Class 2 Monster Cores on the table with an expression of astonishment. This number far surpassed the amount of monster cores that the previous first place winner, Bogadi, had.

A while passed before a student couldn't help but shout out, "No way, that's definitely impossible. How could he, who isn't yet a Saint, be able to gain so many monster cores in the 3rd region, and have even way more than the school's top-ranked expert. Bogadi? This is definitely impossible. He definitely brought these monster cores from an outside source."

The single input raised a flood of responses. As the student finished speaking, more and more cries of protest rang out. Jian Chen's nearly 100 Class 1 Monster Cores had already made many people jealous, and had made them feel that it was unfair. Now that he had taken out 118 Class 2 Monster Cores, which was an amount even greater than his Class 1 Monster Cores, the students were no longer able to accept it.

Under the platform, the currently number 1 expert in Kargath Academy's rankings, Bogadi, was staring at Jian Chen's back in shock as he murmured, "His strength is obviously not yet at Saint level; how could he have gotten so many Class 2 Monster Cores?"

Could it be that these monster cores really were taken from an outside source?" Bogadi also couldn't help but think the same way as the others. However, this assumption was immediately rejected by him, since before entering the forest, the school administration had completely confiscated all of the students' Space equipment, and the students had all gone through very strict inspections. In addition, the forest only had one entrance, so there was no chance for someone to sneak monster cores in from the outside.

Moreover, even if someone really did manage to bring them in, Bogadi believed that nobody would be stupid enough to present 100+ Class 2 Monster Cores at once. That would undoubtedly make the entire school shocked, and the administration would definitely hire people to investigate the situation.

Nearby, a gorgeous girl in tattered clothes looked absentmindedly at Jian Chen's figure on the platform and muttered, "How could that be? A freshman like him who isn't yet a Saint actually managed to get 100+ Class 2 Monster Cores?" The girl's melodious voice was filled with shock and incredulity.

On the other side, when he heard the appraising elder announce Jian Chen's monster core amount, Cheng Mingxiang gaped in shock as he stared disbelievingly at Jian Chen. However, his expression soon became gloomy, and eventually became completely replaced by wrath. This was because the person in third place for the monster cores competition received rewards. Although these rewards were not worth that much to those born in major clans, like him, instead it seen as a great honor, a verification of strength. Originally, Cheng Mingxiang had been placed as third, but now with Jian Chen in the picture, he had been forcibly pushed out of the top three. This made him extremely

angry; what was even harder to accept was the fact that Jian Chen still wasn't even a Saint.

“Changyang Xiang Tian...” Shifting his gaze, Cheng Mingxiang's face became beyond gloomy as he looked at Jian Chen with a glare full of poisonous malice.

In the crowd, Luo Jian's expression was equally gloomy. He glared hatefully at Jian Chen, as if he could eat Jian Chen alive with his gaze alone.

Although Jian Chen's current strength was still quite weak, his “Spirit” was extremely powerful. Perhaps he wouldn't be able to notice an ordinary gaze, but once a particularly severe gaze was pointed towards him, his Soul could immediately detect it. Thus, Luo Jian's and Cheng Mingxiang's malice filled glares were immediately sensed by Jian Chen. He turned around and used the aid of his powerful Soul to track the glances' sources, and easily found Luo Jian buried in the crowd.

Seeing Luo Jian's dark expression, Jian Chen sneered, but did not pay any mind to it. He had swiped all of Luo Jian's monster cores from him, forcing him to fail the task. In addition, Jian Chen had injured Luo Jian as well, so it was completely normal for Luo Jian to hate Jian Chen so much.

However, as Jian Chen's vision shifted towards Cheng Mingxiang, his brows furrowed as he showed a helpless expression. He didn't have any enmity with Cheng Mingxiang; the previous incident in front of the library was so minor that it couldn't have been the cause of such fierce hatred. The main reason was the fact

that Jian Chen had forcibly pushed Cheng Mingxiang out of the top 3.

After all, being able to place as the top 3 among the entire academy was an achievement that was an extreme glory. This was especially true for those born in noble clans, as this honor could directly increase their status by a large amount.

If it were any of the top 10 experts that had pushed Cheng Mingxiang out of the first 3 places, he definitely wouldn't have felt unhappy at all. However, since the one who had forced Cheng Mingxiang out of the top three wasn't even on the top 10 list, he was also only a freshman who did not even reach the Saint level yet, causing Cheng Mingxiang, Kargath Academy's cultivation genius, to feel humiliated. He couldn't imagine that a freshman that had just entered the school would end up reaching his level, and from this feeling, a hatred towards Jian Chen was born.

Although there was also Tie Ta, who was the headmaster's apprentice, and thus had a greater power behind him than Cheng Mingxiang had. Of course, Cheng Mingxiang wouldn't dare to casually offend the headmaster.

The appraising elder took a deep breath, forcing himself to calm down. He looked at Jian Chen profoundly, and smiled, "Changyang Xiang Tian, you've really made me shocked. I hadn't imagined that someone like you who isn't yet a Saint could actually gain so many Class 2 Monster Cores. You've already far surpassed the previous first place, Bogadi. It seems that this competition's first place has definitely been taken by you." The elder handed Jian Chen his own Space Belt and the badge of glory.

Jian Chen laughed, and reached out to accept the items. “Teacher’s words are too much. Nobody can say yet who first place will be. After all, Tie Ta is still behind me. The number of monster cores he has is not any less than me.” Saying this, Jian Chen restowed all of the monster cores into his Space Belt.

Hearing Jian Chen’s words, the elder shot Jian Chen a deep glance, and he smiled wordlessly.

After Jian Chen had completely stored away all of the Class 2 Monster Cores on the table, he directly walked off the platform. Afterwards, Tie Ta walked up to the table, and began to take out his own Class 2 Monster Cores from his Space Belt.

Tie Ta had entered the 3rd region with Jian Chen, and they had equally distributed the monster cores. Thus, he had pretty much exactly the same amount of monster cores Jian Chen had. After the appraising elder finished counting, it was revealed that Tie Ta had a total of 119 Class 2 Monster Cores, only one more than Jian Chen.

After the appraising elder announced Tie Ta’s total amount of monster cores, all of the people at the arena were once again shocked speechless.

Below the platform, the fifth ranked person on Kargath Academy’s top 10 experts, Jing Ming Yue, was in a daze. From the look in her eyes, it seemed as if she had lost her spirit. She had suddenly been forced out of second place by two freshmen; this result was difficult for her to accept. After all, she had spent a lot

of energy and effort earning those monster cores. She couldn't imagine how the two newly entered non-Saint freshmen could've gotten so many monster cores.

At that moment, an extremely beautiful girl walked up to Jing Ming Yue, and intimately hugged her arms around Jing Ming Yue's waist. Laughing, she said, "Sister Jing, you hadn't imagined that you would've been forced down from second place by two new freshmen, right?"

Jing Ming Yue sighed, and bitterly smiled, "It's really unfathomable. Those two freshmen haven't even reached Saint level, and yet they were able to gain so many monster cores. The two of them even forced Kargath Academy's number one expert, Bogadi, down to third place. I really have no clue how they got their hands on so many monster cores. Could it really be possible that they had brought them in from outside?"

The girl giggled in response, "Sister Jing, you've guessed wrongly. I believe that those Class 2 Monster Cores were earned from their own strength, not from outside as you suspect."

The girl's words made Jing Ming Yue start. Jing Ming Yue turned around and glance doubtfully at the girl, and asked in a curious tone, "Xiao Le, why do you say that?"

The girl smiled mysteriously, as she showed a prideful expression. In a low voice, she said, "Sister Jing, I encountered those two in the 2nd region, and even stayed with them for an entire day. You cannot underestimate them; they're both very formidable. Especially that Changyang Xiang Tian, he managed to

kill quite a few Class 1 Magical Beasts with a lousy iron rod by piercing them directly through the throat.”

“Really?” Jing Ming Yue asked in shock, obviously not believing it.

“Of course, I saw it with my own eyes. There’s no way it’d be false.” The girl puffed out her chest and said firmly, “Also, that night, we encountered a secret attack from 20+ Blue Wolves. The two of them effortlessly killed all of them.”

“What? You said that the two of them managed to kill 20+ Blue Wolves by themselves?” Hearing this, Jing Ming Yue could no longer hide her shock. Although she was already a high level Saint, she would still flee if she faced 20+ Class 1 Magical Beasts, let alone kill them.

The girl vigorously nodded and said, “That’s right, Sister Jing. I personally witnessed it. Although Changyang Xiang Tian and Tie Ta haven’t condense their Saint Weapons, their strength is definitely not any weaker than a Saint’s. That’s why I can promise that the monster cores in their hands are definitely not brought in from the outside.”

Hearing this, Jing Ming Yue lowered her head and thought it over seriously. Despite the fact that Jian Chen and Tie Ta had forced her out of the top 3 places, she didn’t show a trace of dissatisfaction in her expression. From this alone, it could be seen that Jing Ming Yue was not a narrow-minded person.

After the evaluation had finished, the awards ceremony began. This time, the event's top 3 places for both Class 1 Monster Cores and Class 2 Monster Cores would receive the same rewards. The first place reward was a Class 4 Monster Core and a medal of honor completely made from Purple Coins. Both second place and third place rewards included one Class 3 Monster core, and a medal of honor made from Gold Coins.

These medals weren't worth much money, but what they represented was of extraordinary significance. Thus, even the nobles that had powerful backgrounds couldn't keep their eyes from reddening at those medals of honor.

Jian Chen and Tie Ta had taken the first 2 places for both Class 1 Monster Cores and Class 2 Monster Cores, and thus earned twice the amount of rewards. Third place for Class 1 Monster Cores was still Mu Tian, and third place for Class 2 Monster Cores was Kargath Academy's number one expert, Bogadi.

After the awards ceremony had finished, Jian Chen could not help but smile excitedly at the surging, pure power in the Class 4 Monster Core he held in his hand. With the Class 4 Monster Core, as well as the 200+ monster cores in his Space Belt, he had enough to last him for a long time. Based on Jian Chen's calculations, he wouldn't have to worry about not having monster cores to use for at least a year.

Chapter 53: Becoming A Saint

After the award ceremony finished, the students at the sports field gradually began to leave, dispersing until there was absolutely nobody left. During the past 3 days of fighting against the magical beasts in the forest, almost all of the students had numerous injuries. Now that the award ceremony was over, everyone returned back to their own dorms to treat their injuries. The only people left in the sports field were the completely uninjured students that had given up on the task ages ago.

However, after experiencing this event, Jian Chen's and Tie Ta's reputations in Kargath Academy had reached its peak form. They had already become the greatest stars in the academy; no matter where one went, their names could be heard being discussed.

Jian Chen and Tie Ta, as well as Changyang Hu's group of three, bid each other farewell, and returned to their own dorms to treat their injuries as well.

In the center of the academy was a tall tower around 100 square meters large. Vice headmaster Chang Bai En was currently respectfully standing in the center of a room on the top of the tower. In front of him sat Kargath Academy's headmaster, lazily sitting in front of the office desk, with a smiling expression. His profound gaze also had hints of happiness and excitement reflected in them.

"Ah, Bai En, it seems that a genius really has appeared in Kargath Academy this time." The headmaster excitedly said with a smile.

Vice headmaster Chang Bai En nodded and smiled back, “Headmaster, that is not correct. This time, Kargath Academy has more than one genius; rather there are two. These two are Changyang Xiang Tian and Tie Ta.”

The headmaster shook his head and smiled, “No, it isn’t wrong. Tie Ta’s talent is definitely extremely high, and he also has godly strength. However, compared to Changyang Xiang Tian, he still has a long ways to go.”

Vice headmaster Chang Bai En was surprised at this response, and he asked doubtfully, “Headmaster, why do you say that?”

The headmaster let out a long sigh and said, “You definitely cannot underestimate Changyang Xiang Tian. He is quite a complicated person; no wonder the old fellow at Changyang clan kept praising him.”

“Actually, yesterday afternoon, after I had heard the news that Changyang Xiang Tian and Tie Ta had killed a Class 2 Magical Beast in the 3rd region, I personally rushed over myself to secretly watch them. Although those 2 aren’t Saints yet, their combat abilities cannot be underestimated. Especially Changyang Xiang Tian, with just a broken iron rod, he was pretty much invincible in the 3rd region. Not only are his movements incomparably fast, they are also extremely precise. His battle experience is not anything alike to a 15 year old youth’s; on the contrary, it seems as if he’s a person that has fought 100 battles already. The Class 2 Monster Cores in the two’s hands were pretty much completely killed by Changyang Xiang Tian alone. Tie Ta was simply involved in the fights.”

Hearing this, the vice headmaster Chang Bai En's gave an incredulous look and asked, "Headmaster, is Changyang Xiang Tian really as formidable as you say?"

The headmaster nodded and said, "If I hadn't personally witnessed it, I wouldn't believe that a 15 year old could have such powerful strength either. The most important part is his extensive battle experience and combat techniques. These are not something that can be learned just because one wants to learn it. Without experiencing hundreds of battles, these concepts just cannot be grasped. It's no wonder that old man Chang praised Changyang Xiang Tian so much; he really is an extremely talented genius. It seems these things were all taught by the old man."

The vice headmaster Chang Bai En looked relieved as he said, "Under the great master Chang's guidance, Changyang Xiang Tian would find it difficult to not be renowned."

The headmaster nodded and said, "Even if old man Chang is guiding from the sidelines, if Changyang Xiang Tian didn't originally have such outstanding talent, then even old man Chang wouldn't be able to teach him much, even under careful teaching. If Changyang Xiang Tian wasn't Changyang clan's fourth master, I would really make him my apprentice. After all, such geniuses are rare. If he continues to mature like this, it would be fortunate for Gesun Kingdom."

.....

After the awards ceremony, Jian Chen retrieved a new uniform and then took a shower to completely wash off all of the filth on

his body that he had gained from the few days in the forest. After he wore the brand new uniform, he felt refreshed as he headed back the dorm. Although he had battled virtually every single moment during his 3 days in the forest, he didn't show any traces of exhaustion. In his previous world, he had experienced even worse conditions.

After returning to his room, Jian Chen sat cross-legged on his bed. He held a Class 1 Monster Core in each hand, and began to cultivate. Although Jian Chen's power had already reached the peak of the 10th Saint Force layer, he could clearly sense that the Saint Force in his body had not yet reached a state of saturation.

As he gradually began to absorb the energy within the monster cores, Jian Chen's Saint Force once again quickly rose. His speed of cultivation was ten times faster than when he absorbed World Essence.

For the next three days, aside from eating meals, Jian Chen used all of his time to cultivate in his room. Eventually, the Saint Force inside him had already reached a saturated state; no matter how much further Jian Chen tried to absorb the monster cores' energies, his inner Saint Force would no longer continue to grow.

Jian Chen clearly understood that he needed to rush to Saint level and condense his Saint Weapon. Otherwise, the Saint Force within him would come to an eternal standstill.

In terms of condensing Saint Weapons, Jian Chen had long since clearly learned the procedures to becoming Saint from the school library. It used the principle of condensing all inner Saint Force

and slowly shaping it into a Saint Weapon. In the end, one uses their 'Soul' to perfectly harmonize with it. Once the inner Saint Force is completely condensed into a weapon, then a person is officially a Saint.

Jian Chen didn't stop. He took out a Class 4 Monster Core from his Space Belt, preparing to use it if needed, and immediately began to condense a Saint Weapon and rush to Saint level.

The Saint Force in Jian Chen's dantian was firmly contained by his "Soul". In the presence of his powerful "Soul", Jian Chen had absolute control over the Saint Force in his dantian. Jian Chen used his mind to control all the Saint Force within his dantian and gradually began to gather it together. Slowly, he formed it into the shape of a sword, and he finally began to compress it.

Jian Chen's powerful Soul was brought over from his previous world. Since birth, it far surpassed other people's and under this power, the weak Saint Force had no way of resisting it. The Saint Force was firmly suppressed by Jian Chen, and he constantly compressed the sword-shaped Saint Force.

As the Saint Force was compressed smaller and smaller, Jian Chen's dantian that was originally filled with Saint Force quickly began to lessen as well. Despite this, the strength of his Saint Force continued to rise, and the makeshift sword became clearer in form as well. Eventually, it became an extremely tiny sword within his dantian.

At the same time, Jian Chen was still trying to condense it even more.

Although Jian Chen had already successfully gathered and condensed his Saint Force into a sword, this didn't mean that he had already become a Saint. There was still the last and most difficult step left; this step was precisely what blocked so many people in Tian Yun Continent from becoming Saints for the rest of their lives.

In this last step, he had to merge a part of his Soul into his dantian to completely condense and form the sword and create a spiritual relationship with it. At the same time, he would have to completely harmonize with the Saint Weapon. Although this seemed simple, it was extremely difficult to do in reality.

Although this step was difficult for most people, to those that had incomparably strong Souls like Jian Chen, this was something that could be smoothly performed. Jian Chen directly split a part of his Soul and began to merge it with the condensed Saint Weapon in his dantian. He then used his practiced control to quickly link the two together. Eventually, the two had completely harmonized; they were no longer separate entities.

It was at this moment that Jian Chen had finally become a legitimate Saint. This last step had provided absolutely no obstruction to him.

Just as Jian Chen had perfectly harmonized his Soul and his Saint Weapon, he suddenly felt something strange, as if the condensed sword within him had become his own limb. He could easily control it, and he could also clearly sense every single component of this sword.

Right now, Jian Chen's dantian didn't have a single trace of Saint Force remaining inside it. The only thing left was the condensed sword, which acted as the new energy source. The sword seemed extremely tiny; from its width and length, it didn't seem very different from an embroidery needle.

Now that he had condensed his Saint Weapon, Jian Chen could sense the powerful fluctuations from Saint Weapons far clearer than he had before. It wouldn't be an exaggeration to say that as an ordinary Saint, he could easily defeat a person at the peak of the 10th Saint Force layer. Unless some unexpected or special circumstances occurred, a person at the peak of the 10th layer would absolutely be no match for a Saint.

Both Jian Chen and Tie Ta were amazing. With Tie Ta's godly strength, as well as his extremely powerful body, even Jian Chen who had been training Saint Force since he was young was naturally not as powerful as Tie Ta. Tie Ta's abnormal strength in addition to his formidable defense was enough to make up for any lack of Saint Force. Unless the difference in strength was extremely large, there was no way he could be a match against Tie Ta. At most, they would be stuck at a standstill.

Jian Chen had previously used his power at the peak 10th layer to defeat a middle ranked Saint. Although he had completely relied on the experience and battle techniques from his past world, Jian Chen's quick sword techniques and his high accomplishments in the ways of the sword, as well as his fighting willpower gained from countless experiences from life-or-death battles in his previous world were enough to make him invincible to those at the same level as him. In addition, battles with ranks higher than him

weren't even worth mentioning either.

At this moment, Jian Chen's expression suddenly changed. Immediately following, his dantian had surprisingly begun to tremble once more. His entire dantian began to fluctuate intensely in an unstable way. As soon as it began fluctuating, before Jian Chen could react, the World Essence began to frantically burst forth. The countless surrounding World Essence seemed to have been affected by some invisible attractive force, and gradually began to gather where Jian Chen was. At this moment, Jian Chen's body seemed to have left his control, and it felt as though all of his pores had suddenly opened. They frantically began absorbing the dense World Essence surrounding him.

The energy within the Monster Core in Jain Chen's hand also fiercely dropped, forming a stream of energy visible to the naked eye which flowed into Jian Chen's body.

At this moment, Jian Chen's body was like a bottomless pit. It didn't matter how strong the World Essence around him was, it was completely absorbed into his body like a whale swallowing water. At the same time, the energy of the Class four Monster Core in his hand rapidly diminished, and the speed at which it was being absorbed was unbelievable. The originally fist sized Monster Core was shrinking at a speed visible to the naked eye.

Chapter 54: Mutation Of The Dantian

Jian Chen had no idea what was happening to his body at all. Since he had lost total control over his body, he was completely unable to stop the absorption of the World Essence around him. Feeling his own body absorbing the World Essence at such a frightening speed, Jian Chen still maintained a determination of steel despite feeling slightly pressed for time. If his body continued to absorb the World Essence at this rate, it was unknown how much longer his body would be able to last before it exploded from the sudden increase of concentrated Qi. But what puzzled Jian Chen the most was that he had no idea how this happened to begin with. Why did his dantian suddenly start to absorb the World Essence out of the blue at such a remarkable speed? This left Jian Chen with no small amount of terror.

He knew in his heart that the World Essence around him was rapidly congregating and the area around him became like a storm as it flowed at a frantic speed. The gale of Qi roared and whistled throughout Kargath Academy as both leaves and loose rocks were sent flying into the air.

But when the World Essence entered Jian Chen's dantian, it was as if he threw a rock into the ocean, as the World Essence assimilated into his body leaving no indication that it was there to begin with. For that reason, Jian Chen let out a sigh of relief. Although he didn't know what had caused his dantian to go through such a dramatic change, he was glad that his body wouldn't explode from the World Essence.

At the same time within the high central tower of Kargath Academy, the headmaster of the academy suddenly cried out in

shock, “What’s happening? The World Essence is fluctuating in such a violent way!” As he spoke, the headmaster had already flew out of the window, leaving behind an after image. The moment he flew through the window, he soared into the sky at an extreme speed and immediately found himself at the dorm room of Jian Chen after a few seconds. He looked at the dorm with doubt and puzzlement as he continue to stare at the room.

Meanwhile, a streak of white light came blurring over and stopped a few hundred meters behind the headmaster. It was the vice headmaster, Bai En.

Even after the arrival of Bai En, another dozen people came flying over in rapid succession before coming to a stop behind Bai En to look at where the World Essence was congregating at.

They were all teachers of the academy with strength stronger than most, and so with the violent fluctuations of the World Essence, there would be no way at all for them to not notice.

Bai En looked at the amassed World Essence with amazement as he cried out in wonder, “Headmaster, what has happened here? Why has the World Essence gathered itself in this area?”

Although the headmaster’s face looked focused, his eyes were staring blankly as he replied, “Even I don’t know what has happened here, let’s go find out.”

With that, the headmaster plummeted down to the ground with Bai En following right behind him.

“The rest of you stay here, do not allow anyone else to come close.” He called out to the teachers.

All the teachers wanted to follow the headmaster to find out the answer to this mystery, but with the words of Bai En, the teachers stopped their initial momentum and returned to their original spots obediently. When it came to Bai En, no teacher dared to violate his commands.

Quickly, both the headmaster and Bai En arrived outside of the door to Jian Chen’s room, where the World Essence was inside.

As Bai En silently knocked onto the door, it suddenly smashed into pieces and the scene inside was projected towards the two.

Inside, they saw Jian Chen sitting crossed legged on his bed with his eyes closed as he continued to cultivate. The World Essence was still being absorbed into his dantian with such a terrifying speed that it made his body outline blurry as a fog concealed him slightly.

Seeing this phenomenon, both Bai En and the headmaster were speechless. They never would have thought that the World Essence being concentrated here was because of a single person’s cultivation. Not only that, but they were stunned by the amazing speed at which Jian Chen was absorbing the World Essence.

“So it was Changyang Xiang Tian! How...how could this be possible, with his strength, how could he bring about such an effect like this?” Bai En cried out in shock as he watched what was

inconceivable to him.

Even the headmaster was trembling as his eyes stared deeply at Jian Chen. After a good while, he let out a sigh, “This kid is not ordinary at all!”

Hearing the headmaster, Bai En nodded his head in complete belief in the headmaster. In his heart, he had always known that Jian Chen was never an ordinary student.

“Headmaster, what should we do now then?” He asked.

“We wait!” Came the reply.

And so, the headmaster and vice headmaster stood outside Jian Chen’s room and waited for him to reawaken. They didn’t enter his room, and didn’t make a sound almost as if they were afraid of accidentally disturbing the cultivating Jian Chen.

Jian Chen had long since been aware that his door had been smashed apart, but he wasn’t able to move both his body and mouth since he wasn’t in control. And the Class 4 Monster Core gripped tightly in his hand was visibly smaller now to the naked eye, its size already roughly the same size of a ping pong ball.

All of the energy and World Essence that was being absorbed into Jian Chen’s dantian disappeared like a stone falling into the ocean without leaving behind a single ripple of water behind.

Regarding this situation within his dantian, Jian Chen was absolutely clueless and didn't understand where all of the World Essence was going.

Soon after some time had passed, the energy in the Class 4 Monster Core was completely absorbed by him. Finally within his dantian a change was happening as light specks of both azure and violet started to appear. The moment the specks appeared, his dantian suddenly started to absorb the World Essence at an even faster rate, and even started to absorb World Essence from a farther distance. With the azure and violet light specks, World Essence from a dozen feet away felt the pull and began to rush towards Jian Chen before being absorbed through the pores in his body and into the glowing specks.

Because of Jian Chen's fast absorption rate of the World Essence, a faint white mist was clearly noticeable to the naked eye as it surrounded him. Because of this white mist, his own body was only faintly discernible, making both him and the area around him seem much more mysterious than before.

The increase in the rate of absorption did not go unnoticed by the two men standing outside of the door. Staring at each other in the eye, they were both astonished at what they were both seeing.

By this point, the entire Kargath Academy was aware of the sudden influx of World Essence, but aside from the teachers, each and every student took it to be a sudden gust of wind, and took no more notice to it.

Jian Chen's dantian continued to absorb the World Essence for

half the day before finally stopping. Jian Chen completely absorbed all of the World Essence dozens of kilometers away. At the moment, aside from the completed sword made from his condensed Saint Force, Jian Chen's dantian also contained azure and violet specks of light. The specks were extremely small, and they had extremely faint glows as well. The way they flickered made it seem like they would burn out at any moment.

Probing the azure and violet specks of light that had just appeared within his dantian, Jian Chen's heart momentarily grew heavy. This was the first time he had ever encountered an uncontrollable circumstance within the dantian. He had no desire to encounter such an issue. However, what he could say for certain was that these azure and violet light specks were definitely related to the uncontrollably crazy absorption of the World Essence that he had experienced earlier.

“Could it be that these azure and violet lights are completely made of the World Essence from before?” Jian Chen secretly guessed. The great amount of World Essence that had entered his dantian before had completely disappeared without a trace, like a rock in the large sea. This was something completely unfathomable. In addition, after absorbing that vast amount of World Essence, these strange light specks had appeared within his dantian. This made it obvious to Jian Chen that the two events were connected.

However, what made Jian Chen really doubtful and worried was the question: what exactly were those strange light specks within his dantian, and what did they do? Would their existence be of any harm to him? These were the questions Jian Chen was currently most concerned about. The latter question particularly, made him

feel unrest.

After hesitating for a bit, Jian Chen finally tried attempting to control the azure and violet lights. However, after a few experiments, his mood became more and more serious. After some internal inspections, although he could clearly “see” the specks of light, every time he tried to manipulate them, he would suddenly discover that the light specks existing within his dantian would become similar to mirages. He could easily pass through them, and was completely unable to grab ahold of them and put them under his control. It was as if they didn’t really exist.

To every cultivating person, the dantian was an extremely important part of the body. Jian Chen definitely did not wish to see his dantian go through some situation beyond his control. Otherwise, for all he knew, it could prove to be fatal during some critical moment later.

“Ai, whatever. Whether it’s good or bad, it’s not like I can do anything about it. I’m a person who has died once already anyways. Why should I care about these things?” Jian Chen soon came to the conclusion that he wouldn’t bother toiling over the strange changes in his dantian any longer. Since the circumstances were beyond his control, he could only calmly accept them.

Jian Chen slowly opened his eyes, his gaze perfectly calm. Although successfully becoming a Saint was an exciting achievement, because an uncontrollable circumstance had occurred within his dantian, he could not bring himself to be happy.

Just as Jian Chen opened his eyes, the headmaster and vice headmaster that had been waiting outside the whole time walked in together.

Seeing the headmaster walk in, Jian Chen quickly got off the bed and greeted them, “Headmaster, Vice Headmaster.”

The headmaster had a wide smile across his face as he steadily looked at Jian Chen. “Changyang Xiang Tian, the World Essence you just released was abnormal. Did you encounter any problems during your cultivation? If so, don’t hold yourself back and tell me. Perhaps I can help you.” The headmaster said in a tone of great concern.

“Thank you for your concern, Headmaster. Everything has been going well, as I haven’t yet encountered any problems.” Jian Chen calmly said. He didn’t think his dantian situation was something that the headmaster could resolve. Saying it would only stir up trouble, and it was better to just stay silent.

Chapter 55: The Emperor's Recognition

The headmaster laughed joyously, “Changyang Xiang Tian, it looks like you’ve broken through to become a Saint.”

Jian Chen nodded his head slightly and said, “Yes, I have only just condensed my Saint Weapon.”

“And yet, I am still not sure if you’ve become an Upper level Saint or a Middle level Saint.” The headmaster beamed; to him, Jian Chen was at the very least the same strength as a Middle level Saint. After all, he had personally seen such a tremendous amount of World Essence be absorbed by him. Although he didn’t know what type of method Jian Chen had used to absorb it all, but he at the very least understood that after absorbing this much World Essence, there was no way Jian Chen would only be at the Primary Saint level.

To see Jian Chen immediately cross over the Primary level to the Middle level of Sainthood, the headmaster couldn’t help but be extremely happy. With this, his Kargath Academy could finally be proud of having such a talented student.

“Headmaster, I’ve only just condensed a Saint Weapon, so my strength should definitely be at the Primary level.” Jian Chen knew that the headmaster believed he had completely absorbed all of the World Essence and asked him this question for that reason.

“Primary level!” A voice cried. This time it wasn’t the headmaster who spoke, but Bai En who was standing behind him

with a look of disbelief.

“How could that be, you’ve absorbed such an enormous amount of World Essence, so how could you only be at the Primary Saint level?”

“I also don’t know.” Jian Chen’s face let out a bitter smile. He didn’t intend to reveal the things that happened in his own dantian.

“Okay, since Changyang Xiang Tian is fine, then we should leave.” The headmaster’s gaze was directed at Jian Chen as he said, “Changyang Xiang Tian, right now you have just become a Saint, and you should properly familiarize yourself with your Saint Weapon’s uses.” After saying these words, the two people, headmaster and vice-headmaster, left Jian Chen’s room.

After leaving the dormitories, vice-headmaster Bai En with a face full of curiosity asked, “Headmaster, Changyang Xiang Tian obviously absorbed a colossal amount of World Essence, how could he still only stay at the Primary Saint level, this just doesn’t make sense.”

When he heard this, the headmaster slightly nodded his head and said, “Yes, it certainly doesn’t abide to common sense, or there might be a secret Changyang Xiang Tian has that we do not know of. Otherwise, how could he absorb all the World Essence dozens kilometers away? It’s obviously an impossible task.” After saying this, the headmaster paused for a moment, then continued, “This matter is something that we should not pry into. From now on, for any matters concerning Changyang Xiang Tian, as long as it

doesn't cause too much of a ruckus, we shouldn't interfere. Let him grow as he wishes, as a genius' path is usually made by himself. If they don't weather the storm, they will never truly grow, and with only peaceful times, they will eventually wane."

"Yes, Bai En understands." the vice headmaster answered respectfully. His mind was clear, in order to cultivate a genius, this would do whatever Kargath Academy would have to do.

The headmaster stared off into the azure sky as he muttered to himself, "Changyang Xiang Tian is 15 years old this year; to reach Sainthood by his 15th year would cause quite a shock throughout the Tian Yuan continent. It really does look like Changyang Xiang Tian is a true genius, so I truly hope he continues down his path and does not die a premature death. Otherwise, this would be a heavy loss for our Gesun Kingdom. Ai, it's a shame the ancestor of the Changyang Clan has been missing for a hundred years, if he was still alive, then his plan might have succeeded."

.....

After the headmaster left, Jian Chen continued to sit cross legged on the bed once more and observed the azure and violet glow within his dantian. He let out a sigh, not only did he not know what was the matter with the glows, but he also had no control over them.

With another sigh, Jian Chen decided to forget about them since it would waste precious time if he did. He had already died once and already experienced many things. Aside from the maternal love he felt for his mother Bi Yuntian, there wasn't much else Jian

Chen cared about.

Jian Chen sucked in a deep breath and slowly calmed himself. Concentrating deeply on his right hand, his heart thumped before a strong source of energy flashed as a slender longsword appeared in his right hand.

The longsword was unusually thin and the entire body was a silver white almost like a mirror that reflected the surrounding area on the blade.

The sword was around 4 feet long and two fingers wide. Engraved on the blade next to the hilt were two words: “Light Wind”.

This sword’s appearance was almost exactly like Jian Chen’s treasured sword in his previous life. Even the name itself was the exact same one, called the Light Wind Sword.

Jian Chen’s way of the sword placed a strong emphasis on quickness and agility. With the ability to strike in a thousand different ways, he was like the wind that ‘came in without a shadow, and left without a footprint’.

Holding onto the Light Wind Sword, Jian Chen couldn’t help but smile tremendously. At the moment where he grasped onto the sword, he felt the familiarity he had with his previous world come rushing back to him.

However, the only difference was that Jian Chen felt that the sword was like an extension of his arm; he didn't need to expend as much strength to control it. Jian Chen could also feel his "Soul" connecting with the sword to establish a perfect relationship between the two. The two were one and no longer divided. This was a feeling he had never felt before in his previous world.

Jian Chen jabbed out with his sword, letting the silver blade flash as it shot outwards.

"Ding!" A clear sound was heard as the Light Wind Sword whistled in the air. It would appear that this sword was on the same level as the ones refined from the finest of iron.

Jian Chen gently caressed the blade with his left hand joyfully as if the sword was his most favorite person.

To any true swordsman, the sword was the the item they were the most fond of and could not replace. The sword was their life and their soul, and Jian Chen was a firm believer of that as well.

When Jian Chen summoned the Light Wind Sword, it had disappeared from within his dantian and the energy had been completely concentrated onto his hand to form the blade in real life. Not only was this sword able to deal out major damage, but this was also the source of Jian Chen's energy and replaced his dantian as the source.

Jian Chen's heart thumped once more as the sword started to disappear and return to his dantian as the mini version of the Light

Wind Sword.

Two days after Jian Chen had broken through to Sainthood, he had spent the time observing the two colored glows within his dantian. Other than that, he spent most of the time in the library in order to find a book that would help shed some light on the situation with his dantian—however, he always came up empty handed.

During those two days, Jian Chen's breakthrough to Sainthood had been passed around through the academy like a great wave since they all knew Jian Chen had gotten to that level too fast. Every student at Kargath Academy knew that he had joined the academy a few months ago at the 8th Saint Force layer. And after those few months, he had suddenly broken through to become a Saint, this type of cultivation speed was far too fast, causing everyone to cry out in astonishment. This record had completely squashed out the previous number 1 cultivation genius Cheng Mingxiang.

Far away from Kargath Academy in a splendid dazzling palace, a jewel embedded robe wearing middle aged man sat in the middle of the study room while reading a book.

“Your majesty, a message courier has arrived.” A respectful but deep voice called out from outside the room.

Hearing that, the middle aged man slowly put down his book and looked towards the entrance of his room. “Come in.” He stated. This middle aged man was the emperor of the Gesun Kingdom—Ka De Sen.

As the emperor spoke, the doors to the study room opened, and a man wearing a black pao entered. He was approximately 30 years old and quickly walked into the room; when he was within 30 steps away from the emperor he immediately stopped where he was and knelt down onto his knees, “Your majesty, a letter just came from headmaster Khafir in Kargath Academy.”

Originally, the emperor didn’t care at all for the letter, but the moment he had heard the name Khafir, his face immediately grew solemn and placed the book down onto the table. “Bring me the message now.”

“Yes! Your Majesty!” A nearby bodyguard standing next to the emperor respectfully responded. He immediately took the letter in his hand, and closely inspected it. Only after confirming there were no problems with it did he walk up and hand it over to the emperor.

The emperor took the letter and immediately opened it. His calm face gradually began to form a smile, as he murmured, “This Changyang Xiang Tian is indeed a heavenly genius. Not only did he defeat a Saint while being at the 8th Saint Force layer, he also managed to defeat a middle-ranked Saint when he was only at the 10th layer. Moreover, he had successfully condensed his Saint Weapon at the age of 15. This is definitely a genius; it’s no wonder that he received so much praise from Uncle. With Uncle’s insight, he naturally can distinguish certain people. If Uncle recommends Changyang Xiang Tian to this extent, then I should be doing something about it as well.”

“Changyang Xiang Tian has the Changyang clan backing him, even more so since he’s the fourth master. It looks like getting ahold of him will be impossible. In that case, I can only try my hardest to seduce him. Although the Changyang clan has already been silent for a dozen years, the inside information about their clan is still true; their strength cannot be underestimated, and is enough for me to act. Since it is so, I’ll just do this.” The emperor seemed to have decided on something as he immediately said, “Servants, fetch me pen and ink.”

Soon afterwards, the chamberlain arrived with the pen and ink ready. The emperor grasped the pen and began to smoothly write out his words. He delicately picked up the paper and reread the words written on it, before slowly folding it up and leaving the study.

With the scroll in hand, the emperor was escorted by a group of guards sticking tightly to him through layers after layers of halls, before finally entering a beautiful courtyard.

When the emperor had just stepped into the courtyard, a 50-60 year old elder came out from a room within the courtyard. He calmly looked at the emperor and smiled, “So it was Your Majesty that had arrived. Please come in.”

The emperor walked up to the elder, not yet entering the room. He handed the scroll in his hand to the elder, and solemnly said, “Senior Ye Ming, this is an extremely important letter that I want you to personally deliver to Lore City’s Changyang clan.”

Hearing this, the elder’s face grew more serious. He reached out

to receive the scroll from the emperor's hand and said, "Your Majesty, don't worry. I will definitely deliver this letter." The elder clearly understood that since he was being sent to personally deliver the letter, it definitely was not just about a simple matter.

After the letter in his hand was sent out, the emperor inwardly sighed, as he thought to himself, "Yue Er, for the sake of our kingdom's development, for the sake of our kingdom's future, your father has no choice but to sacrifice you."

Chapter 56: 7th Level Of The Library

Early next morning, the cross legged Jian Chen slowly opened his eyes. He had not been cultivating for the past 2 days, and instead was spending his days at the library reading books. Every night, he immersed himself with trying to understand the sword within his dantian, in order to learn to use his Saint Weapon as efficiently as possible.

After all, Jian Chen had only recently broken through to Sainthood, and even though the Saint Weapon within him was connected to his mind, he still didn't know how to use the Saint Weapon to perfection. Jian Chen, who had experience from the previous world, still found the Saint Weapon in this world a fresh new experience. If he didn't spend his time familiarizing himself with it, then even connecting his soul with his Saint Weapon like he did with the tree branch, it would still be very hard to show off the pinnacle of his strength.

The reason for this was the same as a person had a severed arm for ten to twenty years, but the arm suddenly grew back. Since that person was familiar with living with a severed arm and now had to face the newly grown arm, they would also be a bit unfamiliar to his condition. This development required time to slowly accept and become comfortable with.

Standing up from his bed, Jian Chen walked out of his room and headed towards the dining halls. Then as per usual, after eating, he headed to the library.

The doors to the library were already open, but there weren't

many people inside; just the regular janitorial lady.

Jian Chen looked at the nearly empty library and then walked towards the 5th level of the library. For the past few days, all of the books he had been interested in, from the first to fourth level, have all been completely read by him.

The library had a total of 7 levels. The first two levels could be accessed by anyone below the Saint level while the 3rd and 4th levels would be opened to those who broke through to the Saint level. The 5th level of the library wasn't open to any student except for the Freshman Champion, so for those who wanted to read the books from that level, they would have to be a teacher from the academy. The 6th and 7th layer of the library was protected by very strong bindings, and only the headmaster and vice headmaster could enter. For those who wanted to enter, they would need the strict approval of either the headmaster or vice headmaster first.

Even though the fifth story of the library wasn't open to the students, Jian Chen, who had achieved the first place in the Freshman Competition, could freely enter the fifth level.

The amount of space the fifth level occupied wasn't really that big, and the number of books weren't very many either. If you added them all up, the number was barely a hundred, which was incomparable to the ten thousands of books that the first level had.

But Jian Chen knew that any one of these hundred books, had a value far greater than any of the books he had ever read before.

The fifth level of the library was very quiet. Although not many people visited it, Jian Chen could see that this place was cleaned by someone very often. The entire room was clean; one wouldn't be able to find a single speck of dust in it.

Jian Chen walked towards the bookshelves and selected a book on cultivation before walking back towards the table. The contents of the book were only about cultivation. Although he didn't know if the contents of the book would help him with his problem, it would at least enrich his mind with other information he deemed helpful.

Jian Chen was extremely invested in reading, to the point of addiction. Although the information recorded inside the book had almost nothing that could help him, it still helped open his eyes and broadened his horizons to a whole new world of cultivation. The information he saw was about things he could never think about before in his past life.

The information on cultivation written inside the book wasn't too profound and only had a few dozen pages, so he quickly finished the book. After reading it, Jian Chen placed the book back onto the bookshelves and started to mutter to himself, as if he was trying to commit the knowledge to memory.

After carefully putting the book back in its original location, Jian Chen grabbed another book and started to repeat the process of reading once more. Within the 5th level of the library, practically all of the books were left behind by predecessors to help people with cultivation techniques. However, the majority of these

cultivation techniques were not too strong; most of them were barely above the Primary Earth Tier level.

The time slowly went by, as Jian Chen resided on the 5th level to read book after book. He had completely forgotten about the time, he hadn't noticed that he was no longer alone, as two other middle aged men appeared. Just one look at the two was enough to tell that these were teachers of the academy.

The two middle-aged men appeared to know Jian Chen; when they saw him, their eyes let out a very surprised look. However, they did not make a sound to avoid disturbing him.

Just then, an old man wearing a light blue and luxurious chang pao walked up from below. He looked to be in his fifties or sixties. His hair was as white as a crane but his appearance was like that of a young man. He had a mysterious expression that constantly flashed in his eyes.

The 5th level of the library wasn't too big, and so after the elderly man entered the 5th level of the library, he promptly walked to the side to get to the staircase that would lead to the 6th layer. All of a sudden, he had noticed a young child out of the corner of his eye.

The elderly man came to a sudden stop as he sized up the child in his head. Immediately recognizing the academy uniform on the tall but slender child, he realized with a start, "Changyang Xiang Tian!"

Jian Chen was immediately brought back to his senses and

looked back to the old man who had called him. His face was a little sluggish before he jolted to his feet with a smile, “Headmaster, why have you come here?”

This man was the headmaster of Kargath Academy.

The headmaster’s voice had simultaneously startled the two teachers. The moment they saw the headmaster, they looked startled and placed their books down onto the table before standing up. Cupping their hands to salute the headmaster, they called out respectfully, “We greet the headmaster.”

The headmaster of Kargath Academy was a well known figure whose name resounded throughout the Gesun Kingdom. His strength was on the level of a Heaven Saint Master, and he was one of the 6 strongest individuals of the Gesun Kingdom.

A Heaven Saint Master on the Tian Yuan Continent was still regarded as a very strong and valiant person.

The headmaster’s gaze swept across the two middle aged men and waved his hand as he said, “Don’t mind me, please continue reading your books.”

“Yes, headmaster.” The two middle aged men immediately sat down again, though they didn’t have the spirit to concentrate on the books in their hands.

The headmaster’s eyes glanced over the book within Jian Chen’s

hand. With a smile as he nodded his head in satisfaction, he said with a gratified tone, “Changyang Xiang Tian, do you like this library?”

Jian Chen nodded his head without hesitation, “That’s right; from this library, I can learn many different things. Even if the information here provides little to no help to someone, it’ll still increase one’s knowledge.”

Hearing Jian Chen, the headmaster looked at him with admiration. “Good, good. Changyang Xiang Tian, someone with your understanding and logic is hard to come by. Since you enjoy being in this library, then let me help you. Come with me.” Turning around, the headmaster started to walk towards the stairway to the 6th level.

Seeing the direction that the headmaster was heading in, Jian Chen fully understood the old man’s meaning and was overjoyed. He immediately returned the book in his hand to the original position and followed behind the headmaster toward the sixth level of the library.

Seeing Jian Chen disappear off into the staircase, the two teachers looked at his direction with some envy. The 6th and 7th levels of the library could only be accessed by the headmaster and the vice headmaster. Those who wanted access needed the approval of one of the two first. When it came to the 6th and 7th levels of the library, these were the areas that every single teacher of the academy wanted to go to, mostly because those two levels contained high level techniques. Not only that, but the other books in that level had rich information pertaining to many other fields.

Most importantly, on the 6th and 7th levels of the library, there were records of many of the different types of spiritual treasures on the Tian Yuan Continent.

Very quickly, Jian Chen followed the headmaster to the entrance of the sixth level. Jian Chen could clearly see the transparent bindings keeping the door shut.

“The bindings of the sixth level and the seventh level are all arranged by the previous generations of headmasters. The defence is very strong, and even if it is a Heaven Saint Master, it is impossible to break it within a short period of time.” The headmaster’s tone carried a bit a pride, and he immediately took out a token constructed from Purple Coin. The token had very complicated markings on it, and it seemed to be a design of some sort.

The Purple Coin token in the headmaster’s hands released a faint purple glow, and soon the purple glow grew more and more bright. At last, a ray of light like a material substance shot out and directly landed on the bindings.

The transparent bindings slowly rippled twice like water, and the center slowly split apart to form a large hole that a person could easily enter through

“Changyang Xiang Tian, follow me inside.” The headmaster called out to Jian Chen, and directly walked inside.

Jian Chen followed behind the headmaster, and they walked

straight through the sixth level onto the seventh level. The library's seventh level was very empty. It was only the size of a typical room, and there was a single wooden table placed in the center. In front of the table was a small bookshelf that had a few thin books. There were two boxes on top of the bookshelf; one of the boxes was completely made of extremely precious jade, while the other was entirely made of Purple Coin. Both of their values were not at all lacking, and it could be seen that the items within these boxes had to be extremely important.

“Ever since Kargath Academy was first established, this library has always existed. Up until now, it's been here for hundreds of years already. These past few centuries, the number of people aside from the headmaster of each era that have come to this library's seventh level hasn't been small. However, every single one of them was an extremely influential power, if not an impressive expert from the Tian Yun Continent. You are the first Kargath Academy student to have entered the seventh level these past few centuries.” The headmaster explained slowly, with an extremely calm tone.

“Changyang Xiang Tian, this library's seventh level is where my Kargath Academy's riches are contained. The entire seventh level is enveloped by a layer of powerful bindings. This layer of bindings were painstakingly created by the Saint Ruler, Brian, the first generation's headmaster. The items within all have special tracers; as long as the bindings aren't broken, there is no way they can be brought outside. In addition, the books inside here were all the books about cultivation methods that Headmaster Brian had collected himself, if not personally written by him. These are Kargath Academy's greatest riches.”

Hearing this, Jian Chen's expression became extremely serious. He hadn't imagined that the library's seventh level would be so important. The fact that Kargath Academy's first generation headmaster had actually been a Saint Ruler that was an exceptional expert was also shocking to Jian Chen.

The headmaster's gaze brightly looked at Jian Chen, and his expression changed and he said with a strict tone, "Changyang Xiang Tian, right now I use my authority as the headmaster to allow you to read any book except the one inside the jade box. You only have this one chance, I hope you properly utilize it."

Jian Chen solemnly nodded his head, "I thank the headmaster for the help."

"The jade box contains items that would not be of any use to the current you, and it may even obstruct your growth. Therefore, you must not look at the items within the jade box. However, the Purple Coin box contains a Primary Heaven Tier cultivation technique that you can read however much you want. However, your Changyang clan's family heirloom Law of Yang Qi isn't any weaker than the Collecting Heart Sutra. Therefore, choosing whatever cultivation method you use isn't something you should be too hasty with."

"Okay, you can stay here by yourself and take your time to read them. Remember, you only have this once chance to enter the seventh floor of the library, I hope you treasure it. The bindings at the entrance will only prevent the people who are trying to enter, if you want to leave, you can leave directly." After finishing, the headmaster immediately turned and left the place, disappearing

outside the bindings on the seventh floor, leaving Jian Chen standing there dazed.

Chapter 57: Arranged Marriage

Jian Chen took in a deep breath to calm himself down before walking towards the bookshelves. His eyes swept over the shelves one by one before finally taking out a single book. He walked towards the center of the floor to a table and sat down. The book was for those who gained insights as well as techniques for breaking through a bottleneck. Even Earth Saint Masters could benefit from the notes clearly written on it

Although there weren't many books on this level, but the quality of the content inside was of the utmost quality. If any one of these books were to be released to the common populace, then it would cause a widespread reign of carnage for it.

Jian Chen slowly flipped the pages of the book one by one as he read it. Soon the book was finished off by him, causing Jian Chen to sink into meditation. Whatever book he grabbed had led to his eyes being opened wide to the world of possibilities. The cultivation system in this world had already long since toppled the system in his previous world. With this book, Jian Chen felt like he had a stronger understanding of this world's cultivation system now.

Not too long after, Jian Chen had finished reading a dozen book from the shelves. Half of the books talked about insights on cultivation as well as the problems a cultivator might experience. The other half were books about cultivation techniques, but the strongest of these techniques were only at the Upper Earth Tier level. What Jian Chen had found most helpful was the personal letter from Kargath Academy's first headmaster Brian.

Jian Chen's eyes swept over to the Purple Coin box; according to the headmaster, the Purple Coin box contained a Primary Heaven Tier technique. Although Jian Chen didn't have a clear idea of how valuable a Heaven Tier technique was, but he did know that it was still quite the priceless treasure.

After all, the Heaven Tier techniques was the second strongest type of technique on the Tian Yuan continent. There was only one other tier higher than it—Saint Tier.

Jian Chen slowly opened the Purple Coin box only to see a hand sized book inside. On top of the cover of the book had words—Collecting Heart Sutra written on it in bold cursive. The moment the book touched his hand, Jian Chen felt a soft sensation enter his arm. It was almost as if there was a sense of warmth to the book despite it never being touched before.

The book was made of some kind of magical beast leather. It was extremely supple and strong, and hard to damage in any way.

He slowly took the book out of the box and carefully started to flip through the pages to read it. He was reading it with a serious face since Jian Chen knew that such a strong cultivational technique was extremely rare to come by. Although he didn't initially plan to practice this technique, just looking at it would bring him some benefits at the very least. Though he wasn't sure if he would be able to find something of value within the book to help him with his problem.

4 hours later, Jian Chen's eyes finally moved away from the book as he bowed his head in contemplation. After he was sure he committed the contents of the book to memory, he returned it to the original box and then walked back to the table.

His eyes looked at the bookshelves before he let out a sigh. With no small amount of regret, he began to head down the stairs, however, Jian Chen had profited greatly today in the 7th level of the library.

On his way down, Jian Chen took a look at the 6th level of the library. Although the books within the 6th level was not as valuable as the 7th level, the profits in the knowledge gained from them were still great. To Jian Chen, the predecessors had imparted their knowledge and insights in those books, so the knowledge would prove to be extremely beneficial.

Jian Chen had learned much about the many different spiritual treasures of the Tian Yuan continent, something that couldn't be found anywhere on the first 5 levels of the library.

By the time Jian Chen had walked out of the library, the sky had already darkened. Unknowingly, he had already spent the entire day inside the library. He'd even forgotten to eat.

"Growl...." At that moment, Jian Chen's stomach unexpectedly made a loud sound.

Jian Chen reached down to rub his stomach that was currently so empty that it had begun to hurt a bit. He smiled helplessly, and

then started to walk towards the dining hall.

After quickly finishing his dinner, Jian Chen went straight back to the dorms. En route, he managed to attract quite a few students' gazes; there were envious, respectful, jealous, and all other types of expressions in their looks.

Jian Chen didn't pay any mind to the surrounding attention, and walked to the dorm without a sideways glance. After he entered the dorms, he could see that in the distance, there was a familiar figure standing in front of his room. He felt relieved as he realized it was his older brother, Changyang Hu.

"It's so late, and yet Big Brother is waiting for me to return here. Could it be he has something urgent that he really needs to tell me?" Jian Chen inwardly guessed. He quickened his pace, and rushed over.

"Big brother, it's already so late. Why are you waiting for me here? What is there that cannot wait until tomorrow to discuss?" Jian Chen asked as he walked up to Changyang Hu.

Seeing Jian Chen approach, Changyang Hu's face turned bitter, and he said with a sigh, "Ai...fourth brother, you've finally returned. Where did you run off to today? I pretty much searched the entire school, yet I couldn't find you, so I have been waiting here for the entire day now."

Jian Chen said apologetically, "Big brother, were you looking for me for something extremely important?"

Hearing this, Changyang Hu smiled happily and said in an excited voice, “Of course there’s something. Moreover, it’s something major. Come, fourth brother, let’s enter the room to talk.”

Jian Chen nodded, and took out the key from his Space Belt to open the room’s door. This room’s door was newly replaced, since the old one had been turned to rubble by the vice headmaster.

Immediately after they entered the room, Changyang Hu closed the door, and then urgently said, “Fourth brother, the clan just sent a message. You’re so lucky, your big brother is really envious of you.”

Hearing this, Jian Chen was puzzled, and he asked in confusion, “Big brother, exactly what has happened?”

Changyang Hu sat down on Jian Chen’s bed, and said with a happy smile, “Fourth brother, I guess you don’t know yet. Father has already arranged for your marriage.”

Hearing this, Jian Chen’s expression clearly became startled. After finally returning to his senses, he asked in an incredulous and shocked tone, “What! An arranged marriage?!”

Changyang Hu fiercely nodded, and excitedly replied, “That’s right, fourth brother. Moreover, your partner is the emperor’s third princess — Princess Ge Lan. I’ve heard that this arranged marriage had even been the emperor’s own suggestion.”

Hearing this, Jian Chen's expression immediately grew more serious. He felt that this situation was extremely abnormal, and moreover, he hadn't agreed to it. He felt dissatisfied by the fact that his own marriage had been decided by his clan without him. Having such a fate decided by others made Jian Chen feel extremely disgusted.

Seeing Jian Chen's expression, Changyang Hu thought that Jian Chen was worrying over Princess Ge Lan's appearance. He couldn't help but laugh, "Fourth brother, don't worry. Although I've never seen Princess Ge Lan, I've heard quite a few things about her. Princess Ge Lan is the emperor's third daughter. She's naturally beautiful, and her looks are enough for cities to fight over her. Since she was young, she's been a gifted genius. She has not only mastered the four fine arts, she's also quite a well-known talent in cultivation. At the age of 15, Princess Ge Lan had reached the 7th Saint Force layer. She has been doted on quite a lot by the emperor; she is the emperor's beloved person, the emperor loves her dearly in every possible way."

Hearing this Changyang Hu sighed, "Princess Ge Lan's identity isn't her only good point. With just her gift at cultivation, even your own older brother couldn't compete with her. Fourth Brother, His Majesty has betrothed the princess to you; this is a stroke of good fortune, so don't have such a sour look on your face."

Jian Chen could only let out a sigh inwardly, Changyang Hu couldn't understand his thoughts at all. Despite Princess Ge Lan's beauty, Jian Chen wasn't moved at all. All he wanted to do right now was to improve his own strength, he couldn't afford to waste

time with a girl at the moment. Jian Chen also knew that the emperor was aware of his own achievements within Kargath Academy, otherwise, there was no way the emperor would have been so firm on his decision to betroth his daughter to him.

Because this arranged marriage was proposed by the emperor, Jian Chen was absolutely powerless to go against the marriage. His parents wouldn't even dare to give up the chance to establish a friendship with the royal family, let alone a relationship with them. Aside from the emperor taking back the proposal, there would be no way for Jian Chen to refuse it, so he would have to quietly accept it.

The only thing that put Jian Chen to ease was the fact that this decision was only just recently made. The official date for the marriage had not yet been announced, meaning the marriage was being put off indefinitely for the time being. This gave him a good time period to breathe. Jian Chen after all did not want to talk about this at all; in his previous life, Jian Chen was a wanderer who loved traveling around the world. Without a permanent residence to live in and using the mother earth as his bed, with another person by his side, he wouldn't be able to continue to that lifestyle anymore.

After Changyang Hu left, Jian Chen sat on the bed by himself and contemplated deeply. One had to admit that the news from his clan had been too sudden, catching Jian Chen unprepared.

“Ai, I might as well spend the rest of my time cultivating. Power in the end decides everything after all. When my strength grows strong enough, even the emperor would not be able to say

anything.” Jian Chen sighed as he continued to cultivate.

Jian Chen took out a Class 1 Monster Core from the pile of them within his Space Ring. He slowly closed his eyes, and began to absorb the power from within the monster core to cultivate it. Ever since he had broken through Sainthood 2 days ago, this was the first time he was cultivating. The past 2 evenings, he had been familiarizing himself with how to use and control the Saint Weapon.

Just as Jian Chen started to absorb the energy from within the monster cores, the speed in which the monster core was being absorbed from him was growing faster and faster; almost as if all control was lost as the energy rushed into him. As the energy frantically rushed into him, the rate had instantly increased to a speed several hundred times faster than normal.

The sudden rush in cultivation speed caused Jian Chen’s face to twitch in surprise. Although every cultivator greatly desired for their cultivation speed to be increased, but Jian Chen’s cultivation speed had already reached a frightening level. With this absorption rate of the energy from the monster core, Jian Chen simply didn’t have enough time to refine it which serve no purpose for him at all since energy that wasn’t refined by him was not controllable and would only serve to rebel against him within his own body. An end result like that would lead to consequences in which Jian Chen would have a tough time resolving.

Jian Chen immediately stopped absorbing the power from the monster core. The only thing worth rejoicing about was that his process of stopping his absorption of the monster core’s energy

had gone very smoothly. No frightening and uncontrollable scene had occurred. Otherwise, he was afraid that he really would've gotten into deep trouble.

Chapter 58: Annoyance From The Dantian

Jian Chen let out a long breath to still his emotions, as he glanced at the monster core in his hand. Although he hadn't been absorbing the energy from within the monster core for very long, he could clearly tell that the energy within the Class 1 Monster Core was substantially less than before; the monster core had even shrunk in size.

Jian Chen inhaled sharply in astonishment at this new change. Although a Class 1 Monster Core did not have a large amount of energy, before he had become a Saint, completely absorbing all of the energy within a Class 1 Monster Core would require him at least 3 nights. In the short amount of time that he had spent absorbing the energy from the Class 1 Monster Core, the amount of energy inside had already decreased significantly. Jian Chen couldn't possibly dare to imagine just how much energy he had absorbed into his body in that short amount of time.

Afterwards, Jian Chen immediately inspected his inner body once more. However, to his surprise, he couldn't detect any of the energy he had just absorbed at all. His dantian didn't show any change, and the energy inside had no indication of growth either; it was almost as if the entire show just now was merely an illusion that hadn't occurred at all.

If it weren't for the fact that Jian Chen could clearly feel that the energy in the monster core was now less than before, then Jian Chen would have thought this situation had all been in his head; this situation was far too weird to understand.

His eyes creased together in deep thought, but no matter how much he thought about it, Jian Chen was completely confused. In the end, Jian Chen could only put aside the problem and begin to cultivate the absorbed energy. However, after experiencing that rapid rate of absorption, Jian Chen was very careful now and paid attention to his entire body in order to avoid the same situation as last time.

But then who would had thought the moment he started to cultivate, the same event as last time would happen once more. The monster core in his hand emitted a faint glow as the energy inside coursed out of it at an inconceivable speed, before dissipating inside the meridians in his arms.

Jian Chen went as rigid as a stone statue on his bed, without the smallest of movements taking place. Right now, he had finally confirmed that this was happening for real, and it was not just some sort of illusion. Just as Jian Chen was going to stop absorbing the monster core's energy, he immediately changed his mind. His entire mind was elevated to the highest level of concentration he could muster as he tried to familiarize himself with this situation. He wanted to clearly understand what was happening within his body, and what the reason was for the sudden terrifying increase in absorption. Moreover, Jian Chen wanted to know why the energy had simply disappeared into his dantian like a stone in the ocean, leaving behind no traces.

The monster core within Jian Chen's hands had noticeably shrunk, and the energy inside had been steadily flowing into the meridians of his arms via his pores. With such a great flow of energy rushing into his arm, Jian Chen's skin was starting to feel a little sore from the barrage.

When he was absorbing the World Essence two days ago, its state had been much gentler, so the fast rate of absorption hadn't bothered him too much. But the monster core was different; the monster core had the energy of a magical beast condensed within it. No matter how strong the energy or how pure the soul was, it was far superior to the abilities of the World Essence. The monster core also contained a berserk element inside, so when Jian Chen was absorbing the energy from within, he had felt a backlash.

Jian Chen paid no attention to the pain at all, and instead completely focused his attention on the situation happening inside himself. The majority of the energy from within the monster core headed towards his dantian and trickled away; only a small portion of it was assimilated into his body.

However when Jian Chen discovered where the energy was going, his face grew bright, as the energy was flowing towards the azure and violet glows within his dantian. The energy had unexpectedly been completely absorbed by the two glowing balls.

Jian Chen slowly opened his eyes as he stared heavily at the monster core in his hands. Throwing it away, he shut his eyes closed once more, and began to cultivate the World Essence as he usually did.

The World Essence began to flow towards him in a steady stream, faster and faster. Although the speed was at least a dozen times faster than his regular speed, about 99% of the World Essence was being absorbed by the two glows of light within his dantian, while he was only absorbing 1% of the remaining amount into his body.

After realizing this, Jian Chen decided to rely on cultivating using the World Essence. However, the speed at which he was cultivating and refining the World Essence was ten times slower than his normal speed.

With this conclusion, Jian Chen's expression grew ugly. His own personal cultivation rate was cut down to a tenth of his original rate, something he did not want at all. He hadn't imagined that the two glows in his dantian would be such an annoyance.

Afterwards, Jian Chen tried to absorb the monster core's energy once more. His solemn face gradually loosened up as he began to think. If he were to cultivate using the energy from the monster core, then his cultivation rate wouldn't be as slow as before he became a Saint; instead, it would be three times as fast. The most major flaw was that the amount it took to absorb the energy in this way required a lot of effort; Jian Chen had even started to sweat from the exertion.

Stopping his cultivation after a while, he looked outside the window to see the pitch dark skies and helplessly sighed. If the glows in his dantian were to forcibly take his energy each and every time he cultivated, then the variables in his future would only get more difficult. After all, just relying on absorbing the World Essence gave him a tenth of his cultivation speed. Absorbing the energy from the monster core tripled his speed, while also consuming more of his personal energy and focus, something Jian Chen couldn't endure.

A single Class 1 Monster Core originally took Jian Chen 3 nights to absorb. Right now, absorbing that same Class 1 Monster Core required the same amount of time it took to make and drink a cup

of tea. This meant that in a single night, Jian Chen could absorb 50 Class 1 Monster Cores. Even if Jian Chen was made of money, it would be difficult to say if Jian Chen could keep up with this new rate of consumption and absorption.

TL Note: 10 minutes per Class 1 Monster Core

Jian Chen immediately composed himself. According to his knowledge, he knew that this little bump on the road wasn't too hard to overcome. "Ai, a step is a step. If I don't have anymore monster cores, then I'll go out and hunt for more. It's not like the energy will always be taken away from me like this in the future." With this thought in mind, Jian Chen took out a batch of monster cores from within his space belt, and continued to cultivate once more.

The night passed quickly. The second morning arrived, concluding Jian Chen's daily cultivation period. Taking inventory of the amount of monster cores he used, he sucked in a sharp breath in shock. In the span of a single night, he had unexpectedly consumed the energy from 56 Class 1 Monster Cores.

Jian Chen smiled bitterly. Even though his Space Belt contained a wealthy amount of monster cores, with this rate of consumption, the monster cores wouldn't last for more than a few days. When there were no more to absorb, Jian Chen would then be forced to rely on the World Essence. Right now, Jian Chen could only hope that his dantian and the two glows of light inside would become saturated with energy, and stop taking it from him when he cultivated.

“It looks like I’ll have to make a trip to the magical beast forest for some monster cores later.” Jian Chen muttered under his breath.

With a pacified heart, Jian Chen departed from his room and walked towards the grove outside of the academy to help teach his older brother with some techniques regarding fighting, as well as helping him gain some battle experience. As the sun rose, Jian Chen worked hard to teach Changyang Hu. Eventually, as the sun was at its highest point, Jian Chen concluded his explanations.

“Big brother, we’ll stop here for now. As far as using and transforming your energy, you’ll have to spend some time on getting it down. But when it comes to battle experience, you’ll just have to fight with others to slowly improve, so there’s no point in practicing by yourself so meticulously.” Jian Chen said to his older brother. For the past few days, Jian Chen had spent his mornings teaching Changyang Hu various aspects of techniques and fighting.

Changyang Hu nodded his head, “I understand, fourth brother.” Right now, Changyang Hu did not think that learning from his fourth brother was an odd occurrence. He didn’t know what Jian Chen’s lifestyle was like back at the Changyang Mansion, but he could tell that his own brother was a talented genius. Receiving some special attention would have been normal, so it wasn’t that far fetched to think that Jian Chen had learned these things from the clan elders. In addition, Changyang Hu knew that Jian Chen loved to read books, frequently spending entire days inside the academy’s library.. So it was possible that some of the things he knew came from the library as well.

“Big brother, you should slowly practice by yourself. I’ll be leaving first.” With that, Jian Chen exited the grove, leaving his brother to continue training by himself.

.....

In the middle of one of the academy training grounds, two youths wearing the same academy uniform were fiercely fighting against each other. One of them held a giant blade burning a fiery red as it emitted a sizzling Qi. The owner of such a strong weapon was the gifted cultivation genius of Kargath Academy—Cheng Mingxiang.

Cheng Mingxiang’s opponent was holding a giant sword that was blue in color. He looked to be older than Cheng Mingxiang. However, his face was dripping with sweat as he concentrated on the fight.

They fought ferociously, but a perceptive person would have been able to tell that the blue sword wielder was being forced to blindly defend against the red sword wielder.

“My lord, I concede. I cannot defend myself any longer.” The blue sword holder cried out.

Hearing him, Cheng Mingxiang immediately paused and let the sword in his hand disappear. “Sha La, it seems like the duration that you can defend yourself for is getting shorter and shorter. Looks like you have to work harder in the future; the current you is weaker than in the past.”

The youth gave a bitter smile as he laughed, “My lord, it is not that my strength is getting worse, but that your strength is growing faster than mine. I am no longer a suitable opponent for you.”

Cheng Mingxiang looked proud at himself when he heard these words.

At that moment, another student wearing the academy uniform came running over towards Cheng Mingxiang with an envelope in his hand. “Lord Cheng, a letter from the clan elders have come!”

Chapter 59: Revenge

Cheng Mingxiang's face became serious as he heard the student yell. Taking the letter from him, Cheng Mingxiang began to rip open the letter.

As he read the contents of the letter, Cheng Mingxiang's face grew darker and darker as his eyes began to show a raging anger within them.

Seeing Cheng Mingxiang's reaction, the youth who had just sparred with him asked cautiously, "Lord Cheng, what is the matter, has something bad happened over at the sect?"

Clenching his hand together to become a fist, the letter became a crumpled up ball of paper as Cheng Mingxiang grew angrier and angrier. The look in his eye had already evolved to contain a look of extreme hatred.

"Changyang Xiang Tian..." Cheng Mingxiang gnashed at his teeth as his fingers clenched tightly into his palms. Just by looking at him one could tell just how angry he was.

Hearing Cheng Mingxiang mentioned Changyang Xiang Tian's name, the youth grew even more confused. Opening his mouth to ask once more, he said, "Lord Cheng, what in the world has happened?"

Cheng Mingxiang growled with a dark voice, "His Majesty has just betrothed Princess Ge Lan to Changyang Xiang Tian, and has

already officiated it.”

The youth’s face changed when he heard him. He knew that Cheng Mingxiang had fond feelings for the princess. Ever since Cheng Mingxiang had first seen her at the imperial palace, he had essentially placed her beauty on the same level as a goddess and developed a deep crush on her. Since then, he had been unable to get over those feelings.

Within Cheng Mingxiang’s own heart, he had already marked Princess Ge Lan as his own. After all, within the Gesun Kingdom, he was the only suitable match for a princess like her. Whether it be familial background or his own cultivation talent, Cheng Mingxiang was not at all lacking in these 2 fields. With his Hua Yun Sect, they had power that almost rivaled the power of the royal family of the Gesun Kingdom. Within the sect itself, Cheng Mingxiang’s status was majestic beyond any other person.

In the past, Cheng Mingxiang had wanted his parents to ask for the princess’s hand in marriage from the emperor multiple times, but his parents had continuously wanted him to focus on cultivation instead. They didn’t want his cultivation to be interrupted by a girl in the end.

His parents refusal to help him propose to the princess had made him resentful, but he didn’t say anything. For in his mind, Cheng Mingxiang had decided that Princess Ge Lan was already his and that no one else would be able to snatch her away from him. After all, within the Gesun Kingdom, there was no one else worthy of Princess Ge Lan, causing him to feel safe.

But he didn't expect at all to meet someone else in Kargath Academy that was no weaker than himself. Changyang Xiang Tian's gift at cultivation had exceeded his own, and he had even taken over Cheng Mingxiang's title of Kargath Academy's number 1 cultivation genius. Not only did he steal that, but Changyang Xiang Tian had even stolen away his one love, causing Cheng Mingxiang to be unable to endure this any longer.

The youth that fought against Cheng Mingxiang cautiously looked at him before whispering, "My lord, what do you plan to do now?"

Cheng Mingxiang's eyes flashed with a murderous tint as he snarled, "Princess Ge Lan is mine, within the Gesun Kingdom, only I am suitable to be married to her." His voice was filled with an unquenchable hatred, "Sha La, bring some people over, we shall head towards Changyang Xiang Tian. This time, we will definitely teach him a lesson on trying to steal someone else's woman."

"Yes, my lord." The youth immediately scurried off in order to gather about people.

Due to Cheng Mingxiang's strength, he had quickly amassed a large group of people. There were at least 16 of them and all were from noble families and had reached Sainthood. Not only that, but the majority of these people had their monster cores taken from them by Jian Chen, causing them to fail the assignment in the forest. So because of that, they all harbored a grudge towards him; and when Cheng Mingxiang had started to gather people, each one of them eagerly signed up to take part in this.

Among the group, there were two other people Jian Chen was very familiar with. They were Luo Jian of the Luo Clan and Ka Di Yun of the Ka Di Clan.

Cheng Mingxiang gave a steady glance at everyone, a great big smile on his face. “Good, there’s plenty of people here. Even if we were to turn Changyang Xiang Tian into a cripple, the Changyang Clan wouldn’t dare say anything. The people gathered here today have no small amount of influence, even the emperor would get a headache if he were to try protecting Changyang Xiang Tian.”

Cheng Mingxiang was confident that he could beat Changyang Xiang Tian in a fair battle, but now that His Majesty had officially declared the wedding between Changyang Xiang Tian and Princess Ge Lan, his status was like black and white compared to before. Not only did he have the backing of the Changyang Clan, but now he had the royal family supporting him. With this combination, even Cheng Mingxiang who had a considerable amount of power and influence would need to think carefully before planning. If he wanted to teach a simple lesson, then there would not be as big a problem, but Cheng Mingxiang didn’t think it would be that easy. So for that reason, he had called many influential people to join him. With a coalition of power like this, the emperor would have to think twice before investigating. The Changyang Clan itself didn’t even have a voice at all against this group.

“Sha La, immediately fetch someone to go look for Changyang Xiang Tian’s location. Remember, this should not be let out at all. If the vice headmaster or the headmaster find out about it, all of our plans will be ruined.” Cheng Mingxiang ordered his training partner.

“Yes, my Lord.”

Afterwards, Sha La either directly spent money or relied on connections within the academy to secretly hear of Changyang Xiang Tian’s immediate location. At the same time, he also dispatched quite a few of his trusted people to search the entire academy.

It was extremely calm within Kargath Academy; nothing had been riled up by Cheng Mingxiang and his group of people’s movements.

Two hours later, the 20 students that Sha La had dispatched all returned, one by one.

“Lord Cheng, we’ve searched the entire Kargath Academy, but there was no signs of Changyang Xiang Tian.” A person reported to him.

Cheng Mingxiang frowned and said, “How is that possible? Could it be that Changyang Xiang Tian is not currently within the academy?”

“I’ve heard Changyang Xiang Tian loved to read in the library, have you searched that building yet?” Luo Jian asked from the side. Although Luo Jian had been stabbed by Jian Chen, the medicine had healed his body back to the point of it being as good as new.

“We’ve also searched the library. Changyang Xiang Tian isn’t there.” The leader of the search continued.

At that moment, a slightly chubby youth said, “I heard that Changyang Xiang Tian is the Freshmen Ruler. The Freshmen Ruler has the special privilege of being able to enter the library’s first 5 levels. Could it be that Changyang Xiang Tian is hiding within the 5th level? If that really is true, then we can only wait until he comes out before we act.”

Hearing their fellow student, everyone in the group nodded, what that person had said had some logic behind it.

The leader in charge of the search shook his head and said, “That can’t be. I already asked the janitor lady within the library; she said that Changyang Xiang Tian didn’t enter the library at all today.”

“Could it be Changyang Xiang Tian is truly not within the academy grounds?” Cheng Mingxiang frowned.

At that moment, another student hesitated slightly before saying, “Lord Cheng, although we didn’t find Changyang Xiang Tian, we did discover that Changyang Hu is in the eastern grove. Changyang Hu is Changyang Xiang Tian’s older brother; I feel like he might know of Changyang Xiang Tian’s whereabouts.”

Luo Jian’s eyes lit up, but his expression soon fell again. He had just remembered everything that had happened that night; the monster cores in his possession had all been stolen from the

Changyang brothers and Tie Ta. Although he didn't dare to get revenge on Tie Ta, he wasn't afraid of the consequences of confronting Changyang Xiang Tian's brother Changyang Hu

“Not bad, Changyang Hu definitely knows where Changyang Xiang Tian went. I recommend that we go ask him.” Luo Jian said in a lower voice, his eyes flashing dangerously.

“Alright, we'll go find Changyang Hu first.”

Everyone else quickly agreed with Luo Jian's suggestion. For the sake of not attracting other students' attentions, a dozen of them split with the group and took different paths towards the eastern grove.

When the dozen of them rushed to the grove, they saw that Changyang Hu was still there, practicing his martial arts.

At the sight of Changyang Hu, Luo Jian's eyes immediately burned in hatred, as if he could spit out flames. Perhaps Changyang Hu was too absorbed in his practice, but he didn't sense Cheng Mingxiang's people's arrival.

Cheng Mingxiang's group of people walked up to Changyang Hu, and in unison, they stood in a circle surrounding him. Realizing this, Changyang Hu finally awoke from his concentration. By the time he had reacted, he had already been surrounded by dozens of students

Changyang Hu's gaze surveyed his surroundings. After he saw the expressions on the other party's faces, his heart skipped a beat as he had a bad premonition. Especially after he saw Luo Jian's hatred-filled glare towards him, Changyang Hu's expression could not help but grow heavy.

"What do you guys want?" Changyang Hu said. Despite the dozen or so people surrounding him, his face still did not show a single trace of fear.

Luo Jian sneered, "Changyang Hu, do you not remember what happened in the forest a few days ago?" His face grew dark as he spoke and glared at him. "Your group dared to steal my three days worth of hard work and caused me to fail. For this slight, I will definitely pay you back an eye for an eye."

Changyang Hu snorted, and his gaze at Luo Jian showed no trace of fear as he coldly said, "Luo Jian, that was trouble that you had brought onto yourself; there's no way we are to blame for what happened. If you hadn't first tried to steal our monster cores, then the following events wouldn't have occurred. Everything was your own fault; if you want to blame something, you can only blame your lack of strength. You even got defeated by my fourth brother, who hadn't even reached Sainthood yet." Changyang Hu mocked, as he looked at Luo Jian in disdain.

"You..." Luo Jian was momentarily so indignant at Changyang Hu's response that he couldn't respond. The event that had occurred that night in the forest was a humiliation that he would never be able to wipe from his memory. Despite his strength as a middle-ranked Saint level, he had lost to a freshman that hadn't

yet become a Saint. In addition, the monster cores that he had spent 3 days of painstaking efforts to collect had all been taken away. This result was definitely something that the Young Master of the Luo clan couldn't accept.

If word of his humiliation reached the clan, then Luo Jian would not be able to hold his head up high in the future.

Chapter 60: Changyang Hu's Injuries

Luo Jian flew into a rage and immediately concentrated his energy into his right hand before charging towards Changyang Hu.

Changyang Hu's reaction wasn't slow at all, since he had already been ready to retaliate since they surrounded him. So when Luo Jian had summoned his Saint Weapon, he had summoned his own yellow colored battleaxe without any fear of the rapidly incoming Luo Jian.

When the two Saints started to move, the surrounding circle of people instinctively took a step back in order to avoid injury.

“Peng!”

Luo Jian's sword and Changyang Hu's battleaxe clashed against each other emitting a tremendously loud sound. After the two weapons smashed into each other, the force of their actions caused the two to tremble in reaction. Their feet slowly retreating backwards, with Changyang Hu going back four or five steps while Luo Jian slowly retreated two or three steps.

The two started to fight at a very close distance, but the spectators could tell that Changyang Hu was slowly losing ground. Although Luo Jian's wind attribute Saint Force focused on speed, and his attack was slightly weaker, his strength was still at the middle-ranked Saint level. Even if Changyang Hu's earth-attribute Saint Force had stronger defense, he wasn't Luo Jian's equal. After all, Changyang Hu had just reached Saint level not too long ago.

Luo Jian didn't plan on letting Changyang Hu off so easily. His body flashed with a cyan glow, and a wind began to revolve around his body endlessly. Luo Jian's body instantly appeared in front of Changyang Hu, the great sword raised high in the air, glowing cyan. He slashed it down towards Changyang Hu at frightening speeds; since Luo Jian's Saint Force used the wind attribute, his speed was levels higher than other people's.

Changyang Hu's expression suddenly changed. Luo Jian's attack speed was so fast that he had no time to counter. In the end, he barely managed to raise the axe in his hand to block the attack with difficulty.

“Changyang Hu, accept your death!”

At that moment when Changyang Hu's axe hit Luo Jian's sword, another voice came crying out from the sidelines. It was Ka Di Yun with his own sword coming straight at him and immediately slash down onto Changyang Hu's right arm.

An intense pain caused Changyang Hu to let out a groan. It was obvious that this attack had used quite a bit of Ka Di Yun's strength. It left a wound so deep on Changyang Hu's shoulder that one could see the bone.

With his arm having suffered from such a huge attack, Changyang Hu could no longer maintain the Saint Weapon in his hand, and the great axe disappeared from his hand.

Luo Jian's eyes flashed with a cold look and swung his sword at the stomach of Changyang Hu. The point of the sword ripped apart his uniform, and left a deep wound on Changyang Hu's stomach. Immediately, a river of blood came flowing out of the wound, causing his uniform to be dyed a bloody red.

A look of extreme pain flashed through his face, but he didn't dare let out a sound.

"Changyang Hu, I didn't think you'd get what you deserved so quickly." Luo Jian roared with laughter, the hatred he bore towards Changyang Hu couldn't be resolved easily. With another wave of his sword, he slashed down and left yet another wound on Changyang Hu's body.

Changyang Hu's eyes were filled with a fierce glare towards Luo Jian as he snarled. "Luo Jian, how useless you are, just because you couldn't beat my fourth brother, you have to fight me. Just wait and see if my fourth brother won't beat the crap out of you."

Hearing Changyang Hu, Luo Jian's face grew dark. Striding forward, he immediately kicked Changyang Hu.

Changyang Hu's eyes flashed at the opportunity, just as Luo Jian's leg was about to make contact, his left arm flew out and clasped onto it. With a mighty strength, Changyang Hu pulled at it.

Luo Jian's sense of balance was immediately disrupted, causing him to fall to the ground.

“Ha!” Changyang Hu roared, his left hand formed a fist as his Saint Force entered his hand. Bringing it down, his fist speeding towards the floored Luo Jian.

Luo Jian wasn't slow to react however, as soon as he hit the floor, he rolled sideways away from Changyang Hu, causing the Saint Force enhanced fist to miss.

“Peng!”

Changyang Hu's fist smashed against the floor and left behind a giant crater as it sunk into the ground.

“Changyang Hu, you really are looking to die!” Luo Jian's handsome face went deathly white. With a snarl, the green colored wind attribute Saint Force condensed into his fist, and almost as if it were lightning, he slammed his fist into Changyang Hu's stomach.

“Pff!” Changyang Hu spat out a glob of blood as his body was sent flying backwards. After four or five meters his body finally descended to the ground with a loud crash.

Just as Luo Jian decided to rush forward to beat Changyang Hu even more, Cheng Ming Xian blocked his path, “Luo Jian, you've taught him a lesson already. Our main goal is Changyang Xiang Tian, not Changyang Hu. At the very least let us beat Changyang Xiang Tian's whereabouts out from him first.”

Luo Jian slowly nodded his head in silence. If it were someone other than Cheng Mingxiang, then he would have looked down on the suggestion in contempt. But Cheng Mingxiang was someone he couldn't afford to offend.

Cheng Mingxiang approached Changyang Hu with a cold laugh, "Changyang Hu, where is Changyang Xiang Tian?"

Changyang Hu crawled up from the ground with some difficulty, his face was pale from blood loss, and his mouth still had a few drops of blood trailing down his face. But since his Saint Force had the earth attribute, his defenses were fairly strong. If it were anyone else, that person wouldn't even have the strength to twitch a finger.

Changyang Hu stared at the people surrounding him and growled. "I don't know, but even if I did know, I wouldn't tell any of you." Although he had confidence in Jian Chen's strength, every single person here was at the Saint level, and he didn't want his younger brother to fight alone against this group.

Cheng Mingxiang's face grew dark as he said coldly, "Changyang Hu, I'll give you one more chance. Where is Changyang Xiang Tian?"

Changyang Hu looked up at him and gave a bloody smile, "I already said I don't know."

"Hmph!" Cheng Mingxiang sneered. Smashing his fist against

Changyang Hu's face, he immediately slammed him to the ground once more. "Will you speak or not?"

Changyang Hu's anger grew tremendously as he crawled up from the floor with the last of his strength, "This one won't tell you! Cheng Mingxiang, you better kill me straight away, or else, I Changyang Hu, swear that I will make you regret this!"

Cheng Mingxiang looked at him with disdain, "Changyang Hu, what right do you have to say that, could it be because you are the young lord to the Changyang Clan? Hmph, it is merely the Changyang Clan, my Hua Yun Sect cares not about your clan." Cheng Mingxiang's eyes flashed once more and he c*cked his right hand backwards. With a bright red glint, the fist burrowed itself into Changyang Hu's head. "Will. You. Speak?"

Changyang Hu's body was badly bruised by the punch. Already his head was starting to drip with blood, but his resolute expression was still there, looking as fierce as always.

"You and I will go down together!" Changyang Hu couldn't take it anymore. With the yellow light gathering in his left hand, he immediately slashed at Cheng Mingxiang with his reformed Saint Weapon.

A blazing red sword materialized in Cheng Mingxiang's hand and he easily blocked Changyang Hu's attack. Not only did Changyang Hu suffer from serious injuries, he also was not accustomed to using his left hand to control his axe. Even if he had been completely fine, he definitely wouldn't have been Cheng Mingxiang's equal anyways.

Cheng Mingxiang looked at Changyang Hu with a jeering sneer, “Changyang Hu, I recommend you be obedient and tell us where Changyang Xiang Tian, that way you’ll feel less pain.”

Changyang Hu gasped for air before going oddly calm. He understood that continuing on this route would only lead to disaster. He looked around the area and surveyed his chances before immediately dispersing his Saint Weapon and started to run towards the sports field.

This grove was pretty remote; normally, very few people passed through it. Thus, whatever happened here would naturally remain unknown to everyone else outside. Changyang Hu believed that once he ran to a more populated area, Cheng Mingxiang’s group of people definitely wouldn’t dare to act. In addition, he had quite a few good friends within the academy. Although Changyang Hu didn’t hope for them to help him resist Cheng Mingxiang, he knew that they would at least run to notify a teacher, or even the vice headmaster.

Seeing Changyang Hu run off towards the sports field, Cheng Mingxiang’s face changed. “Stop him!” He called out.

The dozen people who initially didn’t move immediately set into motion. Quickly chasing after Changyang Hu, even Cheng Mingxiang was starting to run at full speeds towards the direction of Changyang Hu.

Changyang Hu was already seriously wounded, so he was unable

to outrun these people. It hadn't even been a few moments before his pursuers had already began to catch up with him.

Seeing his enemies quickly catching up to him, Changyang Hu felt fear creep into his heart as he realized that he would not be able to even make it out of the grove. With this thought, he snarled and immediately stopped in his tracks before retreating back into a different part of the grove.

Changyang Hu suddenly changed directions, making his pursuers feel suspicious. However, soon after, they smiled coldly, and even slowed down their pursuit.

The group of people behind stood in a semicircular arc as they took their time to chase after Changyang Hu. Luo Jian stood next to Cheng Mingxiang and sneered, "Based on the direction Changyang Hu is running towards, he's most likely looking for Changyang Xiang Tian."

Cheng Mingxiang nodded, "That is true, so it seems Changyang Xiang Tian is indeed not in the academy."

Changyang Hu used all his strength to run, but his current state was not looking good. His head was drenched with blood while his uniform was caked with blood and dirt, looking quite miserable all over. He truly had no idea where Jian Chen was, but he knew that within the grove was a small hillside with a complicated layout and a lush plant-life that was suitable for hiding. With the idea of fleeing into the school becoming obsolete, Changyang Hu's only plausible way to escape was to hide away in the hillside and hope to shake off his enemies.

However, Changyang Hu had forgotten, that the place where Jian Chen had taught him this morning was currently in the opposite direction.

At a waterfall on the hillsides, a uniformed youth was cultivating in a puddle not too far away from the grass. The figure looked quite slender and weak with long black hair that went down to his waist. He looked rather handsome and had a bright glow in his eyes that was similar to the twinkle that reflected off of his sword.

The youth had a small, silver sword about 1.3 meters long and two fingers wide. On the sword hilt were two words written in fancy calligraphy——Light Wind.

The youth calmly stood there. The sword in his hand pointed to the ground, and his whole person was as motionless as a mountain.

At that moment, the youth's eyes let out a spark of light. His body fluidly began to move without warning; only mirages from his quick movements could be seen. The silver sword in his hand had entirely become a white blur, and countless shadows of the sword blended together like an illusion that constantly flashed with light. As it moved in the air, only its afterimages could be seen.

The youth cried out the words 'Profound Steps' as he moved through the ground quickly as if he was gliding with a great amount of agility and nimbleness. Seeing a rabbit, he quickly stabbed at it with his sword with such an inconceivable speed,

anyone that saw him would be astounded.

This youth was Jian Chen. After leaving the grove he had directly arrived at this beautiful landscape, remembering the feeling of the use of the sword that he had experienced before in his previous world.

Chapter 61: Increasing Murderous Intent

Jian Chen quickly moved through the grass, the Light Wind Sword had already become a streak of white light. He slashed out with his sword at a rapid speed in several directions, his swordplay fast yet sharp.

Following Jian Chen's quick movements, the wind scattered dry leaves into the air, fluttering around Jian Chen like gentle dancing butterflies.

And at this moment, Jian Chen's swordplay suddenly changed. Although his sword techniques were still fast, but with every stab he made with his sword, the air whistled and left an afterimage that no ordinary person would be able to see easily.

A moment after, the rapidly dancing sword in Jian Chen's hand suddenly stopped. But despite after such a long period of intense exercise, he did not even look out of breath and was instead still breathing normally.

And at the same time, Jian Chen finally stopped his wild dance, the leaves that were all previously flying around him disintegrated into powder and scattered onto the ground. Only a few leaves were left completely intact, but written on some of them was the word "Sword". Although the size was different on each of them, it was written clearly and covered the entire area on each leaf. Although, there were some other leaves with the word "Sword" on it that had missing strokes, being either unclear or incomplete.

If anyone else saw this sight, then they would surely be amazed to the point of having to pick up their jaw from the ground. This scene was far too astonishing to believe since the leaves had been floating wildly through the air and even weaved with other leaves at random intervals. Just focusing on one leaf amid the mess of them, constantly changing positions in the air would definitely cause a person to become dizzy. It would have been even more impossible to think that someone had been able to clearly write the word “Sword” on any of them.

Most importantly, the leaves were very fragile and liable to break upon the gentlest of touch. To use a sword to achieve such a feat without leaving a single trace of a tear, was as difficult as ascending to the heavens.

If people were to find out about what Jian Chen had done, then his name and prestige would be announced and known to the entire Tian Yuan continent in the shortest period of time.

Watching the still intact leaves gently float down to the ground with a happy smile, Jian Chen muttered to himself, “Although my speed with a sword has deteriorated, my control over it has greatly improved to a level that can’t even compare to my past. It’s almost as if the sword has become an integral part of my body; perhaps this is the advantage of this world’s Saint Weapon.”

Jian Chen’s ears suddenly detected a sound. Concentrating on the source, Jian Chen turned towards the opening of the grove while willing his silver sword to fade away.

In a short amount of time, the place where Jian Chen looked at

started to shake even more before a bloodied figure with a ripped uniform came scurrying out of it.

Just one look at the clothes of the person and Jian Chen automatically knew that this was a student of Kargath Academy. But for what reason why the student was bloody all over, Jian Chen was puzzled. There were no magical beasts around so there was no reason why he would be so injured. Kargath Academy also had strict rules about fighting among students. While giving each others pointers was allowed, fights that could lead to fatal injuries were not allowed.

However, when Jian Chen looked at the student's face, he immediately became stunned. His face froze in a hard expression as he looked at the amount of blood that covered half of the student's face. Jian Chen couldn't believe what he saw, so he opened his mouth to cry out.

"Big brother!" Came the astonished shout. In a flash, he crossed over 30 meters to arrive at his blood soaked and injured brother with worry etched on his face.

Seeing the horrible wound on Changyang Hu as well as the blood still flowing from his head, Jian Chen's eyes narrowed in anger. "Big brother, what happened to you. Who did this to you?" An intense murderous intent was emitted from his body the longer he looked at his injured brother.

When it came to his brother Changyang Hu, he was the only person Jian Chen had actually cared about after his mother because Changyang Hu had treated him like a true younger

brother, so Jian Chen had wanted to repay him for this debt. When he had first come to Kargath Academy, it was Changyang Hu who had brought him on a tour around the academy grounds and explained the rules to him. He faced huge amounts of danger after running into the magical beast forest to fight and kill a Class 1 Magical Beast to gift Jian Chen its monster core without any regard for his own personal health. Although Class 1 Magical Beasts weren't even a threat to Jian Chen, Changyang Hu did not have as much fighting experience or combat skills as Jian Chen. At the time, Changyang Hu only had the strength of a peak 10th Saint Force Layer cultivator, so obtaining a Class 1 Monster Core wouldn't have been an easy task for him.

Later on, his brother had even fought against Ka Di Yun for him on the platform even after knowing his own strength was lacking in comparison to his opponent, initiating the challenge.

Jian Chen had clearly felt that Changyang Hu cared for him from the bottom of his heart, and so from then on, Jian Chen had always treated him like close family.

In his previous life, Jian Chen was a war orphan who had his parents murdered by the enemy army. From his birth, he had no family or friends and never knew the warm embrace of family. But now that God had arranged such a nice life for him, Jian Chen would definitely treasure this, and Changyang Hu held the second biggest spot in his heart after his mother Bi Yuntian. So seeing Changyang Hu beaten into such a state, Jian Chen's heart flew into a rage that was unprecedented. A single look from him gave the feeling that it could injure someone.

Seeing Jian Chen suddenly appear, Changyang Hu looked at him with a dazed expression. However his face changed once more as he spoke anxiously, “Fourth brother, why...why are you here. Hurry up and run! Leave this place, they’ll be here in a moment!” Changyang Hu looked impatient; he hadn’t thought that he would run into Jian Chen here.

Instead of running, Jian Chen’s face darkened as he said in a low voice, “Big brother, who in the world beat you to such a state?” The suppressed rage in his tone could’ve been identified by anyone.

Changyang Hu’s hands desperately grabbed onto Jian Chen’s body as he continued to speak urgently, “Fourth brother, don’t bother asking about that right now and leave this place immediately. Take the long route back to the academy, or else they’ll definitely find you.” Although he knew Jian Chen’s strength was enormous since he had beaten a Middle Saint, Changyang Hu did not believe that even Jian Chen could take on a dozen Saints, along with Cheng Mingxiang, who was an Upper Saint.

But Jian Chen stood right where he was, like a stone statue that could not be budged. No matter what Changyang Hu did, nothing would sway Jian Chen. With eyes that spoke volumes of his murderous intent, he glared at the grove, waiting for someone to come out.

A dozen uniformed students eventually walked into his range of sight, with Luo Jian and Cheng Mingxiang walking in front of the group.

When they saw Jian Chen, Cheng Mingxiang's and Luo Jian's expressions became excited. With a big smile, Luo Jian said, "Changyang Xiang Tian, we've found you at last. I was beginning to wonder where you had run off to." Without any need for instructions, the group of people immediately surrounded Jian Chen and his brother in a circle.

Seeing how he and his brother were surrounded, Changyang Hu's face grew ugly and gave a small sigh. But other than that, he said nothing.

Despite the arrogant manner of the people around him, Jian Chen did not look scared at all, and instead remained calm. It was almost as if he had not even noticed such weak people were surrounding him at all.

Jian Chen's face hardened as his eyes swept across the faces of the people around him. Some of them had pained looks on their faces; they felt a chill well up in their hearts, as if Jian Chen's stare was a cold blade that had penetrated their souls.

"Who was the one who beat my brother!?" Jian Chen shouted, "Step forward!" Immediately, a large amount of force was released into the air. Despite the dozen members in front of him, Jian Chen was not scared, and instead held his head up high as a sign of his determination to not give up.

Jian Chen's powerful command was accompanied by the release of a strong Qi, causing all of them to take an instinctive step

backwards. After all, Jian Chen had already been baptized with murderous intent, and the children in front of him who still had the smell of their mother's milk on them would not be able to stand up against it.

Realizing that he had been intimidated by Jian Chen's command, Cheng Mingxiang became angry. He had thought that with his majestic Upper Saint strength, it would be him that would be doing the intimidation; he couldn't accept the reverse outcome.

"Changyang Xiang Tian, you're seeking death right now!" Cheng Mingxiang snarled. The fiery red sword appeared in his hands, and gave off a searing red glow as it struck out towards Jian Chen's chest.

"Hmph!" Seeing the stab of the sword, Jian Chen's eyes flashed with strong murderous intent. His Light Wind Sword immediately appeared in his right hand, parrying the stab from the other sword as fast as lightning.

"Ding!"

A crisp sound rang out as the two swords clashed; both points of the swords had somehow pressed against each other.

Seeing how the two points of the sword made contact with each other, Cheng Mingxiang's eyes widened in shock. He couldn't believe such an event had happened. Even if Jian Chen was his opponent, having the two points of the sword meet as both swordsmen stabbed out wasn't something any normal person

could replicate, especially considering the difference in size between their two swords, and the speed at which they had thrust their swords forward. And to be able to do it so flawlessly, this was not the sign of a weak person; it signified that a person's Saint Weapon control had far surpassed that of a typical Saint.

However, Jian Chen, who had only recently broken through Sainthood, had easily achieved such a feat. This made Cheng Mingxiang skeptical. He had thought that this was a coincidence, but the moment he saw Jian Chen's calm face, his heart immediately dispelled any notions of it being one.

Another thing that had startled Cheng Mingxiang was the sword in Jian Chen's hands. Because the sword had been so tiny in comparison to his, he had thought it was merely an embroidery needle. It was four feet long and 2 fingers wide, so it looked quite frail in his eyes. It looked as if the moment a large amount of strength was exerted onto it, the weapon would snap in half.

Cheng Mingxiang could swear that in his entire history of living, this was the first time he had ever seen such a sword. Within the Tian Yuan continent, every single Saint had a Saint Weapon that leaned towards a great broadsword, since they had all condensed their Saint Force into heavy-type weapons. This convention was a fact that was commonly accepted by almost every single cultivationist.

If Jian Chen's delicately small sword wasn't able to block against his attack, then Cheng Mingxiang definitely would have ridiculed Jian Chen.

Chapter 62: Jian Chen's Strength

Cheng Mingxiang's face hardened. This time, although opponent was only a newly broken through Saint, he was facing his opponent seriously for the first time.

“Cheng Mingxiang, since you've beaten my big brother, then don't expect to leave from this place unharmed.” Jian Chen stated coldly.

Cheng Mingxiang snorted in response and said, “Changyang Xiang Tian, I admit I've underestimated you, but if you want to beat me with your new Saint powers, that won't be possible.”

Jian Chen snorted as he looked on at Cheng Mingxiang with disdain. “Whether or not I have the ability to, come and see!” Jian Chen immediately rushed forward his wrist perfectly controlled the Light Wind Sword and escaped the deadlock with Cheng Mingxiang's own sword by slapping the side of Cheng Mingxiang's sword fiercely.

“Clang!”

As the sounds of metal rang in the air, Cheng Mingxiang's sword was forced off to the sides by the Light Wind Sword. Jian Chen had struck out with his sword with such force that Cheng Mingxiang's sword arm had become numb with pain.

At the same time, Jian Chen was in the air, stabbing the Light Wind Sword like a streak of silver light towards Cheng

Mingxiang's chest.

Cheng Mingxiang turned pale with fright, Jian Chen's speed was nearly too quick for him to keep up with. He could only watch as the silver blade approached him with an inconceivable speed, unable to react or even move out of the way.

The Light Wind Sword tore through Cheng Mingxiang's uniform and immediately sunk into his chest. But with Jian Chen's superior control, the sword did not sink in too deep.

Immediately after feeling the sharp pain in his chest, Cheng Mingxiang immediately retreated, causing Jian Chen's sword to be pulled out.

Cheng Mingxiang looked down to where the blood was dripping down onto his uniform with a terrified look. He replayed the moment over and over in his head; he had been unable to dodge the sword at all. In his entire life, he could swear that this was the fastest swordplay he had ever seen. He had even started to feel terrified at Jian Chen's strength, but he just couldn't understand how a newly advanced Saint could be this strong.

Jian Chen didn't plan on letting him off too lightly though. Immediately using Profound Steps, he took off like a demon possessed and with another flash of his silver light, Jian Chen struck out at Cheng Mingxiang's chest with great speed.

“Ah!”

Cheng Mingxiang let out a miserable shout as he saw blood spray out once more. The blood from the left side of his chest had started to spread over to his right side. The wound was so deep that the bone underneath could be seen as the blood inside his body violently bubbled out, staining the entire top half of his uniform with it.

The fury in Jian Chen's eyes didn't dissipate at all as he brandished his Light Wind Sword and inflicted wound after wound upon Cheng Mingxiang's body.

The wounds on Cheng Mingxiang steadily increased, each one looking even more frightening than the one before while going deep into the body. Not only was his body being sliced at, but his entire academy uniform had already started to fall apart, and the remaining cloth becoming redder by the second.

Seeing how their strongest member Cheng Mingxiang was powerless under Jian Chen, the dozen other students became as quiet as wooden chickens. Seeing how Cheng Mingxiang was endlessly screaming, this had completely overturned what they had thought about him as they looked on with a stunned expression.

Luo Jian reacted first, even though he was equally amazed at the display of strength Jian Chen was showing, he had at least ten other companions who were all at the Saint level. With a great increase in courage, he roared, "Everybody charge, even if he's strong, he's still just one person. How could we be afraid of just a single person?" Luo Jian raised his green greatsword with a snarl as he charged towards Jian Chen.

Hearing Luo Jian's speech, the students all jolted back to awareness. With a look at one another, the fear that was planted into their hearts by Jian Chen was immediately cast out. With a lift of their greatswords, battleaxe, large knives and spears, each student charged at Jian Chen with great arrogance.

Jian Chen's eyes flashed as he watched the people come forward, but he didn't retreat. Taking the initiative and charging in with his Light Wind Sword, he immediately stabbed toward the closest person's stomach.

"Pch!"

Jian Chen's sword slid into the student's body with ease. Against him, these students had no battle experience, so there was no way they'd be able to fight back.

"Hurk!"

"Go die!"

At that moment, Jian Chen had entered the encirclement

Jian Chen sneered, and the Light Wind Sword emitted a slight glow as traces of sharp and powerful Sword Qi began to spread out from the blade. Jian Chen's right hand seemed to turn into a mirage, as the Light Wind Blade seemed to pierce all four directions as fast as lightning. Every time he thrust his sword out,

he could accurately hit another weapon. After only a short amount of time, Jian Chen had already lashed his sword out 10 times.

“Ding” “Ding!” “Ding!”

A symphony of metal-against-metal sounds rang out, the sounds all merging together as one.

When the Light Wind Sword in Jian Chen’s hand collided with the Saint Weapons, the expressions of all the surrounding students that were all Middle Saints changed. They immediately retreated, the Saint Weapons in their hand shaking from the collision. Jian Chen’s sword appeared to be extremely small, but it hid a great amount of power behind it. After a single collision with his sword, the Saint Weapons all vibrated so intensely from the aftershock that it made the students’ arms numb.

While blocking all of the attacks, Jian Chen’s expression didn’t change. His movements did not pause at all, and his feet left traces in the ground as he used monster-like movements to charge through the group of people. The Light Wind Sword in his hand danced around in the air at high speeds, turning into a silver glow. The light made it look like there were millions of sword afterimages freezing in the air, disappearing in the blink of an eye.

“Ah!”

“Ah!”

With Jian Chen's monster-like movements, sharp shouts of pain rang out in the air. The desolate cries could make any weaker-hearted people absolutely horrified, and a chilliness began to arise in the air.

The blood-covered Changyang Hu stood on the side, staring in a daze at the Jian Chen constantly moving about like a demon, causing the students to cry out in shock. At the moment, his mind had already completely ground to a halt; he had already completely lost his cognitive abilities.

At that moment, the dozens of students had already all fallen to the ground. Their ashen faces were filled with pain, and their originally perfectly clean and tidy uniforms were now torn all over the place. Each tear was dripping with blood, dying their entire uniforms crimson. Moreover, that white light continuously flashed over their bodies, quickly increasing the number of wounds on their bodies. From their upper torso down to their legs, their entire bodies were covered with frightening wounds. Their blood flowed like rivers out from their injuries, and they quickly began to look like they were made of blood.

Jian Chen circled the students at high speeds. The Light Wind Sword in Jian Chen's hand slashed at their bodies continuously, causing splashes of blood and torn pieces of clothing to fly out in the air.

Changyang Hu's injuries greatly affected Jian Chen's emotions. Although Jian Chen didn't kill these dozens of students, he would definitely not let them go lightly. If these people weren't attending the same school as Jian Chen was, and if Jian Chen wasn't worried

about stirring trouble within their families, he would definitely end their lives without hesitation.

“Senior Changyang Xiang Tian, please have mercy, please have mercy on us. We won’t dare to do this ever again.”

“Senior Changyang Xiang Tian, please let us go this time. We won’t ever do it again”

Finally, the people could no longer endure the torture, and had begun to beg for mercy. As soon as one person began to cry out, the others all started to plead for their lives as well. However, a few of the more temperamental people were still gritting their teeth and holding themselves back. They had also considered running, but both their legs and arms were currently sporting terrifying wounds. The slightest movement caused them to bite down in pain. There was no way they could run; at the least, they didn’t have the willpower to endure such an intense pain.

Jian Chen ceased his movements. His expression was cold and indifferent; he didn’t have a hint of blush on his cheeks, and his breathing was calm. However, the Light Wind Sword in his hand was dripping with fresh blood.

Jian Chen’s body was as tall and straight as a mountain, immovable in his spot. His eyes flashed coldly as if they seemed to be able to pierce through one’s soul. He slowly swept his gaze across the dozen students lying on the ground and said, “I can let you guys go, but you have to answer this, who injured my older brother?”

“It’s Lord Cheng, Luo Jian, and Ka Di Yun....”

“Right, it was those three that had injured Changyang Hu....”

“Changyang Hu was wounded by those three; we didn’t do anything at all.”

The dozen youths struggled to say their excuses first, afraid that if they were too slow in their responses, Jian Chen would be discontent. At the moment, they had already long abandoned any thoughts of retaliation against Jian Chen, and wholeheartedly regretted their actions.

Among them, half of the people had had their monster cores taken away by Jian Chen in the forest. The other half had no enmity towards Jian Chen, and had merely been gathered by Cheng Mingxiang.

Jian Chen’s eyes flashed fiercely. He coldly glared at Cheng Mingxiang, Luo Jian, and Ka Di Yun, a powerful murderous intent evident in his gaze.

Under Jian Chen’s murderous gaze, Cheng Mingxiang and the other two felt chills in their hearts, and all showed terrified expressions.

Chapter 63: Incoming Disaster

“Changyang Xiang Tian, what...what are you going to do? Let us go immediately, let’s forget about the events that happened today, otherwise, just you wait for my Hua Yun Sect to come for revenge.” Cheng Mingxiang said sternly. Even an idiot could tell with one look that Jian Chen didn’t plan on letting them go that easily. Right now, Cheng Mingxiang wanted nothing else but to leave this place and plot his revenge for another day.

Jian Chen sneered, “Let you go? It won’t be that easy.”

Hearing this, Cheng Mingxiang and the two others face dropped. Ka Di Yun spoke with a gloomy voice, “Changyang Xiang Tian, we may have injured your brother, but now you have injured us, let us wipe the slate clean.”

Jian Chen slowly walked towards the three with his Light Wind Sword emitting sword Qi. The three watched as the sword slowly envelop itself in a bright glow of silver as if it was being eaten by it.

“A clean slate? How could it be that easy? Today, you three will leave an arm behind, and if there is another time in the future, then it will be your life.”

Jian Chen had already arrived in front of Ka Di Yun, his Light Wind Sword already swishing down in an arc like silver lightning towards Ka Di Yun’s shoulder.

“Ah...”

Ka Di Yun let out a desolate scream as the intense feeling of pain wracked his face. Already all color had drained away from it. A fountain of blood sprayed out of the stump from where his right arm originally was as it flopped down onto the ground lifeless.

Jian Chen had chopped off Ka Di Yun's right arm.

Cheng Mingxiang and Luo Jian's face immediately changed as they watched with a tremble. Another look at the severed arm, and then at Ka Di Yun's screaming figure had caused them to become deathly white in the face.

The ten other students looked at Jian Chen with fear, this type of development was something they were not expecting to see. Who would have known that he was this merciless and severed someone's arm without hesitation? This cruel display had brought them no small amount of anxiety and fear. But there was a small shimmer of hope, they had fortunately not fought against Changyang Hu. If it were not for that small fact, then they had no doubt that they would be joining Luo Jian, Cheng Mingxiang, and Ka Di Yun amongst the ranks of losing an arm.

Jian Chen had treated the event as if it was an insignificant matter, his face not revealing any emotion whatsoever during the act. Whether it was the splattered blood on the ground or Ka Di Yun's screams of pain, it had no effect on him. Instead, he looked at Luo Jian and walked closer towards him with his bloody sword.

As Jian Chen approached, fear filled Luo Jian's face. Ignoring the

pain from his wounds, he began to crawl backwards away from Jian Chen at a snail like pace while crying, “Changyang Xiang Tian, what...what are you doing? Don’t...don’t come any closer!”

Jian Chen kept his slow pace as he walked towards Luo Jian. With an icy stare that revealed no mercy in his eyes, he slowly raised his Light Wind Sword.

Seeing Jian Chen lift his silver sword, Luo Jian became even more terrified. He had long since lost his arrogant attitude and started to plead to him, “Changyang Xiang Tian, please...I beg of you...please don’t cut off my arm, if you let me go, I, Luo Jian swear that in the future I will definitely repay you.”

Jian Chen showed no signs of stopping. Swinging his sword in another arc of silver light, he swiftly cut off Luo Jian’s arm under the owner’s disbelieving eye.

“Ah!”

A terrified scream came out from Luo Jian as his right arm was separated from his shoulder, causing blood to come spraying out onto the ground.

“Changyang Xiang Tian, I definitely won’t let you go...” Luo Jian grimaced as he used his anger to roar in anger. Already his eyes became bloodshot as he stared at Jian Chen with intense hatred.

Jian Chen didn’t take any notice of Luo Jian’s cry, and instead

walked off towards Cheng Mingxiang.

Cheng Mingxiang's face was still a deathly white color. There was only regret in his heart as he realized his strength was weaker than Jian Chen's. If it weren't for the fact that he had a dozen other people at the Saint level, he wouldn't have been forced into such a difficult situation.

Seeing the still approaching figure of Luo Jian, Cheng Mingxiang couldn't quell the feeling of absolute dread in his heart as he tried to calm down. "Changyang Xiang Tian, if you don't want to bring your clan into this..."

Hearing Cheng Mingxiang's words immediately caused a reaction from Jian Chen. A glare appeared on his eyes as he immediately flashed forward to where Cheng Mingxiang was. Before he could even finish his sentence, Jian Chen had already lopped off his right arm.

Cheng Mingxiang stifled a shout as his face flashed with pain. He was not like Ka Di Yun or Luo Jian who had both screamed. The scream of pain had already been suppressed in his throat, but his face was still warped into a different expression, it would seem that his pain threshold was greater than the other two.

Jian Chen's ice cold gaze landed on the three people and he coldly said, "Today, I cut off your arm, but if there's a next time, I will take your life. Don't think I am bluffing, I will be true to my word." Jian Chen's eyes swept over to where the other students laid.

As he looked at each student, they look stared down at the ground in fear. Whenever Jian Chen had looked at them with his bloody sword, none of them had even the smallest idea of trying to get revenge.

Jian Chen looked at his bloody Light Wind Sword; and with a single thought, he held the sword with the point facing downwards. All of the blood accumulated on the sword started to accumulate at the tip of the sword and slowly started to drip down onto the dusty earth, restoring the Light Wind Sword to its original bright glory.

With the Light Wind Sword finally clean, Jian Chen returned to where Changyang Hu was. After seeing his bloody brother, the icy stare on Jian Chen's face softened as he said with concern, "Big brother, let's go back now."

Changyang Hu nodded his head dumbfounded. Right now his eyes were wide open after watching the entire fight that had just happened. Even though he had personally witnessed Jian Chen's victory, he was still having a hard time in believing it.

Jian Chen lent a hand towards the bloody Changyang Hu and the both turned around to walk back to his dorm by a secluded road. But despite this, the both of them would still see enough people that would spread the news that Changyang Hu was heavily injured around the academy.

Not long after Jian Chen had returned back to his room, the

students lent a hand towards the three injured students and began their slow walk towards the academy. The moment the academy came into sight, everyone went into an uproar, especially for the three students each missing an arm, nobody could believe their eyes at what they had seen.

The news of the injured students spread across the academy with rapid speed. The news had even spread to the teachers, who immediately reported it to the vice headmaster Bai En. When Bai En had heard that Cheng Mingxiang, Luo Jian, and Ka Di Yun had their arms cut off, he placed extra importance on the matters and immediately relayed them to the medical experts of the academy.

As Bai En arrived at the medicinal wing of the academy, a large group of people had already gathered on the outside as they clamored around for news.

Vice headmaster Chang Bai En pushed aside the crowd of students, and directly forced his way up to the medicinal wing to see the situation. There were currently a dozen blood-covered students lying on stretchers. In the middle of the room stood 2 middle-aged men and a woman currently closing their eyes. They had their hands spread out above three of the students, emitting a milky white light from their hands that enveloped these students.

Shrouded in milky white rays of light, the three students' terrifying wounds were being quickly sealed before their very eyes. The speed of the healing was unfathomably fast, and within a short breath, the three students' wounds had already disappeared without a trace.

Once the wounds disappeared, the expressions on the three students' faces clearly changed. Now they showed no traces of pain; on the contrary, they looked a lot more relaxed now. At the same time, one could see traces of alarm in the depths of their eyes.

After treating the three students, the two men and one woman showed their humble appreciation to Bai En. Soon after, they continued to treat the remaining dozen or more students in the middle.

The vice headmaster had an ugly expression on his face as his gaze swept across the dozen students; his gaze lingered for an especially long time on Cheng Mingxiang and the other two that had lost their right arms. His expression fell as he bellowed, "What happened here? Who wounded you to this extent? Could it be that you encountered someone from outside? Hmph, don't they know that everything within this 100 kilometer perimeter is Kargath Academy's territory? To think that someone would dare to enter Kargath Academy and injure its students; this is really absurd." Bai En was fuming; it was very obvious that he thought that Cheng Mingxiang and the other dozen students had been hurt by some people from the outside

"Vice headmaster, it was Changyang Xian Tian, We were all injured by Changyang Xian Tian." a student weakly cried.

"That's right, vice headmaster, you have to demand justice for us. Changyang Xian Tian not only heavily injured us, but he even cut off the arms of Lord Cheng and the 2 others..."

"Vice headmaster..."

Bai En was completely shocked into a daze by these words. He only felt disbelief; among these dozen students, the weakest person was at least a Lower Saint. There were even some Middle Saints, and one Upper Saint among them. With such a lineup, even if they encountered a Great Saint, they would still definitely be able to overwhelm him. He really couldn't believe that so many people had actually been beaten black and blue by a freshman that had only just broken through Saint level a few days ago. Bai En couldn't accept this fact at all.

After confirming what actually happened, Bai En's expression immediately grew serious. His heart had already sank to the utmost degree. He immediately looked for the headmaster; what happened here was far too complicated for Bai En to resolve.

After Bai En recounted the entire situation to the headmaster, the headmaster lost his calm. He jumped up from his chair with an expression of utter shock and said, "What? Is what you said really true? Cheng Mingxiang, Luo Jian, and Ka Di Yun all had their arms cut off by Changyang Xiang Tian?"

"Yes, headmaster, I personally made a trip to see. The three individuals' arms were indeed cut off." said Bai En solemnly.

"Ai..." The headmaster sighed heavily and said, "This time the situation has worsened...this Changyang Xiang Tian is far too impulsive. Ka Di Clan and Luo Clan are of no problem, however, Hua Yun sect is not someone the Changyang Clan can afford to offend."

“Headmaster, what should we do now? Our Gesun Kingdom had much difficulty producing a genius like Changyang Xiang Tian. We can’t just stand by and watch a genius with limitless potential die when he had not yet finished maturing. Otherwise, this would really be too major a loss for Gesun Kingdom.” Vice headmaster Bai En said in a heavy tone.

Chapter 64: Goodbye Chang Bai

The headmaster murmured quietly, “What you said is correct, Changyang Xiang Tian must be protected. Bai En, you stay here and resolve the matters in the medicinal building, I will go to the Changyang Clan immediately. Otherwise, if we were to wait for the experts of the Hua Yun sect to arrive, the situation will become too terrible.

After, the headmaster walked towards the frame of the window and jumped out of it. Then just like a big bird, he immediately flew into the sky with frightening speed and flew off into the horizon.

Seeing the headmaster disappear into the horizon, Bai En let loose a sigh. “Changyang Xiang Tian has really disturbed the peace this time. If he had only just beaten them, then the situation wouldn’t be that bad, but he had to go and cut off Cheng Mingxiang’s arm! Although it’s not like the arm can’t be reattached, but the strength needed for this is too high. Even the Hua Yun Sect cannot invite a rank 7 Radiant Saint Master with ease.

By this point, the entire academy had heard about the three students who had their arms chopped off by Changyang Xiang Tian. It was the topic of discussion amongst every student, and with that, Changyang Xiang Tian’s strength had created another shock between the teachers and students.

While the academy was talking about that, Jian Chen sat crossed legged on his bed as he began to reflect upon his actions. He knew in his heart that by chopping off the arms of Cheng Mingxiang,

Luo Jian, and Ka Di Yun, he had brought upon a great deal of trouble on himself. However, he didn't regret what he had done at all so all he could do right now was ponder deeply on how he could deal with the wrath of the three groups.

The day went by quickly and soon became night time.

“Dong dong dong!”

A loud knocking sound came from the other side of Jian Chen's room.

Hearing the sound, the crossed legged Jian Chen slowly opened his eyes. Looking down to see the various Class 1 Monster Cores without energy, he sighed silently before looking towards the door, “Who is it?”

“Changyang Xiang Tian, this is vice headmaster Chang Bai En!” Came Bai En's familiar voice from outside the door.

Jian Chen immediately got off his bed and walked over to open the door. Vice headmaster Chang Bai En was standing right outside his door, with an unsightly expression.

“Vice headmaster, what's wrong?” Jian Chen asked in a conversational tone. He already guessed what the vice headmaster had come for, but his heart was still extremely calm and unwavering.

Vice headmaster Chang Bai En glanced at Jian Chen with a complicated look and sighed, “Changyang Xiang Tian, please pack up, then immediately follow me to the headmaster’s office.”

“Oh!” Jian Chen indifferently replied. He did not say anything afterwards, and quietly went back to his room to pack up his things.

Jian Chen didn’t have many belongings; he grabbed some of his own medicines and stored them into his Space Belt. Then he followed Bai En to the center of the academy where the single, lone tower stood.

“Ah, look over there, isn’t that Changyang Xiang Tian?”

“It is, looks like he’s walking together with the vice headmaster. Maybe he received a super strict punishment...”

.....

As they walked through the sports field, a crowd of students started to gather and chatter amongst themselves.

Jian Chen turned a deaf ear to the discussions that had arisen around him. He followed behind vice headmaster Bai En, and they soon arrived at the central tower, and directly entered the headmaster’s office.

Right next to the vice headmaster’s table sat two elders. One of

them was a relieved headmaster while the other elder was wearing a cyan colored Pao and had long black hair that was tied back. From behind the desk, the old man looked quite ordinary just like any other old man.

“Headmaster, Changyang Xiang Tian has been brought!” Vice headmaster greeted politely.

Hearing this, the headmaster’s gaze immediately settled onto Jian Chen, and he said in a calm voice, “Bai En, you may leave!”

“Yes sir!” Bai En quickly left. At that moment, the only people left inside the office were Jian Chen and Kargath Academy’s headmaster, as well as an elder in a blue/green robe.

Ever since Jian Chen first entered, his line of vision had been fixed on the blue/green clad elder. This elder wasn’t any stranger to Jian Chen; it was Changyang clan’s butler —— Chang Bai.

“Chang Bai, why have you come?” Jian Chen said while looking at the elder.

Chang Bai gave a complicated look at Jian Chen before sighing, “Fourth master, from all of your days at Kargath Academy, we have been watching you and your achievements. Whether it be your mother or father, they both feel extremely proud, but this act of yours today was too impulsive.”

Jian Chen naturally understood what Chang Bai was saying, and

said firmly, “Chang Bai, I don’t regret anything. They brought this onto themselves. My older brother hadn’t offended them in any way, but they still heavily injured him. Even if I relived this experience, I would still do the same thing.”

Chang Bai sighed, “Fourth master, I don’t disagree with your methods, after all, in the Tian Yuan continent, it is strength that rules over others. Although their strength was weaker than yours, you did not think about the powers they had backing them up. If it was just the Ka Di clan or Luo Clan, then our Changyang Clan would not have much trouble with dealing with them, but Cheng Mingxiang is the treasured son of the Hua Yun Sect’s leader. The Hua Yun Sect holds the biggest amount of power in the Gesun Kingdom after the royal family, so this is a power the Changyang Clan cannot afford to provoke.”

“Changyang Xiang Tian, the Hua Yun Sect’s strength is quite formidable. Although they aren’t as powerful as the royal family, even the royal family is afraid of any consequences from meddling with them. Currently, among the top six experts in Gesun Kingdom, the Hua Yun Sect alone takes up two of those spots.” The headmaster said with a serious expression.

Jian Chen’s expression also gradually grew more serious at these words.

At that moment, a light knock came from outside the door. A respectful voice rang out from outside, “Respected headmaster, Changyang Hu has been brought!”

“Enter!” The headmaster said.

The door opened, and a teacher walked in leading Changyang Hu. Changyang Hu was currently wearing a new academy uniform, but scars still clearly covered his face.

“Chang Bai!” Changyang Hu yelled the moment he walked in, he was unable to contain his emotions as he spoke with astonishment.

The teacher didn’t enter the headmaster’s office. After sending Changyang Hu in, and sending the headmaster his respects, he lightly closed the door and left.

Chang Bai’s eyes lingered onto the scar on Changyang Hu’s face, his pair of ordinary looking eyes finally revealed some fury in them. Without any other external movements, he spoke, “Eldest Master, you’ve suffered greatly.”

Changyang Hu shook his head without any mind, and said, “It’s just a bit of injury, nothing major. However, Chang Bai, why did you come to the academy?” Changyang Hu asked in confusion.

Chang Bai’s face didn’t react in the slightest, and instead said gently, ‘Eldest Master, Fourth Master, you should go pick up the rest of your things.’

Jian Chen quietly nodded without saying a word.

“I’ve already packed everything, Chang Bai, did you come to take me away?” Changyang Hu asked in a reluctant tone.

Chang Bai nodded, “Correct, I’ve come today to pick you two up and depart from the academy. It would be unwise for you two to continue living at Kargath Academy.”

Hearing this, Changyang Hu’s expression became dark. He had spent quite a long time at Kargath Academy, and had already developed special feelings of attachment towards it.

“Changyang Hu, Changyang Xiang Tian, you two should first head out, I still have a few things I want to discuss with Chang Bai.” The headmaster said.

Jian Chen and Changyang Hu didn’t have any objections, and they immediately turned around to walk out of the headmaster’s office.

Jian Chen and Changyang Hu weren’t kept waiting for long; Chang Bai came out from the headmaster’s office soon after. However, when he looked at the two, his face changed to one of happiness.

Jian Chen and Changyang Hu followed Chang Bai down the tower, and got onto the flying-type magical beast to leave Kargath Academy. It directly flew up into the air, and began heading towards Lore City.

Jian Chen and Changyang Hu didn’t speak on the magical beast’s back. While the two were being rushed home, the both of them seemed to be extremely heavy-hearted.

Within Jian Chen's head, he couldn't help but to think about the motherly affections he had received. Although Jian Chen wasn't a kid in his mind, he had never dealt with such an experience before and so this motherly affection was a new thing; so Jian Chen had a very low resistance towards this.

In Jian Chen's mind, he could not help but recall his previous life in the Changyang household. His mother had been wholeheartedly caring towards him, and had loved him dearly every step of his life. This made Jian Chen's frozen heart, which had never experienced a mother's love before, become a sea of warmth, and he enjoyed and treasured this feeling.

Time quietly passed as the Class 4 Magical Beast soared through the air at high speeds and caused the wind to constantly whistle in Jian Chen's ear. Jian Chen's black, waist-length hair was blown messily in the air as it danced in the wind. Especially now that he had a handsome and dashing appearance, he looked as confident as ever as he rode on top of the flying magical beast with ease.

The flying magical beast crossed over many different villages and cities under the guise of the pitch dark skies. After a few hours of flying a thousand kilometers above the ground, they finally arrived at Lore City.

Under the control of Chang Bai, the Eagle Beast descended onto the grounds of the Changyang Mansion. The servants who managed the rear courts had long since left the area, leaving behind only the most loyal of guardsmen.

A large gust of wind descended upon the courtyards as the Eagle Beast came down from the skies and landed onto the ground as the three males climbed down from it.

A group of people had already gathered around the Eagle Beast with a middle aged man wearing a black and white Pao leading the group. This was the master of Changyang Mansion and the father of Jian Chen—Changyang Ba. By his side were four very beautiful women— Jian Chen’s mother Bi Yuntian and his three aunts. Standing by his fourth aunt’s side was a girl who looked to be around 18 years old. This was his 2nd sister he hadn’t seen in a few months—Changyang Mingyue. Standing right next to her was another person who looked to be around Jian Chen’s age; it was Changyang Ke, his third brother. However, in Changyang Ke’s eyes was a look of mirth as if he was happy to see Jian Chen in such misery after leaving Kargath Academy.

Standing behind the family were a few middle aged men and elders, they were high ranking members of the clan, but each one of them had a grave expression on their faces as they looked at Jian Chen with a complicated stare. Some looked at him with happiness, others with an expectant expression, and some who just sighed.

Chang Bai walked towards Changyang Ba and gave a small smile, “Clan leader, I have not failed you. I have brought the eldest master and fourth master back home safely.” He stated.

Changyang Ba looked at Chang Bai and clasped his hands together, “Chang Bai, thank you very much for your trouble.”

“Clan leader is being too courteous, this is just part of my duty.” Chang Bai said.

Changyang Ba swept his gaze across Jian Chen and Changyang Hu. His eyes held both expressions of gratification and admiration as he looked at Jian Chen, and his expression had also become excited, although it was still nevertheless worried. Finally, he let out a long sigh and said, “Xiang’er, Ah Hu, both of you come with me to the main hall.” Changyang Ba turned around and began to walk out.

Chapter 65: The People From The Imperial Palace (one)

Jian Chen and Changyang Hu returned to their respective mothers' side and walked with the others towards the main hall of the Changyang Mansion.

“Ah Hu, you've suffered greatly at the academy, just look at your scars...”

On the way, Jian Chen's eldest aunt, Ling Long, looked at the scars on Changyang Hu's face with eyes wet with tears that never seemed to cease.

Changyang Hu could only laugh as he replied, “Mother, these are only small injuries, nothing to worry about. It was a good thing fourth brother found me, otherwise, your child would have been left unable to even move from bed.”

Hearing this, Ling Long turned her head to look at Jian Chen with a gentle smile on her face, “Xiangtian, I really must thank you for helping Ah Hu.”

Jian Chen smiled back, “Eldest aunt, what are you saying? If my big brother has a problem, of course I'd help. Besides, this happened because of me and big brother was caught up into it. As long as eldest aunt doesn't blame me, then I'd be more than happy.”

Ling Long still had a smile on her face, “Xiangtian, you’re becoming more and more intelligent. You’re almost becoming just like Ah Hu now.”

“Praise from eldest aunt!” Jian Chen laughed, he could clearly tell that eldest aunt Ling Long’s attitude towards him had improved. She was no longer so solemn and unmoving towards him. No longer was she like before, always wearing a neutral face.

“Mother, you should say it right: fourth brother’s strength is really amazing! Before he was even a Saint, he could easily hunt and kill Class 2 Magical Beasts. And after he did become one, even the combined powers of the geniuses of cultivation of Kargath Academy –despite having the genius Upper Saint Cheng Mingxiang among their ranks– were beaten in under three minutes. The ten other who followed them were also easily beaten up by fourth brother as well.” Changyang Hu was clearly excited, his voice was rising in volume as he spoke. “Mother, you didn’t see the fight, but I did. Although fourth brother was by himself, he had beaten a dozen people until they were covered with bruises in the blink of an eye. These dozen people were all at the rank of a Saint at the very least, but against fourth brother, they were no match at all.”

Hearing this, Jian Chen’s mother Bi Yuntian beamed with happiness as she looked at her son with loving affection.

“Hmph!”

A cold sneer came from the side. It was from Jian Chen’s third aunt–Bai Yushuang who continued to say, “Amazing is amazing, but it was this amazingness that provoked the Hua Yun Sect.

Changyang Xiangtian's amazingness is practically inviting danger to our Changyang Mansion."

Jian Chen's eyebrows furrowed together. His third aunt Bai Yushuang had always treated him with prejudice since he was young. Jian Chen's mother, Bi Yuntian was extremely discontent. However, the one that had caused trouble was her own son, and even she slightly felt that he was in the wrong. In addition, his relationship with Bai Yushuang was never good. Thus, she couldn't claim he wasn't guilty either, otherwise the little feud between the two would only grow.

"Forget it, third sister. What's happened has already happened. Discussing it now isn't of any use. What we should do now is to properly consider how we should deal with it." Jian Chen's second aunt Yu Feng Yan explained.

"Forget it, third sister. After all, Xiangtian stirred up this trouble for the sake of saving Ah Hu. You can't blame everything on Xiangtian." Ling Long sided with Jian Chen.

Seeing that there were actually two people supporting Jian Chen, Bai Yushuang could only snort, and stay silent.

Bi Yuntian sighed, her gaze held both love and worry as she looked at Jian Chen and said, "Xiang'er, we know of all of your achievements at Kargath Academy. You are my pride and glory, but I also think that your actions this time were too brash. To think that you even cut off the Hu Yun Sect Leader's son's arm. Do you know that with this, you've not only caused major trouble for yourself, but you've also dragged the entire Changyang clan in

with you as well?”

A trace of guilt was shown on Jian Chen’s face as he said, “Sorry mother, I have brought a great trouble to our clan.”

“Xiangtian, what happened has already happened. You should stop blaming yourself. Right now we need to go the main hall quickly to discuss how to settle this conflict.” Second aunt then closed her mouth.

After that, the group started to pick up their pace as they headed towards the main hall.

At this moment within a splendid palace, the emperor of Gesun Kingdom held a letter in the middle of his hands. Creasing together his eyebrows, he let out a long sigh before saying, “This Changyang Xiangtian is truly too impulsive, he has made a great mistake by cutting off the right arm of the Hua Yun Sect’s Cheng Mingxiang. This type of situation is something the Changyang Clan cannot stand up against.”

The emperor released the letter and watched it drop to the table, “Servant, call the Armored Forces commander Bi Dao to come quickly.”

“Yes, your majesty!”

As the emperor gave out his command, the court eunuch hurried out to obey his orders.

Soon enough, a black armored middle aged man came walking into the room. This man's appearance was rather ordinary looking but he had a resolute expression on his face. His eyes shined brightly below his scarred face. The scars ran across his entire forehead, causing people to jump at his terrifying appearance.

The man walked towards the emperor before stopping 10 meters away from him. "Your Majesty, this servant knows not why he has been called here."

The emperor slowly stood up as he grabbed the letter in his hand and handed it to the man. "Take a look!"

Hearing this, the middle-aged male wearing black armor received the letter from the emperor and opened it to begin reading. After he finished, his expression had become extremely heavy.

"Ai, I hadn't imagined that he would actually stir up so much trouble." The black-armored man let out a long sigh as his expression became anxious.

"The younger generations always seem to be so arrogant and impulsive." The emperor sighed, "Bi Dao, ever since you joined the Armored Forces twenty years ago, you've never returned back to your homeland. Take this opportunity today and visit."

"Yes, Your Majesty!" A complex look flashed in the armored youth's eyes.

The emperor's expression suddenly turned serious as he said, "Bi Dao, when you return this time, you must persuade Changyang clan's people to send Changyang Xiangtian over here as quickly as possible. Otherwise, once the Hua Yun Sect goes looking for them, the conflict will grow even more. Only by sending Changyang Xiangtian away, in addition to us mediating between them, will the conflict between the Changyang clan and the Hua Yun Sect be temporarily stabilized. Right now, all of the neighboring nations are already beginning to stir. It seems that they've never let go of the idea of attacking my Gesun Kingdom's territory. At a moment as critical as this, nothing can be allowed to occur within the Kingdom. Otherwise, the end result will be too horrible to even think about."

"Changyang Xiangtian is a genius from the heavens with unlimited potential. His future prospects truly cannot be measured, may be the only source of hope that Gesun Kingdom has ever had in the last few hundred years. For this reason, Changyang Xiangtian must be protected at all costs. Although we cannot guarantee his future achievements will go smoothly, we cannot allow him to get involved in an accident within our Gesun Kingdom." The emperor spoke with a hard face.

Hearing this, the armored youth showed a proud and joyous expression. He suppressed the rising emotions within his heart and said, "Young Majesty, Bi Dao understands what he should do now."

The emperor nodded his head and said, "Bi Dao, there's no time to lose. You must head out to Changyang Mansion immediately. With your strength, you should be able to arrive there before

sunrise.”

“Yes, Your Majesty.”

.....

Within the great halls of the Changyang Mansion, Changyang Ba sat down onto his throne, with Jian Chen on one side and his fellow wives on the other side. Sitting a few steps below was the relieved housekeeper Chang Bai.

Changyang Ba had a look of worry on his face as he looked at his son Jian Chen. “Xiang’er’s situation at Kargath Academy should be known to everyone here already; The Hua Yun Sect leader’s son had his right arm cut off, so the Hua Yun Sect will definitely not let this matter go. Please offer up what solutions you may have.”

Hearing this, everyone in the hall went silent. The Hua Yun Sect was the biggest force of power aside from the royal family in the Gesun Kingdom and didn’t fear the emperor’s power at all. The Changyang Clan wouldn’t be able to resist their sect since Cheng Mingxiang was like a treasured son of the sect leader. Since he was a genius that far exceeded the others, to have his arm chopped off by Jian Chen would definitely influence his future road of achievements. It could be said with no exaggeration that Jian Chen had completely destroyed Cheng Mingxiang. So for that reason everyone knew within their hearts that there would be no way for the Hua Yun Sect to forgive this matter.

Everyone was still silent before finally a 60 year old elder said, “The best way to solve this problem is to find and invite a Radiant Saint Master to help repair Cheng Mingxiang’s arm. However, only

a Rank 7 Radiant Saint Master would have the power to do something on this level, our Changyang Clan would not be able to easily call on such a person. Not only that, but Rank 7 Radiant Saint Masters are extremely rare within the Tian Yuan continent and many of them are wanderers. It would be easier to climb to the heavens than to find one, so the possibility of healing Cheng Mingxiang's arm is practically zero.”

“Ai, what you're saying is correct. In my opinion, our only chance of appeasing the anger of the Hua Yun Sect aside from finding a Radiant Saint Master is to have the Emperor and the royal family back us up. However, the Hua Yun Sect would definitely not give up their chances. What is guaranteed is that the fourth master will not be easy to protect.” A middle aged person said.

Standing by the middle aged man were a few other elders who had high amounts of influence within the clan. They have long since heard about Jian Chen's achievements within the academy, and in their hearts, they had already started to place their hopes for the clan's survivals onto Jian Chen. So even though the clan was being troubled by a big problem, no one had blamed him for it and instead tried their best to find ways to protect him. Not only that but with the arranged marriage between him and Princess Ge Lan, then after the marriage, the Changyang Clan would be able to rise higher in power.

“If only the Ancestor was still here.” An elder sighed helplessly.

Hearing this, Chang Bai's eyes lit up. “That's right, if the master was here, then our clan wouldn't need to assemble here today to

figure out a solution. It's a shame, the master has already been gone for dozens of years without any notice. We don't even know if he is alive or not."

The crowd went silent after hearing that.

Jian Chen's heart pulsed after hearing Chang Bai talk. From his few years at the Changyang Mansion, he had never once heard about this Ancestor or Chang Bai's master come up as a topic before. Although he had only just heard about the two, he was sure in his heart that these two people were actually very strong and had power incomparable to anyone else. Most likely the two were not afraid of the Hua Yun Sect and were former elders of the clan.

Jian Chen didn't bother to think about his question long, and immediately dismissed it from his mind. Seeing how the hall was still silent, Jian Chen hesitated slightly before saying, "Father, it would be better for Chang Bai's Eagle Beast to send me out. As long as I do not remain within Changyang Mansion, I am sure the Hua Yun Sect will not act upon the clan if they truly do come."

"No!"

"Absolutely not!!"

The moment Jian Chen spoke, Bi Yuntian and Changyang Ba's voices both simultaneously rose up in objection.

Both of Bi Yuntian's hands tightly grasped onto Jian Chen's own

hands as her eyes gradually became misty before tears started to stream down her face. She cried, “Xiang’er, don’t say such foolish things! The Tian Yuan continent is very dangerous, and it’s not as easygoing as you think it is. You have not yet explored the world, so you don’t know what rules must be followed in order to survive. Your strength is still too low, Mother will definitely not let you go on such a foolish endeavor!”

Chapter 66: The People From The Imperial Palace (Two)

“That’s right, Xiang’er, what your mother said is correct. The world isn’t as peaceful as the academy is; it’s filled with slaughter. And with your current strength, being able to survive won’t be that easy. Forget about this idea, I absolutely won’t agree to it.” Changyang Ba said seriously. Although he spoke in an ordinary tone, he had been firm in rejecting Jian Chen’s idea.

Jian Chen already knew that it would be hard to get his family to agree to this plan, but he continued to speak, “Father, mother, please don’t worry about me. Your son may not be strong, but I am still able to protect myself. I’ve read many books from the academy library, and so I have some familiarity on how to survive within the Tian Yuan continent. Once your child leaves Changyang Mansion, then that’ll be one less problem for the clan.”

“Fourth master, the situation isn’t as simple as you think. If the Hua Yun Sect were to find out that you are no longer within the Changyang Mansion, then I’m afraid that they would send out many of their numbers to pursue you. And with the Hua Yun Sect’s power, you won’t be hard to locate.” A white haired elder spoke, in his heart, he had placed Jian Chen as the hope for the clan’s future, and definitely did not want to see him die prematurely.

He was a 15 year old Saint who was stronger than an Upper level Saint, and bordered along the powers of a Great Saint. This meant that he was a genius from the heavens that would shake the entire Tian Yuan continent. To some of the men here, Jian Chen was no longer just a regular person, but a glowing human treasure that

could give them boundless wealth.

For that reason within the hearts of the high ranked elders, they all just wanted to protect Jian Chen so he wouldn't suffer a blow to his future potential.

Jian Chen let loose a big smile, "Everyone doesn't need to worry, I've read up about a lot about the continent, so I'm sure that I can keep away from the Hua Yun Sect's grasp."

"Definitely not, Xiang'er. This is still too risky, it's not worth the trouble." Changyang Ba immediately shot down the proposal. "Xiang'er, don't worry about a thing. While the Hua Yun Sect may be very strong, our Changyang Clan won't be such an easy pushover, and although our Ancestor has been gone for some years, his reputation is still widely known. The Hua Yun Sect wouldn't dare to be so forward with our clan. So just stay within the mansion, I will do my best to protect you."

Jian Chen inwardly sighed to himself. With such a resolute objection, there would be no way for him to convince his father otherwise.

"That's right, Xiang'er, this idea of yours is far too risky. Even if you could escape from the Hua Yun Sect, the life of the Tian Yuan continent is not as straightforward and simple as the books say. Please just obediently stay at Changyang Mansion; your father and your uncles will do their best to protect you." Bi Yuntian gently pleaded with Jian Chen.

“Ke!” Changyang Ba cleared his voice, “That’s enough, let’s first talk about how we’ll deal with the Hua Yun Sect. I’m sure they have already heard about this situation and will arrive at Lore City soon, so we are pressed for time.” Changyang Ba stated once more.

The entire crowd within the main hall went silent as they all started to think about the situation.

“If His Majesty helps us, then that means the arranged wedding between the fourth master and Princess Ge Lan is still on. So in the end, the fourth master will still be the son-in-law to the emperor, so I’m sure His Majesty won’t sit around and do nothing.” Someone said.

Chang Bai nodded his head in contemplation and said, “If His Majesty wants to support us, then he could temporarily suppress this situation, but this will no doubt bring His Majesty quite a headache. It is unfortunate timing right now as well; the neighboring countries have been inconspicuously sending soldiers to the borders. Most likely, they want to invade the richly fertile lands of the Gesun Kingdom. So right now, His Majesty definitely would not want to get onto the bad side of the Hua Yun Sect; after all, this is a matter of life or death for the kingdom. Without the two Heaven Saint Master’s from the Hua Yun Sect, even the strongest fighters would be hard pressed to fight against the other kingdom soldiers.”

“Although the fourth master has a very strong potential, and also has high expectations from His Majesty, the fourth master’s future achievements currently cannot be confirmed. Not only that, but the fourth master is still young, so there is still a long time before

he can fully mature. With the kingdom on the verge of a war, there is simply not enough time for them to wait around for the fourth master, since we're not sure how long it'll be before the kingdom either wins or loses. The kingdom will need as many strong Saints as possible in order to help win the war, so it's not clear if His Majesty will help us or not."

The people in the main hall continued to attempt to come up with other ways. However, despite having contemplated for an entire evening, they were still unable to come up with any workable method.

The night flew by quickly under the strained atmosphere the dozen people were in. The sky had already begun to brighten; it was already close to dawn. After an entire night of discussion, everyone's expressions looked exhausted.

At this moment, a Changyang Clan patrolman came running in, "Reporting to the clan leader, there is a person named Bi Dao waiting outside the mansion who wishes to see you."

"Bi Dao!" Changyang Ba exclaimed under his breath with a contemplative look. His eyes shined brightly as he stood up from his throne, "Quickly invite him in!"

"Yessir!" The guard responded, and quickly left.

Hearing the name of Bi Dao, Bi Yuntian started to tremble from where she was standing with a look of happiness. But soon that look changed into one of puzzlement.

Jian Chen became confused as he noticed the change in his mother's expression. He had never heard of Bi Dao before, however, judging from his mother's reaction, this Bi Dao most likely had some type of relationship with his mother.

Jian Chen slowly approached his mother before asking, "Mother, who is this Bi Dao person?"

Bi Yuntian slowly turned around, her eyes looking at her adored son, "Xiang'er, mother will tell you about this in a bit."

"Ok!" Jian Chen nodded and did not inquire any further.

Not too long after, a black robed male came in with long strides. The man had a determined look on his face and his eyes refused to stop shining with energy. Looking at the man's forehead, many different scars could be seen.

Changyang Ba stopped his actions and walked up to the center of the discussion hall. He greeted and smiled, "Brother Bi Dao, I can't believe it's been 20 years since we last met. How have you been?"

The middle-aged man named Bi Dao greeted back and said, "I've been okay." He paused for a moment, his gaze stopping on Jian Chen and his mother, before continuing, "It's probably better if I just get straight to the point. I've come this time under the emperor's orders. At the same time, I've come to transmit his orders!"

Hearing this, Changyan Ba's face became solemn as he asked, "Brother Bi Dao, could this concern Xiang'er as well?"

Bi Dao nodded his head, "That's right, His Majesty has allowed your Changyang Xiang Tian to be escorted far away from Lore City. Only by doing this will the conflict between Changyang Mansion and the Hua Yun Sect be temporarily abated."

Changyang Ba furrowed his eyebrows together. In his heart, he did not want to follow along with this solution.

Bi Dao continued, "The trouble this time really is a bit too great. Cheng Mingxiang is Hua Yun Sect's only son, and he's a talented person that will eventually become Hua Yun Sect's next leader. For Changyang Xiang Tian to have cut off Cheng Mingxiang's right arm destroyed him without question. Thus, the Hua Yun Sect will definitely not let this matter drop lightly."

"The Hua Yun Sect has two Heaven Saint Masters; people that the Changyang Clan cannot afford to fight with. Although His Majesty also has two other Heaven Saint Masters by his side, but with trouble brewing at the borders of the country, then the Gesun Kingdom will be involved in a war soon enough. By that point, His Majesty cannot afford to get on the bad side of the Hua Yun Sect. It is only with Changyang Xiang Tian being escorted out of Lore City and under the control of His Majesty that this situation can be solved temporarily, and fix the issues within the Gesun Kingdom."

"Could it be that there's really no other way?" Jian Chen's

second aunt, Yu Feng Yan asked.

“None!” Bi Dao shook his head, his tone filled with complete certainty.

Bi Yuntian’s expression turned ashen, and she said in a trembling voice, “However, the people outside are dangerous. Xiang’er’s strength is still weak; he’ll definitely suffer through a lot of hardships.”

Bi Dao gave a profound look at the Jian Chen sitting next to Bi Yuntian and said, “One must suffer hardships in their life while upholding their dignity as a person. It is only after they suffer through thick and thin that they can mature into an independent person.. You both pamper him too much; this won’t do him any favors, it’s actually harming him.”

Hearing Bi Dao, a few of the gathered people nodded their heads in agreement. There was a great deal of logic within his words.

Changyang Ba still looked hesitant at this idea.

Jian Chen swept his gaze over his surroundings. He knew that this was his chance to strike out for an advantage and said, “Father, just let me leave. I am confident that I can cope with anything that I’ll encounter in the future. Moreover, I really want to go outside to travel the world.”

“Clan leader, since the fourth master had originally planned to

leave the mansion, what Bi Dao said is correct. This may be the only way to solve the conflict between the two groups. With this method, the fourth master will definitely learn a lot. Even if the fourth master is a genius that surpasses others, his experience is still what matters most.” Chang Bai said.

Changyang Ba helplessly sighed and said, “Fine. Since Chang Bai also agrees to this suggestion, then Xiang’er will leave Lore City and experience the outside world for a while. I’ll let a few devoted guards leave with Xiang’er to keep him safe outside.”

Once he heard that guards would be dispatched to protect him, Jian Chen’s brows couldn’t help but knit together as he said, “Father, there’s no need to dispatch guards. I want to go adventure outside alone.”

“Xiang’er, going out by yourself is still far too dangerous. At the very least, please take some guards to go with you in case you come across any trouble.” Bi Yuntian held onto Jian Chen’s hands in concern. With the current matters, she was powerless to change the decision and so she could only try to accept this decision calmly.

“No need, mother. I don’t want to bring guards out; if that happens, I’ll be too easy to target. I think that going out alone is easier.” Jian Chen’s attitude was extremely firm. In reality, in his opinion, having a few guards by his side was a type of burden. In addition, once outside, he couldn’t always be as cautious with conserving his strength as he was at home. He still had many secrets that he couldn’t let anyone in his family know of.

Chapter 67: Bi Clan

Changyang Ba wanted to reject Jian Chen's proposal of going alone, but Jian Chen had been adamant in his decision. So in the end, Changyang Ba had no choice but to agree.

After the discussions were over, Bi Dao said, "From what I heard in the royal palace, the Hua Yun Sect has already received the news and is moving towards Lore City at top speed. They'll be at Lore City by late afternoon at the very latest, so it would be best if you send Changyang Xiang Tian away from Lore City as soon as possible. Otherwise, it'll be too late by nighttime."

Everyone's faces became solemn once more. Then, Chang Bai stood up and said, "Then let's have the fourth master gather his things before I take him away on the Eagle Beast."

Soon after that, everyone started to leave the main hall.

"Xiang'er, please go to mother's room; there are matters we must discuss." Bi Yuntian said as she walked towards her room.

After entering her room, Bi Yuntian pulled Jian Chen with her to sit with him. By this point, Bi Yuntian's cheeks had tears streaming down her face. She knew in her heart that after Jian Chen left Changyang Mansion, it would be a very long time before the mother and son would be able to meet again. Life in the Tian Yuan Continent was complex, and Jian Chen didn't know what hardships he would go through or what unfortunate events would happen to him, so this was possibly the last time the mother and

son would ever see each other again.

“Xiang’er, you are no longer young in age and you’ll soon be leaving this place. So there are things that mother should tell you first.” Bi Yuntian’s tears shone like sparkling crystals as they dripped from her face, “Xiang’er, didn’t you ever think why it was strange that you didn’t have a grandfather or grandmother?”

Jian Chen nodded his head without making a sound.

Bi Yuntian continued to say, “Xiang’er, your mother is actually not from the Gesun Kingdom. My homelands originate from one of three biggest empires: the Karl Empire. Not only that, but my Bi Clan has been a powerful family that goes back for over a thousand years. It had a powerful influence stronger than that of the Hua Yun Sect and resided in the King City Ming Huo City. Your grandfather was a powerful Saint Ruler, while you have four other great elders who have reached the Heaven Saint Master level and hold high positions in our Bi Clan.”

Bi Yuntian sighed, “It’s a shame good things don’t last forever. While your mother was still young, your grandfather received a letter and never returned, leaving behind no information at all. 20 years after the disappearance of your grandfather, the four elders of the clan sent two people to look for him. Two days after their search began however, an astonishing piece of information was reported; the two that were sent out had been killed in the countryside!” Bi Yuntian’s face was full of sorrow after saying that.

“This piece of information was like a bolt of lightning coming from a clear sky. While the two elders were only at the Heaven

Saint Master level, they were still considered as some of the strongest in the Tian Yuan Continent, so it was inconceivable to think that they could be killed. The elders didn't even have time to run, and so to this day, the Bi Clan are still clueless on what enemy could be strong enough to have such a grudge towards our Bi Clan; your grandfather may have encountered something similar as well."

"Unfortunately, our mysterious enemies didn't even give us time to catch our breath. On the very same night of the murders, a huge group of mysterious men invaded our Bi Clan. They were all very strong, and the remaining two elders were unable to repel them; ultimately, they got killed. Without the powerful elders, there were no longer any strong people left to protect us. At that moment, some loyal members of the clan tried to help a group of us escape the massacre, but in the end, only your mother and uncle were left. It was only after your uncle and I hid in a family home that we were able to escape from Ming Huo City with our lives."

"After hiding for a few hours, we turned our heads and immediately left via a mercenary caravan heading towards the Gesun Kingdom."

The tears were still flowing from Bi Yuntian's face as she cried in deep sorrow, "Xiang'er, at that moment of greatness, we had over a thousand members to our name. But to this day, all that remains is your uncle and the two of us. You must remember that you not only have the blood of the Changyang clan in you, but the blood of the Bi Clan as well. You must carry on the Bi Clan's name, so please remember to protect yourself. Do you understand?"

Jian Chen nodded his head in silence as his heart churned with emotions. For a very long time he couldn't calm himself, since the news his mother had told him had struck the very core of his emotions.

After some time, Jian Chen finally calmed himself down and said, "Mother, could it be that we still haven't figured out our mysterious enemy's identity or how strong they are?"

Bi Yuntian shook her head, "I have no idea. Your mother and uncle were still young at the time and so we didn't understand much. So we had no idea who they were. If anyone knew, it would be the elders, but they're dead now."

Afterwards, Bi Yuntian fished out a red embroidered pouch and looked at it as if it was bringing back old memories. "Xiang'er, before your grandfather disappeared, he gave me this red pouch and said it was a family heirloom passed down from generation to generation. By this point, it's well over a thousand years old so please take care of it. Those mysterious men had most likely exterminated our Bi Clan for treasures like this."

Jian Chen's eyes looked at the embroidered red pouch and said, "Mother, what exactly is in this then?"

"There's only a small piece of fur that's smaller than the size of one's palms inside. Your mother has no idea what it's used for." Bi Yuntian placed the red pouch onto Jian Chen's hands and said, "Xiang'er, even if this pouch only has fur in it, it's still a family heirloom, so there's no way this piece of fur is not simple at all. Right now you are the Bi Clan's only hope, so passing down the

family heirloom should be a given. I hope you protect yourself well, but it's best if you keep this pouch hidden at all costs. Although it'll be unlikely to come across a person that recognizes it, it's better to be safe than sorry."

Jian Chen silently nodded as he took the red pouch.

"Dong dong dong!"

At that moment, a knock was heard on the door as a voice called out from the other side. Quickly wiping away her tears, Bi Yuntian called out, "Who is it?"

There was no sound outside the door for some time. Eventually, a voice said, "Sister, it's me."

Hearing that familiar voice, one that he had not too long ago heard, Jian Chen stared blankly at the door. It was the man from the palace: Bi Dao.

Hearing the voice, Bi Yuntian looked puzzled before saying, "Come in."

The doors opened as a black robed man slowly walked in; it was precisely Bi Dao.

Bi Yuntian slowly stood up from her chair as she looked at him with a pained expression. "Brother, it has been 20 years since you last saw me. I had thought that you had already forgotten about

me.”

Jian Chen’s stare hardened. From the fact that his mother called him her brother, he could already tell that the middle-aged man in front of him was his uncle.

“Ai...” Bi Dao sighed. “Sister, I’m sorry, your older brother was wrong to not visit you during the last 20 years. In truth, your brother never forgot about you, it was just that the burdens your brother was carrying were too heavy to bear. Vengeance for our Bi Clan will definitely be carried out by me. Sister! Your brother will live out the rest of his life for the sole purpose of revenge..”

Bi Yuntian sighed as well, before turning her head to look at Jian Chen, “Xiang’er, this is your uncle——Bi Dao.”

“Uncle!” Jian Chen spoke. This was the first time he had uttered the word, as well as the first time he had seen him up close.

Bi Dao sized up Jian Chen before offering a smile, “Xiang Tian, I have heard about you; word of your accomplishments has resounded through the capital, and have even been whispered of inside the royal palace. You are truly worthy of being a descendant of our Bi Clan. I eagerly anticipate the day when you have grown strong and honorable. Do not disappoint me.

After talking, Bi Dao immediately grew solemn once more as he faced Bi Yuntian, “Sister, I know you hate to see Xiang Tian leave, but there is no other way. As it stands now, the Changyang Clan cannot oppose the Hua Yun Sect, but if Xiang Tian leaves, the

situation will improve dramatically for both the Clan and Xiang Tian. Letting Xiang Tian stay in the Mansion will bring no good benefits. It may even cause the Changyang Clan to end up like our Bi Clan. Right now we just need to smuggle Xiang Tian away before nightfall. Otherwise, he won't be able to leave, even if you agreed to let him go."

Bi Yuntian nodded her head slowly. Since the emperor wasn't willing to help them publically right now, how could she not understand this reasoning?

Afterwards, the tear-streaked Bi Yuntian helped Jian Chen gather some clothes and items before escorting him out.

As the two of them arrived at the rear courtyard, they found Jian Chen's aunts, his father, and Chang Bai were there waiting for him. Right behind them stood a gigantic and majestic, Eagle Beast .

Changyang Hu grabbed Jian Chen's arm, his expression downtrodden as he spoke with concern, "Fourth brother, you'd better be careful in the outside world, understand?"

Jian Chen nodded before saying with a smile, "Don't worry big brother, I will definitely protect myself. But after I go, you'd better not goof off. You must continue practicing the battle techniques.."

Changyang Hu nodded his head fiercely and said, "I will, fourth brother. Your elder brother's lack of strength has burdened you. From now on, I will strive even harder to cultivate and grow stronger."

Jian Chen's second sister, Changyang Mingyue, walked up to him and gave him a spice bag, "Fourth brother, your second sister made you a safety charm and wishes you safe travels. You'd better wear it."

Right now, Changyang Mingyue was already 18. She had become a tall yet slender beautiful girl that was capable of causing an entire city to fight for her.

Jian Chen took the safety charm from her. Although he knew that the charm wouldn't provide any substantial amount of defense, it was still a gift from his sister that was filled with concern.

"Thank you, second sister. I will definitely take care of this charm." He said with a smile.

Changyang Ba walked forward with a ring and spoke, "Xiang'er, this is a Space Ring your father had long since prepared for you. This was meant to be your graduation present from Kargath Academy, but I don't believe you need to wait that long for it anymore. Your father will give you this Space Ring; there is already something I have prepared for you inside."

"Thank you, father!" With a grateful look, Jian Chen took the Space Ring.

"Xiang'er, the Space Ring is absolutely a precious item within the Tian Yuan Continent. In order to avoid unnecessary troubles,

don't reveal your Space Ring to anyone, even under the most dire circumstances." Changyang Ba said.

Jian Chen nodded, "Father, Xiang'er understands."

Chapter 68: White Cloud City

After everyone had finished talking, Jian Chen left with Chang Bai on the back of the Eagle Beast and immediately departed from Lore City.

Sitting on top of the Eagle Beast, Jian Chen stared at the receding city walls with a complicated look on his face. It's been over 15 years since he came into this world, and he has only left the confines of the Mansion and Lore City twice.

The first time he had left Lore City was to go to Kargath Academy, but this time, the reason was no longer the same. Jian Chen understood that after leaving, he wouldn't see his family again for a very long time, and would have to fend for himself. In this dangerous environment known as the Tian Yuan continent, Jian Chen could only rely on himself. Jian Chen personally didn't think he would be able to see his family again, but he had read from the books that this world was dominated by the strong. The Tian Yuan continent was a lot more dangerous than his previous world, and while he had decent strength for his age, there was no guarantee for what may happen.

Chang Bai sat on the neck of the Eagle Beast and stared at Jian Chen, "Fourth master, starting from today you'll be on your own.. Please be careful as you travel through the Tian Yuan continent."

"I know what must be done, Chang Bai." Jian Chen said without turning his head.

Chang Bai paused to look at Jian Chen with a curious look before sighing as he had no more to say.

The Eagle Beast flew high in the sky, thousands of meters above the ground, streaking across the sky like a ray of light . With the whistle of the wind blowing loudly, both Chang Bai and Jian Chen had their hair and clothes flapping rapidly in the wind.

The Eagle Beast soared over the walls of countless tiny villages before finally the Eagle Beast slowly came to a stop, in midair in front of the walls of a great city.

Looking down to see the city, Jian Chen asked, “Chang Bai, you should just drop me off here.”

Hearing this, Chang Bai looked down to see the tiny city before nodding his head, “If you say so!” Immediately, the Eagle Beast flew down towards the ground under his control.

Jian Chen hopped off of the magical beast before saying to Chang Bai, “Chang Bai, you should hurry on home, I’m sure the Hua Yun Sect has already arrived at the Changyang Mansion.”

Chang Bai started to ascend with his Eagle Beast, “Fourth master, please take care.”

Jian Chen waved goodbye to Chang Bai and turned around to walk towards the city in front of him.

Chang Bai hesitated as he sat on the Eagle Beast and watched Jian Chen's back go further and further away. It was only after he had disappeared when Chang Bai said, "Fourth master, I hope we see each other soon, you've always surprised me after all." The Eagle Beast started to flap its wings and flew into the sky, blowing dust everywhere. Soon, Chang Bai flew off into the air towards the direction of the Changyang Mansion.

The sun has already long since set into the horizon. With the colors of nightfall rapidly approaching, Jian Chen walked towards the small city with a group of people, however while he was walking on foot, many of them were traveling via carriages being pulled by magical beasts.

Jian Chen's appearance had naturally made the other travelers curious and made many other mercenaries become alert. But when they realized how young Jian Chen was, they immediately lost their alertness.

Jian Chen sized up the mercenaries riding on top of the magical beasts. Some of them ranged from 20 years old to 50 years old; some wore armor, some leather, and some just wore regular clothes. When Jian Chen walked closer to them however, he could smell the scent of blood. To the experienced Jian Chen, he knew that these mercenaries had been baptized with the blood of their enemies already.

10 miles wasn't that far for Jian Chen, and so after some time, he saw the 20 meter high city walls. Jian Chen didn't know how old the walls were, but the constant battle with time seemed to have left it's mark on them. Visible scars could be seen on the walls, but

near the gate written with bold calligraphy were the words–White Cloud City.

“Hey, halt. What is your purpose here?”

Barring Jian Chen’s path was a guard of the city.

Jian Chen gave a small smile and handed the guard a few Gold Coins and said, “Brother, I am merely a mercenary who came to White Cloud City for a mission.”

The guard took the gold coins discretely and smiled brightly at him, “Ah, so you have a mission, then I won’t take up your precious time, go on in.”

After entering the city, Jian Chen walked three kilometers down the road, and arrived at a very busy part of the city. Although it was sunset, the street was still bustling with people rushing around from store to store and engaged in every sort of business.

The streets were paved with rocks that seemed to shine brightly. With the road so evenly paved, even if a caravan ran full speed across it, the passengers wouldn’t feel the slightest jolt.

Hungry, Jian Chen rubbed his stomach gingerly as he walked towards the nearest restaurant. It had already been a full day since he had eaten, so his stomach had already started to protest.

“Welcome, guest!”

Under the enthusiastic welcome of a waiter, Jian Chen walked towards an empty table and sat down.

“Honored guest, are you here for a meal or to stay for the night?” The waiter was a young man in his 20s, and had a cordial smile on his face.

Jian Chen looked at the other rowdy mercenaries within the restaurant and said, “Even those who are staying for the night require a meal, what is there to eat here?”

The waiter smiled and introduced Jian Chen to a wide variety of dishes, however every single one of the dishes mentioned were all the most expensive dishes. The waiter had long since noticed Jian Chen was wearing quite luxurious clothes and thought him out to be the son of a wealthy clan.

But Jian Chen didn't care for the prices of the dishes and instead lazily chose one out to eat.

After eating his fill, Jian Chen paid for a medium sized room for the night and immediately entered his room to rest.

The restaurant was not a very high quality one, so the medium sized room was not too luxurious. Compared to the Changyang Mansion, the difference was like comparing the heavens to the earth. The room offered a hardwood bed with a single table and a few chairs, but apart from that, there was nothing more. On a side note, the room had been cleaned nicely.

Jian Chen had never been picky, and so this room had already satisfied him enough.

After closing his door, Jian Chen walked towards his bed and took out the Space Ring his father had given him before leaving and looked at the contents.

The Space Ring deserved to be called a high quality treasure as there were many objects within it. With an internal storage of up to a hundred cubic meters, there were a pile of items stacked in the middle of it. While the ring wasn't full, almost every inch of the floor had been covered by items.

Amongst a pile of items, there were a thousand Purple Coins that sparkled dazzlingly along with another few thousand Gold Coins stacked in another pile. There were even small piles of monster cores, around 40 of them were Class 2 Monster Cores, 10 of them were Class 3 Monster Cores, and only 1 of them was a Class 4 Monster Core.

Seeing how many items were stored inside the Space Ring, Jian Chen felt very warm inside. Although it wasn't by any means a large amount of items, they all served a practical use for Jian Chen's needs. With this much, it truly showed how much Changyang Ba cared for his son.

Stuffing the Space Ring back into his bosom, Jian Chen clearly remembered the words of his father. Until he was strong enough, he didn't dare to reveal his ring to anyone since it was such a

precious item on the Tian Yuan continent. Although there weren't a small amount of people who had a Space Ring, they were all strong members of influential and wealthy clans and could easily protect themselves from danger.

Climbing onto the bed, Jian Chen took a few monster cores from within the Space Ring and closed his eyes as he started to cultivate using the energy from within the monster cores.

As usual, Jian Chen started to absorb the energy within the monster core at a frightening rate. If anyone were to see him now, then they would see the monster core emit a weak amount of light as the energy within started to flow into him like a thick stream. To the naked eye, the energy was surrounding Jian Chen's body while the monster core was rapidly shrinking in Jian Chen's hands.

Ever since Jian Chen had broken through to become a Saint, there was an unfathomable mystery in his dantian in the form of an azure and violet glow. Because of that, his path of cultivation had become much more difficult than before, and although his absorption rate of the World Essence was several times faster than before, he could only absorb a pathetic 1% of it all, the rest of it was being taken by his dantian. So for now he would have to absorb the energy from the monster cores, but if he kept this up, he wouldn't be able to keep up with the consumption rate.

After 2 hours, Jian Chen had already absorbed a lot of the energy within the monster cores, but Jian Chen continued to take monster core after monster core out of his Space Ring and continued to cultivate. He still had plenty of Class 1 Monster cores

and a few Class 2 Monster Cores which would last him a couple of days at the very least. Fortunately, his father had also gave him 10 Class 3 Monster Cores and a single Class 4 Monster Core.

On the second day, the sun had already reached a high point in the sky before Jian Chen finally finished cultivating. By this point, all of his Class 1 Monster Cores were essentially gone.

“Ai...” After realizing the dwindling amount of monster cores in his Space Belt, Jian Chen gave a long sigh of hopelessness. The two glows within his dantian had really made him feel quite distressed.

Calming himself, Jian Chen departed from both his room and the restaurant to mingle with the crowded streets.

The morning sky was quite clear, and the fiery sun had not yet started to increase the temperature of the weather by a large amount. With a warm ray of light, everyone felt quite comfortable instead. On the busy streets, a few mercenaries were hurrying along while a few peddlers were slowly cruising along.

Jian Chen eventually arrived at the Mercenary Union. He had already put in some thought about which job he wanted to take, so he would first need to become a mercenary.

Chapter 69: First Class Mercenary

Throughout the Tian Yuan continent, in each city of every country, the Mercenary Union would always be in the core of the city. And right next to the Mercenary Union would always be a few small banks.

White Cloud City was only a Second Class City, but it covered a large area of land. Jian Chen had walked for an entire 30 minutes before finally arriving at a bustling street at the center of the city. Right in front of him was a 20 meter tall building that towered over the other buildings; this was the Mercenary Union.

The Mercenary Union's building was rather large and was constructed to resemble a giant magical beast. At the entrance of the building, a constant flow of all sorts of mercenaries went in and out.

Jian Chen entered the Mercenary Union, and although this was the first time he had been to a place like this. However, since he had wanted to become an experienced mercenary. he had read up on about stuff like this in the academy library.

The Mercenary Union had many people inside, and the business window had a long queuing line. All of the sales windows were filled with people trying to hand in their missions. Yet in the deepest part of the building, there was a mercenary enrollment window with a cold and desolate ambience.

Jian Chen walked up to that window and said, "Hello, I would

like to enlist as a mercenary.”

The person in charge of this window was an old man who looked to be around 60 years old. Although he was old, his entire face was red and his eyes shined brightly with emotion.

The elderly man indifferently looked at Jian Chen and flatly said, “To become a mercenary, one first must be a Saint. Have you reached that level yet?”

“I have already reached the Saint level.” Jian Chen answered.

The elder sized Jian Chen up before handing over a piece of paper and asking, “What’s your name?”

“Jian Chen!” Jian Chen obviously didn’t want to use the name Changyang Xiang Tian when he was trying to hide himself, so he instead used his original name from his previous life as his new moniker.

“How old are you this year?” The man asked.

Hearing this, Jian Chen gave the question some thought, “20 years old.” Jian Chen couldn’t possibly state his true age since a Saint at the age of 15 was a very rare sight in the Tian Yuan continent. If he had stated his true age it might have brought forth trouble later that he did not need. Although many people knew how talented Jian Chen was in Kargath Academy, only a few people like the headmaster and the vice headmaster knew his true

age.

A 20 year old was the normal age for one to be a Saint, and since his physical growth had long since outstripped the others, no one would think otherwise if he said he was 20. With his current appearance, there was almost no difference between a regular 20 year old and himself.

“What degree of strength have you reached?” The man began to write on the piece of paper with a pen.

“Primary Saint.” Jian Chen said.

The rest of the process to become a mercenary was rather simple. After paying the tax of one Silver Coin, Jian Chen had officially become a mercenary. He took his mercenary badge, which was that of the lowest rank since he was only a Primary Saint.

After collecting his badge, Jian Chen didn't bother to stay behind at the Mercenary Union, he instead quickly left the building, and asked for directions to a medicine shop.

Although the Tian Yuan continent had Radiant Saint Masters who could heal a wide variety of injuries, their numbers were incredibly small. Because of this, the status of any single Radiant Saint Master was very high, especially for mercenaries, who would be hard pressed to be able to invite a Radiant Saint Master into their group. Only the biggest and strongest groups could successfully invite one; those who were alone or weren't strong enough would find it impossible to enjoy the benefits a Radiant

Saint Master would bring unless they paid extensive amounts of money.

With an uncountable amount of mercenaries on the Tian Yuan continent, there were also an equally uncountable amount of injured people every day. Since the supply of Radiant Saint Masters did not meet the demand of those who needed them, a new method of using drugs and herbs was created to combat injuries. Using these medicines was vastly inferior to the healing capabilities of a Radiant Saint Master, but it was widely accepted by mercenaries. This was because aside from the high grade drugs, the normal medicines were very cheap.

The medicine store wasn't small and was crowded inside. It was not at all like the Mercenary Union which had soundproofed walls all around. While in the Mercenary Union, all of the mercenaries there would loudly shout amongst each other to be heard, in the medicine store, people could easily converse with each other.

The medicine store had many long lines of people. After sweeping a glance around the shop, Jian Chen finally found a line with relatively few people and waited.

“Might I ask what you want to order?”

Finally it was Jian Chen's turn. He was enthusiastically greeted by the person behind the counter.

“I'll need a few herbs, do you have them in stock?” Jian Chen asked.

The assistant looked at Jian Chen with an odd stare. This was the first time he had seen a person not come in to buy medicine for their wounds; instead, this person was buying herbs. Despite the curiosity he had towards Jian Chen, the assistant replied, “Of course we sell them. I don’t know what the honored customer wants, but whatever is in the store is for sale.”

“I need some Qilin Grass, Rubbing Grass, Sweet Grass, Skeleton Grass, Sawtooth Grass, Antelope Flower, Root Flower, Lilies and Turtle Tubers...do you have these?” Jian Chen named almost 10 different types of herbs.

The assistant immediately nodded, “We do, these herbs are very common and are not pricy at all. We have them all, but I don’t know how much the honored customer wants?”

Jian Chen had a happy smile on his face. He took out a gold coin and placed it onto the counter as he said, “Give me a few of every item!” These herbs were all extremely common goods; a single gold coin was enough to buy a cartful of them.

Seeing the gold coin on the counter, the man smiled brightly, “Okay, please wait for one moment, honored guest. I’ll bring them to you in a moment!” With that said, he entered the backroom to gather the materials.

After paying for the herbs he needed, Jian Chen left the store and headed outside of the city. He arrived 10 miles outside of the city walls, and entered into the small forest. There, he dug a few

mounds of earth and plucked some tree leaves. He then stored them within his Space Belt and walked back to White Cloud City.

After returning to White Cloud City, Jian Chen purchased a new set of ordinary clothes and ducked into an uninhabited alleyway that was hidden by the general populace. After looking left and right to check if the coast was clear, he took out a small bunch of each herb he had bought earlier.

He first grinded the herbs up into a fine powder using his hands and feet, before mixing it with the water he collected. Adding to the mixture some of the soft mud and leaves, he grinded it into powder as well. He continued to mix it before squeezing out some of the residual juice. Jian Chen took the result of this juice and immediately smeared it onto his face.

Quickly, Jian Chen lifted his head; the complete transformation of his face could clearly be seen. At this moment, Jian Chen's looked entirely differed. Even a person who was familiar with his appearance wouldn't be able to recognize him now. For all intents and purposes, Jian Chen was now a completely different person; his previously handsome looks had become average, and even his eyebrows and eyelashes had been altered to become shorter. The only features that hadn't changed were his pair of alluring eyes and his weak-looking figure.

Jian Chen didn't stop there, the silver Light Wind Sword appeared in his hands. He suddenly placed the sword on the back of his waist as his waist-length hair blowing slightly into the air.

With a silver flash of light, the Light Wind Sword quickly cut

through his long hair with a speed that was almost hard to see with the naked eye. His hair was now at his shoulders. He changed into a new set of clothes from his previously luxurious set of clothes made from handspun silk; it was quite the change going from the finest silk to coarse leather.

By this point, there was nothing about Jian Chen that would remind even those who knew him best of the original Jian Chen.

Jian Chen took another few moments to ensure he hadn't overlooked anything to perfect his new appearance. Satisfied, he immediately burned his old clothes in a fire and exited the alley.

Once again entering the Mercenary Union, Jian Chen walked towards the mission place. The mission hall in the Mercenary Union split its missions into 5 grades: S, A, B, C, and D. The highest grade was S, and the lowest was D. At the same time, the mercenaries were also split into these same 5 categories. At the moment, Jian Chen was only a D ranked mercenary, and so he could only take on D ranked missions.

A mercenary's rank was determined by the amount of missions accomplished, their honor and strength. A D ranked mercenaries had to be at least Saints, while C ranked mercenaries had the power of Great Saints at the very minimum. With this system, S ranked mercenaries had to reach the strength and honor of Earth Saint Masters.

Even if one had the same strength as an Earth Saint Master, if they didn't have the same amount of reputation, then they wouldn't be considered an S ranked mercenary. Therefore, this

mercenary grading system had no shortcuts.

D ranked missions were bountiful, but the majority of them were very boring. The majority of them were about finding lost items, or to help a store buy and deliver their items to another store. None of the missions were of any interest to Jian Chen.

Right now, Jian Chen only wanted a mission that would let him leave the Gesun Kingdom because he knew the Hua Yun Sect was a major power in the kingdom. Although he had completely changed his looks, there was no guarantee that a person wouldn't discover his real identity and set off the Hua Yun Sect's pursuit to capture him. Just in case he accidentally revealed himself to the Hua Yun Sect by mistake, it would be best for him to leave the Gesun Kingdom to a place where the Hua Yun Sect had no power.

Unfortunately, very few D ranked missions allowed a mercenary to travel in between countries. Most missions like that were for the higher ranked mercenaries and were usually never distributed to a D ranker. So when Jian Chen had looked at the entire mission list for D ranking mercenaries, he didn't see a single mission that would take him outside the country.

Inwardly sighing, Jian Chen left the Mercenary Union. If he wanted to leave the Gesun Kingdom, he would need to rely on the cover of caravans. Otherwise, if he were to travel alone, he would be assaulted by a group of robbers that even he would most likely have trouble with. But even if he didn't meet any robbers, the border fortress was a place Jian Chen wouldn't be able to bypass with ease.

Chapter 70: Leaving Gesun Kingdom

After leaving the Mercenary Union, Jian Chen walked towards the marketplace. With such a wide variety of goods being displayed, there was an equal variety of armed forces guarding it as people traded. With their presence, no one feared having their wares stolen.

But when Jian Chen arrived, there were already people busily trading while others were streaming in and out of the area. All sorts of magical beasts were being ridden by the guards, though some of them were just regular horses.

Horses were very common in the Tian Yuan continent, but while they were the most common type of transportation, they were also the most mundane.

At that moment, a peddler walked by Jian Chen's side with an armload of goods. Holding out his hand, Jian Chen asked the peddler, "Fellow brother, might I ask if you know of any traders leaving the Gesun Kingdom?"

The trader looked at Jian Chen with suspicion before pointing towards a big caravan. "That caravan is preparing to leave the Gesun Kingdom."

Jian Chen followed the youth's finger with his eye and saw 10 caravans grouped together. Surrounding the caravans was a large group of mercenaries protecting the items, while a middle aged man wearing a luxurious looking robe was commanding the people

to load up the items onto the caravan.

With only a single glance, Jian Chen knew that this middle aged man was the one responsible for the caravans. Immediately walking on over, he asked the man, “Uncle, might I ask if your caravans are leaving Gesun Kingdom?”

Hearing Jian Chen, the middle aged man turned around to take a look at him, “Why do you ask?”

Laughing, Jian Chen said, “Uncle, if your caravans are leaving Gesun Kingdom, might I join you? Although my strength is not all that strong, I am still a mercenary nonetheless. I don’t need a reward for this either, how about it?”

The middle aged man looked relieved at Jian Chen’s last sentence and said, “Fine. However you must stick close to us during the trip. Also, any roadside fares must be paid by you and won’t be compensated for by us. Lastly, if we are attacked, then you must help protect the group and fight together with us.”

On the Tian Yuan continent, most of the weaker mercenaries would usually either form their own large group, or join a caravan group in order to travel from kingdom to kingdom.

Since the roads connecting the kingdoms were long and dangerous, there was a very high chance of encountering highwaymen. Ambushes from magical beasts were also a common occurrence, and in some areas, those attacks happened frequently. Because of this, every caravan would welcome a mercenary’s

presence with wide arms, and generally wouldn't refuse anyone. After all, even one man could add to the overall strength, and could help protect someone's life.

Jian Chen didn't hesitate at all to agree to the man's conditions.

"Our caravan will depart in an hour, so go make your preparations." With that said, the man didn't pay any more attention to Jian Chen and resumed commanding the transporters to work.

Afterwards, Jian Chen headed towards the White Cloud City stables and spent 50 Gold Coins to buy a single horse. Leading the horse back, he patiently waited for the caravan to depart.

An hour quickly passed as Jian Chen mounted his horse and followed the caravans from behind. The mercenaries that were originally hired to protect the caravan sent many inquisitive looks at him, but none bothered to talk to him. Since there were three caravan groups that combined into one, there were naturally three groups of mercenaries. Aside from those three groups, there were also many mercenaries going by themselves. It was because of the unknown dangers that the caravans had to group together both themselves and their mercenaries, resulting in a total of about 500 people. It was even normal for one to recognize a familiar face.

Soon they left the city gates. Although the caravan representative had a few bodyguards and mercenaries, he didn't stay at the gates for long, and immediately ordered the caravans to move out once the negotiations were over.

“One moment.” At that moment before everyone could move, an armored man came down from the city towers with a scroll of paper.

The middle aged man crossed the city gates and handed the scroll to one of the bodyguards. “Take this portrait and stick it to the city gates. Then find the best portrait master and send him to me. I want him to duplicate this portrait and post it everywhere in the city. If anyone can find the person described on the portrait, capture him, and if there’s any resistance, kill him.”

“Yes, sir!” A soldier took the scroll and immediately tacked it to the city wall.

“The picture on the portrait is a wanted criminal in the Gesun Kingdom. Take a good look now; look for this person in every single city you stop at. By all means, you must not let the criminal get away. Do you understand?” The man repeated with a commanding tone that could be heard clearly even from far away.

As the bodyguard posted the portrait onto the city gates, everyone glanced at the figure on it. The person looked to be no younger than 16 years old, and no older than 20. Although the person looked very young, his looks were handsome and actually looked very lifelike despite it being a drawing. Whoever had drawn this portrait was a true master of art.

After posting the portrait, the man waved his arm at the caravan representative, “That’ll be all, you can leave now.”

With no further interruptions, the caravan began to move once more. However, the guards at the city gates had already went from ten in number to a hundred. Every single one of them would check each person as they entered or exited the gates, and then compared them to the person in the portrait.

When Jian Chen was about to exit the gates, he saw the portrait on the gates, and his eyes hardened. The person on the portrait was of his original appearance.

Seeing this, Jian Chen couldn't help but feel some fear in his heart regarding the Hua Yun Sect. This city had been countless of miles away from Lore City. He had only left Lore City yesterday and arrived at White Cloud City just last night. Yet not only did the Hua Yun Sect perfectly capture his appearance onto a portrait, but they had also been able to quickly send out the portraits to a city thousands of miles away. This type of efficiency make any person quake in fear, and Jian Chen doubted that the Hua Yun Sect had only sent out portraits to White Cloud City. Right now, he feared almost every single city within the Gesun Kingdom had warrants of his capture.

Jian Chen secretly rejoiced at his decision to change his appearance; otherwise, he would have been hard pressed to escape White Cloud City.

As Jian Chen rode his horse forward, the two soldiers at the gates scrutinized him with a heavy stare. However, Jian Chen had already changed his appearance; he was completely different from before. If people who had been familiar with him wouldn't be able

to recognize him, then how would some strangers be able to find out who he was?

With no more hindrances, Jian Chen mixed in with the other mercenaries and departed from White Cloud City in a long line.

The final destination for the three caravans was the neighboring country, Blue Wind Kingdom. But because the caravans had many precious goods in them, they were going at a slow pace. Although the border fort wasn't too far away, it would take them two or three days of walking to reach the border, and crossing into the Blue Wind Kingdom would require another half month.

Jian Chen looked at the grand caravan; it wasn't using regular horses to pull, but rather four Class 1 Magical Beasts specially bred for this purpose. Surrounding the magical beasts were a few mercenaries riding on top of their own magical beasts; none of them looked weak at all. The man Jian Chen had talked to earlier was there as well. It seemed that all of them were protecting the caravan as well.

Jian Chen had quietly figured out that within the middle caravan was the boss, if not an important person. This was because this was a luxurious caravan, and still had two other caravans by its side.

It took around four days for the group of caravans to reach the border fort, which was a long wall that spanned for countless of miles. It was 50 meters tall and 20 meters thick. From afar, this great wall looked like a long dragon that made people shake in awe.

Jian Chen looked at the wall in front of him as the shade covered him. Under the protection of the wall, the setting sun was completely blocked, and the the area in front of the wall was completely covered in darkness.. This sight was enough to make people who had never seen this sight before shake in awe, as they felt like the wall was some frightening and profound force.

This was the first time Jian Chen had ever seen the Gesun Kingdom's wall. There was awe in Jian Chen's mind as he looked. In his previous world, he had seen many walls, but none of them could compare to this. The biggest wall he had seen was 20 meters tall, but this wall in front of him was 50 meters tall; it was like comparing an adult to a child.

“What a great wall, I can't even imagine how long it took for them to build a wall of this size.” Jian Chen sighed in admiration.

Hearing what he said, the mercenary riding right next to Jian Chen stifled his laughter, “A wall of this size is normal in the Tian Yuan continent. Practically every kingdom has a wall of this caliber.” The mercenary looked at Jian Chen and said, “If you haven't been to any of the Three Great Empires, then let me tell you: Each one of the walls have a height of at least 100 meters and a thickness of 50 meters. These small city walls can't even compare!”

Jian Chen turned around to look at the mercenary who spoke to him. He looked to be around 20 years old and had a suntanned face. With his coarse leather clothes, the man looked to be quite ordinary.

“When there’s a chance, I’ll definitely go check out the Three Great Empires.” Jian Chen laughed.

“The roads connecting the Three Great Empires are quite long and dangerous. At the same time, magical beasts run rampant there, so it’s not that easy to travel in between the empires.” The mercenary said.

Chapter 71: Mu Yun

Jian Chen let loose a gentle smile as he cupped his hands in greeting, “It seems brother has seen many suns while traveling the Tian Yuan Continent.”

The mercenary returned his smile, “It wasn’t all that long, just a few years, that’s all. Compared to those that have left their homes to travel for ten to a hundred years, I am still green.”

“This brother here doesn’t know what to call you.” Jian Chen said.

“My name is Mu Yun, what’s your name?” The mercenary spoke with great enthusiasm.

“I’m called Jian Chen.” Jian Chen replied, he had already decided to use the name “Jian Chen” in the future on the Tian Yuan Continent.

Following this, Jian Chen and Mu Yun started to converse, discussing several interesting issues on Tian Yuan Continent.

Although this was the first time Jian Chen was traveling the Tian Yuan Continent, he had read plenty of books regarding the continent back in the Kargath Library and had grown familiar with a few things including history. Mu Yun, on the other hand, had traversed the Tian Yuan Continent for a few years, so his experience could be said to be quite ample. The two had actually complimented each other nicely and so as they enthusiastically

talked to each other, they unconsciously formed a close bond with each other.

As the caravan got closer to the gates of the border fort, Jian Chen noticed a portrait tacked to the side of one of the gates. On the portrait, the name “Changyang Xiang Tian” was inscribed on it with a generous reward printed below it.

If people had any hints or clues to Changyang Xiang Tian’s whereabouts that proved to be true, then they would be awarded with 1000 Purple Coins. If their information led to the capture of the person, then they would be rewarded with another 4000 Purple Coins.

A Gold Coin was enough to feed a small household of three for over a month, and a Purple Coin was the equivalent to a hundred Gold Coins. So a thousand Purple Coins was a generous sum of money to any mercenary. With such a tidy sum, any mercenary, or anyone for that matter, would be able to buy a nice home and spend the rest of their lives without any more financial worries. It was easy to say that this reward was so irresistible that no one could turn it down.

The best reward people could hope for from traveling would be to capture Changyang Xiang Tian. If they could capture and hand him to the Hua Yun Sect, then they would be able to enjoy a prize of ten thousand Purple Coins.

Seeing the generous prize for his capture, Jian Chen’s normally emotionless eyes flashed with a cold glare.

“Hua Yun Sect, you really do think highly of me to offer so great a reward and label me as a wanted criminal throughout the Gesun Kingdom. To think that you’re even using the Mercenary Union to try to find me.” Jian Chen inwardly sneered, however, he felt a small pang of hopelessness. On the Tian Yuan Continent, strength determined everything, and his own strength was currently insufficient. Because of the Hua Yun Sect, he had to forsake his name, his image, his home and his kingdom. In regards with such a predicament, not only was he unable to do anything, but even one of the four major clans in Lore City, his Changyang Clan, was powerless to stop the Hua Yun Sect.

“Ai!” Jian Chen sighed. At that moment, he could not help but recall the image of his mother’s sorrowfully crying face when he left.

After thinking back to that, Jian Chen’s eyes softened momentarily before rapidly becoming firm. After that moment, he had promised himself that he would dedicate himself to cultivation and improving his strength. Otherwise, under the great power of the Hua Yun Sect, he would never be able to return to the Gesun Kingdom and see his mother again. More importantly, he would never be able to feel motherly love ever again.

The previous Jian Chen was an orphan and had never known what maternal love was. The heavens had not only granted him a new shot at life, but also a blessed family life. Jian Chen had treasured the feelings he felt from his relationship with his mother.

Even those who were born into a happy family wouldn't be able to experience what Jian Chen had felt. As someone who lived an entire life in isolation, he had always desired family. But because he had always been in solitude, his heart had only known what it felt like to be alone.

Next to the empty gates, roughly 200 soldiers stood by and stared down every single person that entered and exited the city. Whenever someone had an unclear face, they would be stopped by the soldiers and be compared with the portrait before finally being allowed to continue.

Although the soldiers had blocked many strong mercenaries, none were in a hurry. This was because outside of Gesun Kingdom's boundary, the fort had over ten thousand soldiers and didn't lack in experts at all. So if a battle broke out, it would be obvious who would be the loser.

The doors to the fort were gigantic; even if five caravans were to enter side by side, they would not block the road at all. As Jian Chen and his caravans slowly walked forward, another smaller caravan sped up from behind. As they saw the gates of the fort approach, they started to speak.

"Who exactly is this guy in the portrait and how is it that he's being chased by everyone? I didn't think that even Gesun Kingdom's border forts would have this portrait tacked up as well."

"It looks like this guy broke countless laws; I've already been to three cities and saw this portrait posted everywhere. Even the

Mercenary Union has put out a warrant for his arrest.”

“That’s right, this guy is definitely someone who broke a few major laws, or annoyed someone of great influence. Right now, the Mercenary Union has already given him an A ranked bounty with no restriction to the rank required to take it. So even a D ranked mercenary could cash in on this bounty.”

“Exactly, the commission for this is extremely high; as long as we have information on his location, that’s already 1000 Purple Coins. And if they capture him with this information, then that’s another 4000 Purple Coins.”

“A few thousand is nothing; if we personally capture and bring him to the Hua Yun Sect, that’s ten thousand Purple Coins. Ten thousand coins, the thought is terrifying. I wouldn’t be able to spend ten thousand Purple Coins in a single lifetime!”

.....

Hearing the merchants talk about the portrait, Mu Yun turned to Jian Chen and laughed, “I don’t know what type of crime this Changyang Xiang Tian committed in order to have the Hua Yun Sect spend so much money to go after him, but it can’t possibly be a justifiable sentence, since the portrait there says he is only at the level of a Primary Saint. How strange, how could a Primary Saint garner so much hate from the Hua Yun Sect? Could it be that this Changyang Xiang Tian got caught peeking at the Hua Yun Sect’s daughter while she took a bath?”

Hearing Mu Yun talk, Jian Chen could only laugh. He helplessly looked at Mu Yuan, “Brother Mu Yun, I have lived in the Gesun Kingdom for over a dozen years and more, and heard much about the Hua Yun Sect. However, I have only heard about the sect leader having a son, not a daughter. So sneakily watching his daughter take a bath doesn’t seem to be possible.”

Mu Yun threw a dirty look at Jian Chen, “What do you know, who says the Hua Yun Sect leader has no daughter? This can’t possibly be confirmed, maybe she’s hidden from the rest of the world.”

Jian Chen helplessly shook his head, deciding in his heart to no longer argue with Mu Yun about whether the Hua Yun Sect leader really had a daughter or not.

The caravan didn’t run into any obstructions at the fort, and Jian Chen’s appearance easily passed through without trouble. No one could tell his looks were fake since Jian Chen was an expert of disguise; so even though he had only used a few common herbs, his disguise was flawless.

Moreover, this disguise technique was something that was passed down to Jian Chen as he wandered about in his previous world. It looked simple, but was actually quite profound, and couldn’t be learnt easily. In this world, this type of method was not yet invented, so it was natural no one would think twice about it. As long as his face didn’t tear up, then no one would be able to find out.

After passing through the border fort, they were greeted with

plains that stretched farther than the eye could see. There were very few people, and the road only had a few caravans on it. This was the road that was not under any control from the kingdoms, and was just a unregulated chaotic piece of land. Robbers and bandits roamed around these parts, so caravans generally grouped together with others and hired strong mercenaries to protect them.

This stretch of land was very large as well; a single day of traveling only got them a quarter of the way there. If they wanted to reach the Blue Wind Kingdom, they would also have to pass through a mountain range to get to the border fort. With the speed the caravans were going, if they wanted to reach the fort, they would need at least ten days. Even if the road was flat, they wouldn't be able to go any faster, since the caravans were burdened with large carts of goods.

As the day grew dark, the caravan stopped to set up for the night. The mercenaries set up camp around the caravans, while the caravan drivers unloaded fodder for the horses to eat.

A plume of smoke billowed up from the camps as a few of the mercenaries sat down to roast some magical beast meat or some pre-made food for them to eat. However, not all of them sat together; a few of the mercenaries stood off by the side and began to eat their own rations.

Jian Chen took out a tent from his Space Belt and then looked for a dry and flat piece of land to set it up. Since he wasn't a part of any mercenary group, he was not able to use the provisions provided for those that were hired. Jian Chen had to take

responsibility for anything he used without any assistance from the caravans.

Right as Jian Chen finished pitching his tent, Mu Yun suddenly walked up to Jian Chen and said, “Jian Chen, it seems like you only joined this caravan halfway through. Where do you plan to go?”

Jian Chen nodded and said: “I want to go to the Blue Wind Kingdom. What about you, brother Mu Yun?”

Mu Yun laughed and said, “I wish to go the Cage Kingdom, which means I’ll have to pass through the Blue Wind Kingdom.” As he spoke, his hand also withdrew a tent from his Space Belt and he began to set it up not too far away from Jian Chen’s tent.

Chapter 72: Boundless Bandits

As dusk arrived, Jian Chen finished his rations and went into his tent. With a Class 1 Monster Core in hand, he started to cultivate. Now that he was traveling the Tian Yuan continent, there would be dangers lurking around every corner. This meant that he had to be strong in order to stay safe. Thus, Jian Chen didn't dare to squander even a second in order to increase his strength. Not only that, but he knew that if he grew stronger, then he would be able to return to the Gesun Kingdom and reunite with his family without fear of the Hua Yun Sect. Otherwise, if he dared to show his face there, he would be chased to the ends of the earth by the sect.

Right now the outside was relatively peaceful. There was only the occasional sound of footsteps being heard as a few of the mercenaries patrolled around the campsite.

The time quietly passed as it became late. At that moment, all of the mercenaries in their tents were sound asleep, and the mercenaries that were patrolling were drowsy to the point of being in an unfocused state.

Just then, a dark blade flashed. It traveled under the cover of the night and silently slashed the neck of one of the patrolling mercenaries. This dark flash was clearly the result of an assassin's power, and with a soundless gurgle, the mercenary fell to the ground dead.

The dark flash had moved through the air silently and quickly. No one could sense this blade coming. Since the campgrounds were

wide, and the target had been a lone mercenary standing in a remote place, there was no way anyone could possibly notice his death before he fell to the ground.

Right as the first mercenary fell to the ground, countless dark flashes flew out towards the camp and killed all of the mercenaries patrolling a bit far from camp.

Jian Chen wasn't too far away from the campsite, and so when the mercenaries fell to the ground, there was one that fell only 30 meters away from Jian Chen. The crossed legged Jian Chen's ear shook from the sound he heard as his eyes abruptly flew open. Looking around, Jian Chen bent forward to open the tent flap just a crack to see what was happening outside.

Just as Jian Chen opened up the flap to his tent to check up on what was happening outside, another flash of light could be seen as it shot through a patrolling mercenary. Like the others, this man also fell to the ground without a sound.

Jian Chen's eyes widened in surprise at this sight. It was clear to him that the caravan was under attack, but with his previous experience, he did not panic. Roaring loudly from his tent, he yelled, "Everyone be careful, we are under attack!"

Jian Chen let loose a loud roar that could be heard clearly throughout the campsite. With his warning, the previously peacefully quiet campsite erupted into noise as countless mercenaries came bursting out from their tents. In just a short moment, hundreds of mercenaries making a racket had appeared in the previously undisturbed camp.

Jian Chen's words were common to all those that had traveled throughout the Tian Yuan continent. Those who lived by their weapons were extremely sensitive to sound, and so when they heard Jian Chen, they immediately came charging out of their tents. However, as everyone came rushing from their tents, they looked around themselves and could only see their own mercenaries without any signs of an enemy.

“An enemy? Where's the enemy...”

“Who was the one that yelled, I don't see anyone...”

“Where's the enemy, who's the motherf*cker that cried wolf...”

Many of the mercenaries began to cry out loud in anger. If they found the guy who cried wolf, then he wouldn't be let off easily.

“Not good, Captain Lang Tian, the sentry Du Mu Lan has died!”

Just as many of the mercenaries were cursing out loud, another yell came crying loudly over the others, causing many to turn their heads.

Hearing that, every single mercenary turned towards the cry in dead silence. At the same time, another three flashes of light came flying through towards the group, and slammed straight into three mercenaries' chests.

The three mercenaries that were hit didn't even have the opportunity to even cry out before they slumped to the ground. But before they could even hit the floor, another three streaks of lights flew out and claimed the lives of another three mercenaries.

The streaks of black light never ceased to fly out towards the mercenaries. Under the guise of the night, it was hard for the people to figure out where they were coming from or where they were aimed at.

Since the light was shooting at a fast pace, a dozen mercenaries had already succumbed to the attack before anyone could even react. At this time, a mercenary finally cried out in terror, "Be careful, enemies are atta-..." But before he could finish his sentence, a streak of light flew towards him and killed him.

"Everyone scatter and take cover!" Another mercenary yelled. It was a large middle aged man with a scar on his face. Two red hammers materialized in his hands as he charged towards the direction of where the attack came from.

"Captain Lang Tian, be careful..."

Watching the man charge towards the direction of the enemy, many of the mercenaries cried out in concern.

As the man charged ahead, a few dozen of the stronger mercenaries began to follow his lead, and started to rush towards the source of the attacks.

But the streaks of light continued to fly out; this time they had changed targets and began to hit those mercenaries that were starting to come towards them.

Although this was a hasty charge without knowing all the information, these dozen mercenaries were not weak. The still charging Captain Lang Tian swung out with his twin red hammers and lit up the area around them like a striking lantern.

As he saw two flashes of light head towards him, Lang Tian sneered and swung out his hammers, smashing them away from him.

As the two hit each other, Lang Tian's hammers completely smashed through the rays of light. Silently, the light disappeared; although they were strong enough to take another person's life, they weren't strong enough to withstand an actual attack.

The mercenaries behind Lang Tian weren't weak either, and without fear, their Saint Weapons began to form and destroy the black lights that were aimed at them.

At that time, another situation had occurred; an ear piercing whistle broke the silence. As the mercenaries turned their heads towards the sound, they could only see a large concentration of arrows flying at them, like a swarm of locusts.

Seeing the amount of arrows, a few dozen of the mercenaries immediately stopped their charge and took cover.

“Ding ding ding ding...”

The arrows immediately landed against their Saint Weapons, creating a cacophony of sound.

Lang Tian and a few other mercenaries didn't bother to stop their charge. Faced with the storm of arrows, many of the mercenaries only snarled loudly and used their Saint Force to completely enwrap themselves. Although the layer was very thin, its defensive power was extremely strong. These arrows were shrugged off as they fell to the ground, completely unable to pierce through the protective layering.

“Fellow brothers, let's kill!”

Just as the mercenaries were about to follow the initial charge into the enemy grounds, a clear voice shouted out from the darkness of the night. The cry shook the heavens, and with it came a faint, dark shadow rushing towards the mercenaries.

“The bandits have come out, ready your arrows!”

Within the mercenary camp, a mercenary cried out to warn them as many of them started to notch their bows. Aiming at the blurs, they waited for the right distance before they fired.

Jian Chen stood on the outskirts of the battle, his eyes hardening as he looked at the incoming shadows. Although they were still relatively far from the campsite and the night had rendered

visibility to almost zero, Jian Chen could count out a few hundred shadows. This number wasn't any lower than the mercenaries' own number. Moreover, with the recent storm of arrows, a few of the mercenaries had been killed, further decreasing their numbers.

“Fire!”

By this point, the bandits had already entered firing range. With the command of one person, the hundred arrows were released into the air by the mercenaries and flew towards the bandits with an ear piercing whistle.

Amongst the bandits were a few strong ones, but the majority of them were fairly weak and so a few dozen of them fell victim to the storm of arrows.

Three more streaks of light came flying out silently from behind the bandits and took the lives of three of the mercenary archers. Those three streaks of light left small finger sized holes in them as they fell to the ground.

The frequency of the streaks of light was high and always came in groups of three. In a short while, a total of nine archers fell dead.

Seeing the wounds on the mercenaries' corpses, a middle aged man called out, “Everyone be careful, there's a dark attribute Saint amongst the bandits.”

As he spoke, another three rays of light came flying out towards

the man that had just spoke.

The middle aged man was by no means weak. His face hardened as a shiny axe appeared in his right hand, which he then used to chop the streaks of black light.

“Bang!”

The streak of black light clashed with the middle aged man’s axe, causing a giant explosion of sound before they disappeared.

The man shook slightly as his face hardened. “Damn it, the enemies have three dark attributed Saints who are specialized archers. In this area, only the Boundless Bandits have this type of power.”

“Vice Captain Liu, what are you saying, could it be these are the Boundless Bandits?”

“Good heavens, these are the Boundless Bandits...”

“What a disaster, to think we came across the Boundless Bandits...”

Chapter 73: Boundless Bandit (Two)

Upon hearing the name Boundless bandits, every mercenary's face fell.

“Boundless Bandits!” Jian Chen's eyebrows furrowed together. He wasn't very familiar with this bandit group. When he had read the books in both Changyang Mansion and Kargath Library, the only thing he was able to learn about the Boundless Bandits was that they were a very strong bandit group that had existed for 200 years already.

The Boundless Bandits were a strong group from the very beginning. They wandered about the borders of several kingdoms and were any caravan's worst nightmare. The Boundless Bandits were ruthless and whenever they robbed merchants, they never left any survivors. Countless mercenaries died due to the Boundless Bandits, and the Boundless Bandits had occasionally attacked many villages and even some minor cities. In the past, two Class 3 cities had been plundered by them, and a Class 2 city had suffered tremendous damage from them. With every village they massacred, it further enhanced their reign of terror and caused merchants to fear traveling to faraway places. This in turn incurred great losses for some of the major kingdoms.

At that time, the Four Great Kingdoms: the Gesun Kingdom, the Blue Moon Kingdom, the Blue Wind Kingdom, and the Var Kingdom had finally discovered the main hideout of the Boundless Bandits, and sent their soldiers to annihilate them. Unfortunately, the Boundless Bandits had power beyond what was anticipated, and although the Four Great Kingdoms had succeeded in the end, they had suffered disastrous casualties.

After a few unsuccessful attempts, the Four Great Kingdoms each sent their strongest expert to fight the Boundless Bandits at their main base—Boundless Mountain. Those four experts came to Boundless Mountain and fought so hard that the entire mountain shook and split open. The explosions of battle lasted for one day and one night before gradually stopping. Sometime during the battle, the six peaks of the mountain had caved in.

When the experts from the Four Great Kingdom had returned, their faces were not a pretty sight. They didn't say anything and left quickly; soon after, the commander of the mission to annihilate the Boundless Bandits had immediately received an order from the king for all the troops to retreat from Boundless Mountain.

Although no one had personally seen what the experts from the Four Great Kingdoms had done inside the mountain, even those without a brain could guess what events had transpired. This result was something the mercenaries and merchants had a hard time accepting, and so as a result, the Boundless Bandit's reputation skyrocketed. To some mercenaries and merchants, the Boundless Bandits had become a mythical figure that was feared by quite a few of the neighboring kingdoms.

However, there was still one good thing; after the experts had fought them on Boundless Mountain, the Boundless Bandits' activities decreased drastically. Even though many merchants and mercenaries still died by their hand every year, it didn't happen as often as in the past. It only occurred once every two months and their methods weren't as violent as before. This gave the merchants plenty of opportunities. The only downside was that

they couldn't predict the times when the Boundless Bandits would attack. Thus, even if some of the caravans wanted to travel at specific times in order to avoid the bandits, it was an impossible task.

“Motherf*cker, the Boundless Bandits aren't anything, this one will chop them down like grass.” A mercenary cried out with hatred as he charged towards the Boundless Bandits without a trace of fear in his eyes.

Aside from him, all the other mercenaries had looked at the incoming Boundless Bandits with looks of extreme hatred as well. The Boundless Bandits had killed numerous mercenaries and merchants, and even some of their family members and close friends had been murdered by these bandits. So in their hearts, the mercenaries' initial fears had been overtaken by their intense hatred.

As travelers who depended on their strengths in order to survive as mercenaries, their murderous nature overtook their normally upright morality, and made them into men who feared nothing, not even death.

“10 years ago, my own father was killed by the hands of the Boundless Bandits. Today, I will take revenge for my father.” A 20 year old mercenary glared at the incoming bandits with blood red eyes. Grief and rage had consumed him along with hatred.

Another older man around the age of ** looked at them with fierce killing intent as he said through his teeth, “The Boundless Bandits killed my brother 5 years ago. Even if I sacrifice my life

today, I'll take the life of at least one of them to serve as the funerary mat in revenge for my brother!"

The black streaks of light continued to come at them without pause. Even now, a few of the mercenary archers were still falling prey to the strange ray of light. While a few of the mercenaries tried to take cover, the others continued to fire arrows at the incoming bandits.

As the bandits got closer and closer, many of the mercenaries became more frantic. The amount of bandits rushing at them had a major influence on the mercenaries, and scared many of them into retreating. Their rebellious spirit was gone, since not everyone was willing to fight back — there were some that were more cowardly in the mercenary ranks.

Seeing how the mercenaries were slowly losing control of the situation, a middle aged man began to worry and shouted, "Do not panic! These are only a small portion of the Boundless Bandits, they're no stronger than us. As long as we work together, we can defeat them. Otherwise, we will all die together. Brothers, for our lives, we must come together!"

Hearing the middle aged man, even the most cowardly mercenaries had felt some courage return to their hearts. If they wanted to survive, they would need to fight. Their fierce desire to survive forced them to abandon their cowardly nature, and they were now prepared to risk their lives.

The mercenaries tried to think of any possible ways to dodge the dark streaks of light while continuing to shoot at the bandits. After

a good hundred bandits were killed, the Boundless Bandits finally arrived in front of the mercenaries. By this point, each mercenary had already fired their last arrow, and so they dropped their bows and summoned their Saint Weapons to engage the Boundless Bandits in close combat.

“Ah!”

“Ah!”

The two sides began to roar, their cries piercing the heavens as their weapons collided against each other. But the mercenaries were still not able to see behind the bandits, and the streaks of black lights were still able to precisely strike at each mercenary without fail. Within a few moments, a dozen mercenaries had fallen.

“The captain is being stalled by the bandit experts. Charles, Ge Sen Er and Mel, you three follow me. We’ll definitely find the hiding spots of the archers.” An armored mercenary cried out over the chaos of the moment. Straight after saying that, he leapt over the body of a bandit and charged towards the source of the black streaks.

As the armored mercenary charged, the three other mercenaries mentioned leapt to follow him. Using the heads of the bandits to block the streaks of black light, they continued onwards.

The four mercenaries leapt over the fallen bandits; the other bandits standing had no chance against them. Although the

Boundless Bandits were strong enough as a whole to rival kingdoms, this small portion wasn't enough. Moreover, their elite members were already blocked by a few experts during the initial charge, so there weren't any strong bandits remaining to block the four mercenaries.

Another three streaks of light came flying out at the four mercenaries. Clearly, the hidden dark attributed archers had figured out the intentions of the mercenaries.

Straight after the first three streaks were shot, another three black streaks came flying straight behind, making it a total of six streaks that silently approached the four mercenaries.

The four mercenaries weren't weak and were actually far stronger than the mercenaries on patrol. Each one of them summoned their Saint Weapons and smashed against the streaks of light with them. When the two collided, the black lights directly dissipated. The mercenaries' paces didn't falter in the slightest as they continued to charge towards the bandit archers. All four of them knew that if they didn't resolve the issues with the archers, then their mercenary group would continue to take on heavy losses.

Although the three mercenary groups had several hundred people, their strengths in the mercenary world were all lower ranked ones. The mercenaries were generally at the level of a Saint. Those who were a Great Saint were very few. There were only a few Great Saint Masters in this group: the three Mercenary Captains and the vice captain. However, the four of them were currently engaged in battle with the experts on the bandit side, and

did not have time to find the archers.

The moment the four mercenaries escaped from view, the streaks of black light stopped as well. Whether or not they had taken care of the archers, they at the very least had gained some precious time for the mercenaries. After all, the black streaks of light were detrimental to the mercenaries, since they couldn't be easily seen under the night. Their travel speeds were also extremely fast, and so the weaker mercenaries would have no way of spotting the lights.

With the hidden danger gone, the mercenaries no longer had to protect themselves from any long ranged attacks. They could now fight against the bandits with 100% of their power and tear them apart.

By this point, every single mercenary threw away all fear they had for the Boundless Bandits. For the sake of surviving, all of them were using their utmost efforts to kill the bandits, only hoping to end up victorious.

The battle rose to an ear deafening point as Saint Weapons clashed against each other and blood splashed everywhere throughout the battlefield. As the war went on, dozens of people from both sides fell victim to the other side.

Jian Chen had also entered the battle, despite using only his Saint power. However, his formidable fighting strength was definitely enough to shock anyone. They could only see Jian Chen's use his Profound Steps to evade the attacks coming from every direction. In his hand, he had only a silver sword that was 1.3

meters long and 2 fingers wide. It constantly flashed in his hand at lightning fast speeds. His pierces were so fast that only a thin ribbon of silver light would flicker across as he moved; there was no way the naked eye could catch a glimpse of the sword's material form.

Jian Chen's sword was not only fast but it was also one that nobody could defend against. Moreover, his swordplay was extremely precise. Every time his sword pierced outwards, he could accurately stab the enemy in the throat, killing the enemy in one attack. There were very few people at the same level of strength as him that could evade Jian Chen's lightning-fast sword.

Chapter 74: Fierce Battle

Jian Chen was able to fight against his enemies alone. The battlefield around him was filled with desolate screams, and blood splashed everywhere. To Jian Chen, this was already a common sight, so it didn't disturb him in the slightest.

Jian Chen continued to stab out with his sword, after every attack another Boundless Bandit would fall. With his lightning fast speed, enemies of equal strength weren't able to keep up with Jian Chen's flow for more than three moves, and even more of them were instantly killed with only a single blow to the throat.

In terms of strength, Jian Chen was lower ranked when compared to the bandits. However, when it came to killing bandits, no one could compare to Jian Chen. In the span of a few minutes, over a few dozen bandits had been killed by him, drenching his Light Wind Sword with blood. Jian Chen's clothes on the other hand, still maintained their pure, cottony, white and brown, as not a single splash of blood landed on them.

Unknowingly, Jian Chen had penetrated into the core of the bandits. Boundless Bandits surrounded him for 20 meters in every direction with no fellow mercenary in sight. The closest few were fighting in small groups of three to five on the outskirts of the bandit's vanguard.

"Kill!" Three of the Boundless Bandits cried as they charged at Jian Chen with a bloodthirsty roar. With a lift of their Saint Weapons, they slashed down in hopes of chopping Jian Chen in half.

Jian Chen immediately flew forward like a speed demon towards one of the incoming bandits. His Light Wind Sword flashed with a blood red color as it shot towards the bandit's throat.

Jian Chen was an expert with the sword, when he made his move he did it fast, the bandit's had no time to react. He could only see the bloody flash come towards his neck, then the next thing he knew, he couldn't breathe. It was almost as if something was blocking his throat, so he couldn't yell either. Immediately, a trickle of blood came flowing from his neck as the bandit fell to the ground without making another sound.

Even in his final moments, the bandit didn't realize that he was dying; perhaps he didn't even know his throat had been pierced by Jian Chen's sword. Because Jian Chen's swordplay was so fast, the bandit didn't have time to react. Moreover, the blade was so thin that he did not even feel pain from the stab.

Even after the Light Wind Sword had pierced the bandit's throat, Jian Chen didn't stop moving. The other two bandits had already gotten close, readying their weapons to slash down towards him.

Facing the two bandits who were preparing their weapons, Jian Chen did not look panicked at all. With a calm face, he grabbed his sword and used the Profound Steps to approach the two bandits at rapid speeds. At the same time, the blood red sword in his hand lashed out and stabbed one of the two bandits in the throat.

The Light Wind Sword met no resistance as the stabbed bandit

didn't react at all. It pierced deeply through his throat, and with a fluid motion, Jian Chen pulled it out and stabbed the third bandit as well.

Every single stab from Jian Chen had been extremely fast, the naked eye wouldn't be able to keep up. No one would be able to avoid his strokes, and so the third bandit would definitely not be able to survive a blow to his throat either.

To Jian Chen, killing people was already as common as breathing. Seeing the life escaping from people was nothing uncommon, and he never hesitated over taking a bandit's life. And so the Light Wind Sword continued to fly out towards the bandits.

Amongst the fierce clash, no one was safe from this battle. Even the caravan drivers who weren't Saints were grouped together with a few mercenaries fending off the bandits.

The battle was causing both sides to rapidly lose numbers; both the bandits and the mercenaries suffered from disastrous casualties. Aside from Jian Chen, who was still completely clean of blood, everyone else was drenched in it; some were covered head to toe in both blood and wounds.

Although the bandits had a higher number of people than the mercenaries, their strength and teamwork were lacking in discipline in comparison to the mercenaries, who had spent a good portion of their time with each other. So when the two fought, despite having superior numbers, the bandits were fighting on equal grounds with the mercenaries.

Jian Chen continued to travel back and forth as he dodged attacks from all directions, while stabbing out with his bloody Light Wind Sword towards each bandit's heart and throat. Almost each move was a fatal blow, and for those who did not get hit in one of those two areas, Jian Chen's sword still left severe injuries deep enough to see bone. None of the bandits around him had any way of fighting back against Jian Chen; most of them couldn't even see his sword move. Whenever the bandits slashed with their weapons, at the most crucial point, Jian Chen would evade the swing. Before they could understand what had just happened, they would all fall to the floor dead.

The amount of bandits killed at Jian Chen's hands was growing in number. Gradually, all of the bandits were starting to recognize Jian Chen's strength, and began to distance themselves from him. After all, in such a tense situation like this, no one was willing to send themselves to die that foolishly.

"Your grace has such amazing skill, allow me to test it out." At that moment, a deep voice growled out before a cyan colored ray of light shot towards Jian Chen rapidly.

Feeling the energy leak away from the cyan streak of light, Jian Chen's face changed suddenly as he realized this newcomer was very strong. The enemy was so strong, in fact, that Jian Chen did not dare to go head on against him; otherwise he would take on serious injuries.

The cyan streak of light traveled quickly through the air. In a flash, it had already reached Jian Chen. At that moment, Jian

Chen's face hardened, as he immediately focused his body to the extreme and leapt to the side to dodge it.

The attack had brushed against Jian Chen's shoulder before slamming into the ground with a loud "Bang!", leaving behind a huge hole.

Jian Chen immediately retreated 15 meters away from his enemy, before stopping to take a look at the hole in the ground, then lifting his head back up. In the night, Jian Chen could make out the figure of the one that had attacked him so fiercely.

Seeing his attacker to be around 30 or 40 years old male, Jian Chen didn't think the man was sturdy looking at all. His plain looking clothes caused the man to appear extremely ordinary. If the man didn't have his right hand raised up to its full height with a cyan colored Guan Dao in his hand, he would not look threatening at all. Nothing about him was remarkable enough to draw a person's attention towards him.

Translation Note: <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Guandao>

While Jian Chen was measuring the male in front of him, the man was calmly staring back at Jian Chen while saying, "You're quite strong, so your opponent has to be me!" He looked at Jian Chen with an even stare. It seemed as if Jian Chen was the only one in his eyes right now; the man seemed to completely ignore the screams and shouts ringing out around them.

Jian Chen's vision slowly swept his surroundings. The man stood

in a position amongst the bandits that clearly stated his status wasn't low. Although there were still plenty of bandits around Jian Chen, once they had seen the man fight against Jian Chen, they had all started to drift towards other mercenaries to fight.

Jian Chen's face changed as he realized that this would be the first life or death battle he would be involved in ever since his arrival in this new world. Despite being a veteran of over a hundred battles, and having confidence that he was unrivalled in the ways of the sword, Jian Chen was not at all sure that he would be able to land a killing blow on this new person. Based on the man's previous attack, the man's strength was stronger than his own, and since the man's attribute was wind, his movements wouldn't be any slower either.

The middle aged man looked at Jian Chen and slowly brought his Guan Dao higher into the air. The blade of the Guan Dao enwrapped itself in a cyan glow as the wind slowly revolved around the man.

Taking note of the man's movement, Jian Chen's focus reached its peak as he prepared himself. Even if he were to use the Profound Steps, his enemy's strength was far too strong, and with his wind attribute Saint Force that made him specialized in speed, he didn't dare find out what the outcome would be.

“Ha!”

Suddenly, the man shouted loudly and dashed forward at a mighty speed towards Jian Chen. The middle aged man's speed was almost terrifying, and in the blink of an eye, the Guan Dao was

almost invisible as it swung down onto Jian Chen's neck.

Jian Chen's head tilted to the side as the Guan Dao swept past his head. As the blade came downwards, a few strands of hair were cut from Jian Chen's head.

As Jian Chen's head bent to one side, he leaned his body forward and immediately strided out. Rapidly closing in onto the man, his Light Wind Sword flashed with a bloody red as it lashed out like lightning towards the man's heart.

Against the stronger male, Jian Chen was pulling out all of the stops without hesitation. Jian Chen's speed was so fast that it was his current physical limit; in the blink of an eye, the Light Wind Sword had already hit the middle aged man's stomach. The tip of the sword immediately became wrapped in Sword Qi as it pierced through the man's body.

Seeing the tip of the sword pierced his body, the middle aged man's expression suddenly changed to one of shock. However, the middle aged man reacted soon afterwards, and the strong Saint Force from within him had been drained. The ultimate form of a weapon being to able to fiercely attack and defend at close range was important. Although, the Saint Force surrounding his body was just as thin as he thought it was initially.

Chapter 75: Fighting A Saint Master

The Light Wind Sword was like a hot knife cutting through butter as it split apart the man's Saint Force. Despite this, the force of his thrust decreased as it was forced through his protective shell. The tip of the sword didn't falter at all as it continued to stab through towards the middle aged man. The initial two defenses the man had put up had been smashed to pieces, but by the time the Light Wind Sword broke through the hindrances, the man had already drawn upon his wind attribute Saint Force to immediately propel himself backwards.

The middle aged man stood a few meters away as he stared at Jian Chen hard in the face. His own expression hardened as he spoke, "What incredible speed."

Jian Chen looked back at the man without saying a word. He felt okay even after pushing himself to his limits. He had pushed his speed to a rate he had never achieved before. But his attack was essentially dodged by the man, so if Jian Chen wanted to land a killing blow on this man in the future, it would be a lot harder. After all, the man's strength was not weaker than Jian Chen's, and he was also a wind attribute Saint. He would definitely specialize in speed. In other words, it could be said that against this middle-aged man, Jian Chen had lost any type of advantage.

Regardless of how exquisite his swordplay was, if it wasn't faster than the opponent's reaction time, everything would be of no use. In addition, since there was a great difference in their strengths, Jian Chen didn't dare to fight the middle-aged man at close quarters.

“Your strength has already reached Saint Master, right?” Jian Chen asked, his gaze fixed on the middle-aged man opposite of him.

The man didn't bother to hide his shock, “Correct, my strength is at the Middle Saint Master level.” After saying that, he broke off from talking before looking at Jian Chen with an odd stare, “Your strength on the other hand isn't all that strong, and neither is your wind attribute. Your speed just now wasn't slow at all though, so I'm not sure how exactly you reached such a speed.” The man said in a curious tone. Right now his mind really wanted to know the answer. As a person with the wind attribute, if he was beaten in any other aspects, he wouldn't have thought much about it. But in terms of surpassing him in speed, this raised a question that he couldn't easily give up on solving. Jian Chen had beaten him in speed while having much less strength than him and without having a wind attributed Saint Force, so the man couldn't help but be curious.

“My apologies, but I have no comment about this question.” Jian Chen replied evenly.

Hearing this, the other man's stare hardened as he sneered, “If you tell me what trick you did in order to make yourself faster, then I will let you leave this place alive. Otherwise, hmph, do you think you could be a match for me with that type of speed?”

“Whether or not I am able to keep up, why don't you come and see?” Jian Chen replied to the man's threat. Jian Chen wasn't scared; on the contrary, he was now fully prepared to fight as he

clenched the still bloody Light Wind Sword. It continued to emit Sword Qi from the tip of the blade, and it surrounded Jian Chen's entire body.

The man continued to stare at Jian Chen; the glare in his eye never receded. In his mind, he still had some misgivings about Jian Chen's speed. Although Jian Chen had such a fast rate of speed, he did not have a wind attributed Saint Force, so he did not have the inborn advantage that the middle aged man had. Still, he wasn't able to replicate Jian Chen's speed himself—dodging the sword strike from earlier had taken all of his strength to pull off. If he was just a tiny bit slower, then the man had no doubts that his own heart would have been pierced straight through. For that reason, he was somewhat afraid of the consequences of fighting against Jian Chen.

Not only that, but looking at Jian Chen's unblemished clothes, he could roughly guess how fast Jian Chen could move without breaking a sweat. If Jian Chen could move so fast continuously like this, then it would eventually take a huge strain on him.

Seeing how the man wasn't attacking, Jian Chen also began to idle about, and began to slowly watch every single movement. Jian Chen knew that in this case, where his speed was slower than his enemy, then his chances of landing a fatal blow on the man would be practically non-existent. All he could do now was to hinder the man so that he wouldn't be able to kill the weaker mercenaries. If he waited long enough, then the mercenary experts would come back and help deal with him instead of Jian Chen.

The fighting didn't stop as the two stared at each other. The

sounds of battle could still be heard, as both sides kept losing more of their numbers. The floor was dyed red with blood to the point that on some bumpy ground, puddles of blood had formed.

The bandits continued to fight with everything they had. The people who managed to survive were excellent figures that had either outstanding brains or brawn. At the moment, both the mercenaries and bandits had an equal amount of people.

The two continued to stand there before finally, one of them made a move. With the wind enwrapping the Guan Dao, the blade resembled a crescent moon in the night as the man ran towards Jian Chen with the 2 meter long blade in hand.

Seeing the man come forward to attack, Jian Chen's eyes flashed dangerously as he brought his Light Wind Sword up in preparation to defend.

The man brought his cyan Guan Dao down towards Jian Chen's head at an extremely fast speed.

Since he was fighting a Middle Saint Master, Jian Chen didn't plan on meeting this attack head on, and nimbly dodged to the side.

However, as Jian Chen stabbed with his sword, the man's Guan Dao changed direction in midair and whistled through the air, as it parried Jian Chen's sword.

Jian Chen's face changed as he immediately brought back his sword, reluctant to go against the man's Guan Dao.

Jian Chen's Light Wind Sword was the equivalent to his Saint Force's life. His life was connected to the frail looking sword, so if his sword were to be injured, then Jian Chen's own life would be too. And if his Light Wind Sword were to break then Jian Chen would lose all of his cultivation, and his life would be threatened.

On the Tian Yuan Continent, the cases in which people had died due to their Saint Weapons being broken were commonly seen. It practically happened everywhere. But with the Saint Weapon being a representation of one's inner Saint Force's condensation, when summoned outside the body, it would become unimaginably hard. Moreover, it would grow harder as the owner improved. Thus, unless one were to fight someone stronger than him by a large amount, their Saint Weapons would never break.

Since his opponent's strength was already at the Middle Saint Master, he was higher than Jian Chen's strength by two whole levels. So if Jian Chen's Light Wind Sword were to collide against the man's Guan Dao, then he would definitely take some damage. Jian Chen couldn't afford this happening, so he had to try to avoid a collision between the weapons at all cost; after all, he would be the only one to suffer from a loss.

Once again dodging the man's attack, Jian Chen noticed the man's defenses momentarily showing a large gap. Taking advantage of the rare opportunity, Jian Chen immediately moved towards the man with a silent Profound Steps and stabbed the Light Wind Sword towards the man's back with a red flash . The

sword whistled silently as it traveled through the air, the sound making it seem like the sword had cut through the air itself. Its speed had reached its peak as it approached the man's back. Enveloped with Sword Qi, the sword slashed through the man's clothing, and then embedded itself into his back, breaking through his skin.

Feeling a painful sensation in his back, the man's face changed immediately, but he displayed no signs of immediate panic. He hadn't been fully prepared for Jian Chen's speed, so the wound on his back continued to spray blood as his Saint Force condensed itself to take care of his wounds. At the same time, the man began to glow bright with cyan light as his speed started to increase rapidly. Before he could even leave a shadow on the ground or for Jian Chen's Light Wind Sword to completely stab into his back, the man immediately leaned towards the side and escaped from the Light Wind Sword's range.

The man had already guessed that Jian Chen would stab out with all his strength. At this moment Jian Chen's own guard was at its weakest. Thus, the middle aged man also grasped onto this difficult opportunity. Dodging the stab, he immediately brought his Guan Dao high into the air, causing the twinkling cyan color of light to resemble a dazzling moon in the night. With the Guan Dao left high in the air, it emitted a sharp glow as it flew towards Jian Chen. This blow contained all of the man's remaining strength.

Seeing how Jian Chen had fought earlier, the man had already known from previous experiences that Jian Chen would be a hard opponent. Due to Jian Chen's bountiful battle experience, he never had any holes in his defenses. So no matter if it was his attack or defense, his style of fighting could be said to be flawless, with

absolutely no gaps. This was especially true since his sword had used all of Jian Chen's abilities this time. Most likely, the only situation where the man could've heavily damaged Jian Chen was if Jian Chen's technique wasn't strong enough. Thus, the middle-aged man didn't have the slightest intention of holding back this attack of his.

The Guan Dao streaked across the air so quickly, that if it was aimed towards weaker people, then they would have had no time to react at all.

“Hua!”

With an explosive shout, the man brought the cyan colored Guan Dao down towards the defenseless Jian Chen's head. From his upper body stroke, the Guan Dao did not decrease in speed at all and smashed fiercely into the ground.

The smash contained all of the man's strength as the Guan Dao exploded into the ground. The blade of the Guan Dao sent all of the surrounding dirt flying into the air, creating a huge hole a meter in diameter. At the same time, Jian Chen's silhouette had completely disintegrated due to this sudden move.

However on the man's face, not a single trace of happiness could be seen; instead, his face hardened in annoyance.

“An afterimage!” The man cried out in alarm. However, as his mind came to this conclusion, an intense feeling of a crisis struck the man's thoughts. Without hesitation, the man leapt towards the

side with his natural reflexes, simultaneously picking up his Guan Dao from the ground and blindly swinging it behind himself.

“Ding!”

A loud sound could be heard as the man’s Guan Dao swung back and suddenly collided with the Jian Chen’s bloody sword.

Just as the sword and Guan Dao collided, Jian Chen’s face suddenly changed. He immediately paled as he felt an intense churning sensation in his stomach, and he immediately retreated.

Chapter 76: Using Tai Ji Against The Enemy

Jian Chen retreated 20 meters before stopping. There was no longer an easy-going look on his face. Instead, he was now deathly pale.

There was just too much of a difference between their strengths. Jian Chen could only compete on even ground in terms of agility, but he had just taken a huge loss from the collision between their Saint Weapons. Although it hadn't done too much damage to him, the middle aged man's Saint Force was many times stronger than Jian Chen's, and that blow alone had caused his Light Wind Sword to transmit a huge shock wave which caused some minor internal injuries.

The man steadied himself as he stared down Jian Chen. This had been the third time he had nearly taken damage, so he didn't dare belittle Jian Chen anymore. Although Jian Chen was weaker than him, he was relying on a speed that was faster than the man's own. This was a major threat to the man, and he had acknowledged that Jian Chen was stronger than someone of the man's level.

However, as he looked at the state Jian Chen was in, he suddenly understood what had just happened and began to laugh, "Brat, I admit that you are very fast, but your strength is just far too weak." Without even waiting for Jian Chen to catch his breath, he immediately flew forward with his 2 meter long Guan Dao ready to cleave him in two.

Because of the collision between the Light Wind Sword and the Guan Dao, Jian Chen had suffered some damage. Since his

opponent was two levels higher than himself and had reached Middle Saint level, the impacts of these light injuries were fatal. After all, Jian Chen had been able to use the Profound Steps to fight against his opponent during his peak state only. But now that he was in an injured state, he was no longer capable of being so nimble; dodging attacks had already expended his energy.

As the man continued to exchange blows with Jian Chen, he had realized that the threat Jian Chen originally was to him was slowly decreasing, causing his guard to similarly slacken. Using all of his strength, he struck out towards Jian Chen, hoping for a fatal blow. His speed was even faster than before.

With the man's speed growing faster, Jian Chen was using up more and more energy. If he was in perfect condition, then not only would Jian Chen have an easier time dodging the man, but he would have been able to fight back as well. But now that he was injured, he could only dodge without attacking, and since the man was quickly increasing his movement speed, Jian Chen's every dodge was getting more and more dangerous.

The man's blows were getting exponentially faster. He managed to attack dozens of times within an instant, and at this point, blood-stained cuts had appeared in Jian Chen's clothes, since he no longer had the ability to counter. However, it could be seen that Jian Chen's wounds weren't very deep.

The cyan colored light lit up the night as the man's Guan Dao cut through the night air towards Jian Chen.

Although Jian Chen tried his best to dodge the blade, his

movements had already become a lot slower than before, and so he failed to dodge it completely. The Guan Dao left a cut so deep that the bone could be seen on his chest, and a torrent of blood started to leak out onto Jian Chen's clothes.

The man gave a fierce laugh as he continued to slash at him. Taking advantage of how Jian Chen didn't move away, the man drew closer. Lightning fast, he kicked out his right foot covered in a cyan light at Jian Chen's chest.

“Bang!”

The man's kicked sent Jian Chen flying backwards like a bullet. While his body was in the air, Jian Chen couldn't help but spit out a mouthful of blood. as he flew 20 meters backwards past a few bandits before falling to the ground. Afterwards, Jian Chen spat out another mouthful of blood. By now, his face had turned deathly white.

With a cyan flash of light, the man strode over 20 meters towards the floored Jian Chen and sneered, “I'll give you this one last chance. If you tell me whatever secret it is that made you so fast, then I'll spare your life. If not, then you will die!” The man's eyes flashed with blazing curiosity, and his heart raced at the thought of becoming faster with Jian Chen's technique. To a wind attributed person, speed was an extremely crucial thing to him. Although he didn't dare to think that his speed would reach a new level, he was certain it would improve his strength and increase his position within the Boundless Bandits.

Thinking about this, the man felt extremely excited. He trembled

almost as if he was angry, but he was actually stirred up from his emotions.

Jian Chen wiped away the blood from his mouth and slowly stood back up as he glared at the man with an icy look. With a small sneer, he said, "I'm afraid you're not strong enough for it." Despite just being dealt a serious injury, Jian Chen didn't seem to fear the difference in strength between them.

As he talked, Jian Chen was readjusting himself into a relaxed position, almost as if he wasn't bothering to guard himself. His right hand had loosened up his grip on his sword; his current state was completely different from the previous him..

Jian Chen's words caused the other man's face to sink. He snorted, "Brat, with your strength, you don't have the qualifications to say that. If you're not willing to tell me, then you'd better be prepared to suffer for your own actions." Mid-speech, the man had already started to run towards Jian Chen with his Guan Dao swinging down at Jian Chen's right shoulder.

Despite seeing the man approach, Jian Chen showed no signs of wanting to dodge. Instead, he brought his sword back up. Although his sword was moving at the same speed, it appeared as if the sword was as light as a feather, and was floating elegantly in the air. This was completely different from the killing intent he had previously displayed

The Light Wind Sword and Guan Dao collided with each other without making any sound. Afterwards, the softer looking Light Wind Sword attached onto the Guan Dao like a maggot on a

wound, and diverted the Guan Dao's original trajectory. The sword twisted itself in a circle a few times, and immediately transferred the momentum of the Guan Dao cleanly towards the side, causing it to fall to the ground.

The man's face changed as he looked at Jian Chen with amazement. Just now, he had been unable to control the movements of his own Guan Dao. If he had been facing an opponent that was only slightly weaker than him, then he wouldn't have been so amazed. But against Jian Chen who was by far the inferior person, the man was not really able to accept what had just happened.

“What technique was that?” The man asked with a look of disbelief.

“Tai Ji Jian” Jian Chen answered. When it came to Tai Ji Jian, he wasn't all that proficient at it. However, he had still been in contact with it enough times to understand the Tai Ji Jian's philosophy of “using softness to conquer strength”; it was the principle of deflecting weapons. Now that he was not only weaker than his opponent, but also in a state where his energy was all but gone now, Jian Chen was forced to use the Tai Ji Jian techniques that he wasn't very proficient in to block the attack.

TL Note: <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Taijijian>

Tai Ji Jian emphasized the idea of “using softness to conquer strength” in order for the weak to beat the strong. With the ability to deflect attacks in such a way, this would prove to be extremely beneficial to Jian Chen at this current moment. The only flaw was

that Jian Chen only had a few ideas on what Tai Ji Jian was like, and was not good at it at all. After all, he was a master of the One Hand Swift Sword style. Nonetheless, it was proving helpful to Jian Chen against the man at that moment.

The man's eyebrows creased together as he ran the word through his head. Soon after, he shook his head and said, "Tai Ji Jian, I've never heard of it." His eyes looked at Jian Chen in a confused manner before laughing, "Brat, although you're quite weak, I didn't think you would know so many techniques. It seems that killing you would be a waste; I should capture you instead. This would be a pretty great favor towards you as well." The man moved towards Jian Chen once more with his Saint Force enhanced Guan Dao in hand. He had come to a decision that no matter what, he would capture Jian Chen. Although the Tai Ji Jian technique wasn't something he was extremely determined to learn, the man seriously wanted to figure out the technique that had allowed Jian Chen to move so fast.

Jian Chen used his Tai Ji Jian to deal with his opponent. With its profound ways of dealing with each attack from the man, the man felt as if he no longer had any control over his own Guan Dao.

Although he wasn't very proficient in it, Jian Chen's Tai Ji Jian made the man's strong strength seem practically non-existent. However, it was taking an extraordinary amount of effort on Jian Chen's part. Despite Tai Ji Jian allowing one to deflect and divert another person's attacks, Jian Chen was only just a Saint, so it was taking all of his energy to break away the man's monstrous strength from his Guan Dao and send it elsewhere. So while it looked easy to do, it was actually hard to pull off.

But using Tai Ji Jian was only a temporary defensive method, and not an offensive one. He could only block attacks without being able to capitalize on an opportunity to attack. If it weren't for the fact that his opponent was pressuring him with his attacks, then Jian Chen would definitely not use the Tai Ji Jian.

After a few more moments of close combat, the man was gradually getting angrier and angrier. Every single time he had struck out towards the weaker person, Jian Chen had used his strange technique to change the trajectory of his attack. This caused him to lose control of his Saint Weapon, and to him, this was utter humiliation.

“You bastard, I don't believe that this is all I can do to you!” The man flew into a rage. He was no longer able to contain his fury, as he continued to curse at Jian Chen fiercely.

Soon after, the man's strength grew even stronger, causing Jian Chen to struggle even more to defend himself. His face was already drenched with sweat as his Saint Force was slowly starting to dry up.

Chapter 77: Battle Skill

The man's wild attacks were pushing Jian Chen to his limit. After all, Jian Chen was still using all of his might to use his barely proficient knowledge of Tai Ji Jian to deflect the man's moves. Each time Jian Chen had blocked and diverted the enemy's Guan Dao, a large part of his Saint Force was used up. With the both of them fiercely fighting it out, they had already used up more than half of their Saint Forces'. Since Jian Chen had a serious gash across his chest, he was starting to feel quite weak as time went on, even just blocking was getting harder now.

Jian Chen's beginning Saint strength was able to contend with a Middle Saint Master thanks to his higher expertise with the sword and his past experiences from the countless number of battles he had been in his past life. If it was another person with Jian Chen's strength, then it would be hard to say if they would be able to last 10 rounds against the man's storm-like blows.

After all, the difference between a Saint and a Saint Master was huge; there were at least two levels separating the two.

The cyan colored blade ripped through the air once more as it slashed down towards the Light Wind Sword. At last, Jian Chen wasn't able to deflect the Guan Dao's frightening power, and his sword was sent recoiling backwards. While the Light Wind Sword wasn't hurt in any way, it had been forced back into Jian Chen's chest with a loud bang.

The crash caused Jian Chen to be sent flying backwards 10 meters, before falling onto the ground. He spat out yet another

mouthful of blood, filling the sky with droplets of it.

“Brat, I can tell that you don’t even have the energy to escape from my blows now. Just be obedient and come along with me.” The man sneered. Without waiting for Jian Chen to answer, he moved once more, and in a flash, he appeared 10 meters ahead where Jian Chen was. He reached out, and grabbed at Jian Chen neck with both hands.

Coldly looking at the man come closer with his hands outstretched, Jian Chen’s eyes flashed with a dangerous glint as he inwardly sighed, “Ai, seems like I have to use my last resort.”

The last resort was Jian Chen’s ultimate life saving skill. It was the one skill that only he within the Tian Yuan Continent would know—the Soul Sword.

The Soul Sword was learned back when he had fought against Dugu Qiubai a long time ago. At his moment of death, he had made a breakthrough and learned this supreme skill.

Yet, just as Jian Chen was about to use his ultimate skill in this predicament, a bright red glow of light suddenly filled up the night sky. It headed towards the middle aged man, who was currently about to capture Jian Chen.

Seeing the giant red sword out of the corner of his eye, the man let loose a look of disdain as he gave a gentle snort. Moving away from Jian Chen, the cyan colored glow in his right arm began to brighten dramatically, essentially covering his entire arm in a

shroud. The man's wind attributed Saint Force enhanced arm lashed towards the fiery red sword, firmly catching it in his hand.

Taking advantage of this situation, Jian Chen immediately crawled up from the ground and looked at the person who had rescued him with a gratuitous look.

The owner of the red sword was a mercenary that looked to be around 20 or 30 years old with an ordinary appearance—the type of person that would blend in with a crowd easily. Yet, this mercenary was no stranger to Jian Chen; this was the kind person he had talked to on the road—Mu Yun.

The middle aged man sneered at the sword wielding Mu Yun, “You overestimate yourself.”

Hearing the man talk, Mu Yun expressed a strange smile and laughed, “You’re only just a Middle Saint Master yourself, not all that much stronger than me. I can say what I please.” Mu Yun’s sword emitted a splendid glow as well as a high temperature. In the night, his sword lit up the area around them with a strong glow. The temperature around them also steadily increased. In just a few moments, the red sword became entirely enshrouded in a blinding fiery red. The light constantly pulsated, making it seem as if the sword was actually on fire.

Feeling the Saint Force surge in endless waves from the sword, the man furrowed his eyebrows together. He let go of the blade, and then fiercely slammed his hand against the blade.

“Bang!”

Receiving the energy-filled blow from the man, Mu Yun’s sword was sent towards the side. But with Mu Yun’s battle experience, he took advantage of this sudden movement to whirl around. The sword traveled in a circular motion as Mu Yun immediately slashed at the man once more.

“Since you want to die, I’ll grant you your wish!” The man bellowed, his Guan Dao flashing with a cyan glow as he waved his weapon around. A gentle breeze accompanied his weapon as it flew towards the fire red sword.

“Clang!”

Mu Yun’s sword and the man’s Guan Dao collided with each other, causing a loud metallic sound to ring out. The moment the two Saint Weapons separated, Mu Yun staggered 10 meters backwards. On the other hand, the middle-aged man stood as steady as Mt Tai, without any indication of moving.

A single glance was enough to see who was the weaker one, and who was the stronger one.

Standing on the side, Jian Chen knew that Mu Yun was still weaker than the other man by a large amount. However, Mu Yun was still stronger than himself, and by Jian Chen’s estimates, Mu Yun’s strength should put him between a Middle Great Saint or a Peak Great Saint. Despite this, he was still much weaker than the other man. Since the man specialized in speed thanks to his wind

attribute, he was weaker in terms of attack strength than the fire attributed Mu Yun. The fire attribute was the rarest attribute after the light and dark attributes, and it was publically known as the strongest attribute in terms of strength.

If the man relied on his wind attributed Saint Force to fight, then he would be able to dominate the fire attributed Mu Yun. And if the man were to show the special characteristics of his wind attribute and fight against Mu Yun, then Jian Chen was certain that Mu Yun would not be able to last long in a fight against him.

But if he and Mu Yun were to join together and fight, then he was sure that they would be able to beat the middle aged man.

The unfortunate thing was that Jian Chen had taken in heavy damages already; the vital parts of his body had each taken a beating from the fight. In his current state, helping Mu Yun was out of the question. Just standing there was already an abnormally strenuous task.

Attacking Mu Yun, the middle aged man's eyes flashed with strong killing intent. He didn't give Mu Yun time to even readjust himself before gathering the wind around his Guan Dao, and rushing forward, leaving only an after image where he had stood earlier. In an instant, he appeared in front of Mu Yun, and chopped at his head with extreme speed.

When it came to Mu Yun, the other man didn't restrain himself. The moment Mu Yun appeared, the man had tried to kill him. After all, Mu Yun didn't have any special characteristics that peaked his interest.

Mu Yun's face hardened. He shouted in anger as the sword in his hand suddenly grew even more red, emitting a boiling hot temperature. At the same time, a flame burst into existence and engulfed the sword within itself. With the fire sword, Mu Yun then brandished it towards the wind wrapped Guan Dao.

The moment Mu Yun waved his sword, it transformed into three giant snakes of fire. The first two flew out towards the Guan Dao, while the last one flew towards the enemy himself.

“Bang!”

The Guan Dao and the fire snakes collided with a huge crash. The two flaming snakes had been cut in half by the Guan Dao, causing sparks to fly out everywhere. If one were to look at it from far away, the sight looked like it was a flower that was getting ready to bloom.

While the first two snakes had been stopped by the Guan Dao, the third snake had become like a fierce tiger, increasing in temperature as it traveled through the air towards the man.

Just as the third fire snake was flying towards the middle aged man, his right hand loosened its grip on the Guan Dao. The man gathered the wind Saint Force into his fist, and blew it out towards the fire snake.

The fist made contact with the fire snake causing a resonating crash. Dispersing into the air, the fire snake sent sparks flying

throughout the night sky for a while before disappearing into the night.

After blowing the fire snake apart with his fist, the man stopped his attack to glance at Mu Yu in astonishment as he cried out in alarm, “This is a battle skill, to think you actually knew one.” No one had discovered that the man’s right fist had actually turned bright red, and had even swelled up in size.

Hearing what the man said, Jian Chen looked at Mu Yun with an amazed look. Jian Chen wasn’t very familiar with battle skills, but he knew that they were a cultivational treasure within the Tian Yuan Continent. It was possible to increase one’s strength multiple times with them, and were not things that ordinary people would be able to get their hands on. Jian Chen hadn’t thought that the ordinary looking mercenary like Mu Yun would unexpectedly have such an expensive item. Since battle skills were so rare and expensive, even Great Saint Masters couldn’t possibly possess them.

Battle skills had both high and low points. Although this was the first time Jian Chen had left his home to travel in the Tian Yuan Continent, he had read many books in the library, and thus was not inferior in any way to some of the more experienced mercenaries in terms of knowledge. With his foresight, he could tell with a single glance that both Mu Yun’s battle skills and cultivation methods were definitely top-ranked. This was because ordinary battle skills and cultivation methods were nowhere adequate enough to be able to produce material flames based on just Mu Yun’s strength as a Great Saint.

Chapter 78: Cruel Victory

Mu Yun smiled coldly and said, “You do know something after all. That’s right, this is indeed a battle skill!”

The man inhaled sharply as he looked at Mu Yun with a greedy expression. Battle skills were highly treasured on the Tian Yuan Continent, and aside from the clans that spanned across multiple generations and experts, no other ordinary cultivator would have one. Although some cultivators came across some battle skills by luck, such occurrences were very few in Tian Yun Continent. If one didn’t have a profound destiny and extreme fortune, then the chances of getting a battle skill were practically nonexistent.

Although the man was a Middle Saint Master and was considered a strong expert in the Boundless Bandits, he still hadn’t grasped a battle skill yet. Just the sight of one had him drooling. Unfortunately for him, his strength didn’t reach the qualifications necessary to receive a battle skill from the bandits.

The middle-aged man lightly moved his right fist, and felt a flash of burning hot pain. But he did not have any anger in his heart, and was feeling quite excited instead. With his knowledge, one look was enough to distinguish that the battle skill that Mu Yun had used was highly advanced. Although he was a wind attribute, this did not stop the man from desiring the fire attributed battle skill at all. After all, battle skills were priceless treasures on the Tian Yuan Continent, and the stronger the skill, the more expensive it was.

“Haha, the gods have certainly been looking out for me today.

Youngsters, your techniques will become mine!” The man laughed loudly with extreme excitement. To him, both Jian Chen’s secret speed technique and Mu Yun’s battle skill would be easily taken and learned.

“How arrogant! You look too highly upon yourself.” Mu Yun sneered. Raising his hand, the red sword immediately ignited as the flames lit up the night. Slashing at the man, the hidden aura of the sword spread out in every direction. However, the amount was so small that its aura was virtually undetectable.

But for someone like Jian Chen who had a powerful “Soul”, this faint aura could clearly be detected. The moment he had realized the source of the aura, his eyes widened in surprise.

Seeing the sword bring forth a blatantly powerful pressure, the man sneered, “Brat, although you have a special battle skill, your strength is still far too weak!” The moment the fiery greatsword made contact with the man’s clothes, he disappeared into an after image, causing Mu Yun’s sword to swish into empty air.

The instant the man disappeared from sight, Mu Yun’s face hardened in concentration. Suddenly, an ear-piercing whistle of a blade could be heard coming from the back. Mu Yun instantaneously changed his sword into three giant snakes and made it fly behind him. While in mid-air, the three snakes fused together, and turned into an even bigger fire serpent.

“Clang!”

The sound of metal hitting something resonated through the air as the fire serpent engulfed both Mu Yun and his opponent. The collision had caused the fire to spread out in every direction for a few dozen meters. When the red ripple of energy swept past Jian Chen, their extremely hot temperatures caused Jian Chen's clothes to blacken from the heat. If it were not for the fact that his clothes were already damp from his blood, then his clothes might have spontaneously ignited into flames.

In the brilliant blaze, both Mu Yun and the middle aged man staggered backwards, the both of them looked haggard from the trade off. Mu Yun's originally tidy hair had become messy, while his face had become pale in color. Even his fiery greatsword had started to lose a bit of its luster.

As for the middle aged man, while he had been enveloped by his wind attributed Saint Force, his clean clothes had already started to show signs of burn spots. Both of his sleeves had already been blown apart.

Because of the use of a battle skill, the fight between Mu Yun and the middle aged man was on a much larger scale than the man's fight with Jian Chen. The blaze attracted both the mercenaries and bandits around them, causing both sides to immediately notice the fight out of the corners of their eyes. The moment they saw the radiant blaze, some of the mercenaries further away cried out in astonishment.

“Those are real flames! Unless one is an Earth Saint Master, it's impossible to summon flames out of nowhere. Could it be...that's a battle skill!?”

“Battle skill? It’s a battle skill!”

“So someone here knew a battle skill!”

Whether it was a bandit or mercenary, when they saw that Mu Yun possessed a battle skill, they all cried out in amazement. None of them could believe what they were seeing. Battle skills were extremely rare and expensive on the Tian Yuan Continent. Common mercenaries would normally live their lives without even once witnessing a battle skill.

After their shocks wore off, every mercenary’s and bandit’s eyes started to fill with greed. Battle skills were what cultivators in the Tian Yuan Continent desired most; their thirst for these skills far surpassed their desires for cultivation methods. Battle skills allowed one to increase their strength many times more than usual, so many people often fought to the death for these skills. Having a battle skill meant gaining an additional source of protection.

Seeing the greed in their eyes, Jian Chen couldn’t help but to narrow his eyes. He knew just as much as anyone that people would become jealous of another person’s strength. Mu Yun’s battle skill had far surpassed what Jian Chen had thought, and now it had been revealed in front of all the mercenaries. Battle skills were treasured greatly, and would bring great trouble to those that had them. Even losing his life over this battle skill wasn’t unlikely, since Mu Yun was still considered weak.

Right now, not only did Jian Chen take comfort from Mu Yun, but he was also worried for his well-being. Although the two hadn't known each other for very long, and had only met due to chance, Jian Chen knew that Mu Yun had fought the middle aged man and revealed his battle skill for the sake of rescuing him.

Looking at Mu Yun fervently, the man laughed, "What an amazing battle skill. You even managed to block an attack that contained all my power as a Great Saint!" He paused for a while before sneering once more, "However, you could only temporarily block my Great Saint attack with the aid of the battle skill. Ultimately, it's not your own strength. I wonder how long you can last?" After talking, he lifted his Guan Dao high into the air. Just as he prepared to slash down onto Mu Yun, another strong source of energy suddenly came flying over from the distance.

Feeling the source of energy, the middle aged man grew joyous. He assumed that it was from the experts that the mercenary captains were trying to kill but failed, and his comrades were now coming to provide assistance for him.

Arriving from the far away shadows, a few figures were running towards them at a rapid pace. In a few moments, the figures suddenly came into everyone's line of sight. The moment everyone could clearly see who they were, all the mercenaries cried out in joy.

"The captains! The captains came back!"

"Captain Lang Tian, the captain came back victorious!"

“There’s Captain Xia Hou as well, they killed the experts of the Boundless Bandits!”

Lit up by the intense blaze nearby, everyone could see that the five returning members had wounds of all sizes on them. Their clothes were drenched with blood, and some of them were even carrying corpses over their shoulders.

Hearing the shouts from the mercenaries, the middle aged man and the other bandits all turned unsightly. Immediately, the man turned his head and stared at the returning Xia Hou and his men with a look of disbelief.

“How...just how...how were you able to return alive?” The man asked in disbelief as he swallowed some saliva nervously as he tried to get the words out. The middle aged man knew that their return indicated that his bandit group had already faced imminent disaster. Otherwise, the ones returning would have been his own faction’s experts, not the mercenary group’s people.

The man’s words caused all five members to look at him. Immediately, the five slowly put down the bodies they were carrying and glared at him with powerful murderous intent.

Feeling the killing intent of the five, the middle aged man’s heart raced. Without hesitation, he opened his mouth to say, “The situation is looking bad, everyone retreat!” Without even finishing his sentence, the middle aged man had already dismissed his Guan Dao and used his fastest speed to run away. Although the five

mercenaries were all somewhat injured, a starving camel was still bigger than a horse. With five people, the middle aged man had no hopes of winning.

The moment the man had started to move, two of the five mercenaries immediately chased after him.

Hearing the man's earlier words, the bandits all started to give up the fight and scattered in all four directions.

“Kill! Don't leave a single one alive!”

Hearing that one command, all of the remaining mercenaries immediately sprung to follow it, and began to chase down the fleeing bandits. The mercenaries hated the Boundless Bandits down to their very bones, so they would had never let the bandits run off that easily.

With their experts all dead and the only capable member running away, all of the bandits immediately focused on running away. All of their fighting spirit had practically been wiped out. On the other hand, the mercenaries had their courage bolstered after their captains had returned alive after defeating the experts from the Boundless Bandits. Even the ones who were exhausted had suddenly gained a new spurt of energy and did everything they could to chase and kill the bandits.

The sounds of slaughter rang through the night, but it quickly became peaceful once more as as the remaining three mercenary experts led the mercenaries and killed the majority of the bandits.

Only a few of the really fast ones had managed to run away with their lives.

“Victory! We’ve won!”

“The Boundless Bandits were beaten by us!”

“We’ve beaten the Boundless Bandits!”

Once the battle came to a close, the remaining mercenaries all started to cheer loudly. The Boundless Bandits were a great nightmare to the mercenaries, the personification of the gods of death that couldn’t be beaten. Beating the Boundless Bandits was definitely an achievement they were extremely proud of.

Chapter 79: Picking Up The Pieces

At that moment, two shadowy figures came running back, only to stop in front of a group of mercenaries. These were the mercenaries that had chased after the middle aged man.

The two males looked to be around 30 or 40 years old. Both of their faces were covered with blood and their bodies were filled with wounds which dyed their clothes scarlet with blood. However while their faces were pale from their fatigue, their eyes were still full of vigor.

Seeing the two come back empty handed, it was clear that the middle aged man had escaped.

“Ai, that guy has a wind attribute, so he had an advantage over us in speed. Although our strength was better than his, in our current condition, we weren’t able to chase him, so he escaped in the end.” One of the two said, his voice was brimming with regret.

“Forget it, if he ran, he ran. I didn’t think we’d run into the Boundless Bandits, no wonder they were so strong. If it weren’t for our mysterious benefactor in the shadows, then I’m afraid we wouldn’t have been able to come back. For him to save our lives, he is definitely a trusted person.” An older person said as he stood next to the brilliant flames, already his skin was starting to look a little tanned.

Hearing the man talk, the other mercenaries who had returned after killing some bandits all were stunned. From their faces, all of

them had some joy but some still had some lingering fear.

“Captain Lang Tian, are you okay?” A mercenary went up to the man and asked with a worried tone.

The newly named Lang Tian slowly looked down on the various wounds before shaking his head, “I’ve some wounds, but nothing that’ll kill me.” He looked at the few mercenaries around him before sighing. With a sorrowful voice, he said, “It’s a shame, Yun Bai Mu, the captain of the Desert Shadows Mercenaries was killed by the experts of the Boundless Bandits.”

Hearing the announcement, many of the mercenaries started to grieve, especially the mercenaries of the Desert Shadows. It was a heavy blow to their mood, however, for travelers of the Tian Yuan Continent, seeing someone die was an experience many of them were used to. After a small period of mourning, many of the mercenaries had already become peaceful once more.

“My comrades, although we managed to beat back the Boundless Bandits, this was only just a small group. If we were to come across a larger group or even their elites, then we will die on the road. So we cannot afford to stay here for long, hurry up and dress your wounds and bury our dead brothers. We will have to leave immediately afterwards.” Lang Tian announced.

Each mercenary immediately got to work by helping each other bandage their wounds and applying herbal medicine. Those who were healthier and less injured went to help dig holes and transport the bodies.

Everyone set themselves to do their tasks in silence. No one talked at all, and as each mercenary did their own thing, the atmosphere was incomparably heavy.

Jian Chen looked around himself before inwardly sighing, they had ultimately won against the Boundless Bandits, but to him, this was a wretched victory. After the course of one battle, the three mercenary groups had dwindled down to less than a hundred people that were for the most part injured. Their entire fighting capabilities had been reduced to a third of their original power, and from the original ten experts that had led the charge, only five of them returned with heavy wounds. One of the mercenary captains was killed in battle, causing another sharp decline in their power.

“Jian Chen, are you alright? Are your wounds serious?” A familiar voice called out behind Jian Chen.

Hearing this, Jian Chen turned his head around to see Mu Yun. He didn’t know when Mu Yun had got behind him, but he was there now.

At the moment Mu Yun’s condition wasn’t all that good. His facial color was an abnormally pale one, and although he had looked fine while fighting against the middle aged man, the battle skill placed a heavy burden on Mu Yun after using it to surpass his strength.

Jian Chen softly shook his head, “I’m fine,” Pausing slightly, he

looked at Mu Yun with a complicated look. “Mu Yun, your battle skill was revealed to every mercenary here. On the road, you’ll have to be even more careful now, and when you reach a safe spot, get away from the group as far as possible. Otherwise, I’m afraid they’ll try to do something.”

Mu Yun looked around at the busy mercenaries, “Jian Chen, I thank you for your concerns, I’ll be careful from now on.” Although he had said that, Mu Yun’s expression did not look at all concerned at the people around him. When it came the mercenaries, Mu Yun did not see them as a challenge at all.

Taking note of Mu Yun’s unconcerned stare, Jian Chen was slightly amazed. Despite the strength Mu Yun had shown during his fight, Jian Chen didn’t think would be able to protect himself within the group.

Mu Yun took out a white jade bottle from his Space Ring and held it towards Jian Chen, “This is a top notch healing medication, drink it and heal yourself up.”

“Thanks!” Jian Chen didn’t decline his offer and took the bottle from him.

“Don’t worry about it, I’m going to treat my own wounds first and then go help the others.” Mu Yun waved before walking away from Jian Chen.

Two hours later, everything was in order as all the dead mercenaries were buried while ignoring the corpses of the

Boundless Bandits. The mercenaries hated the Boundless Bandits even after they died, and so they wouldn't bother to pay their respects by burying their bodies.

During those two hours, Jian Chen had casually treated his wounds and already swapped out the bloody clothes from his fight with the middle aged man with a new set. Before they had set out on the trip, Jian Chen had prepared a few dozen sets of clothes, so he wasn't worried about running out.

“Let's go!”

After everyone was ready, someone called out for them all to start moving. Everyone was prepared to move into the night without stopping for rest or sleep. Ever since the ambush by the Boundless Bandits, the caravans no longer wished to stay around any longer. Even taking a break would not do.

After the ambush from the Boundless Bandits, the caravan's strength had been greatly diminished, leaving them with very little manpower. Since many members of the Boundless Bandits had escaped, if they were to bring back a bigger unit to attack them, then the caravan would not be able to survive, let alone think about trying to reverse such an abysmal situation.

Jian Chen painstakingly climbed onto his own horse, and began to blindly follow the caravans in the dark. Atop the horse's back, Jian Chen sat with his eyes closed, as he quietly manipulated his Saint Force to heal his internal injuries. He had previously received quite a few heavy attacks from the middle-aged man, so the damage Jian Chen was suffering was quite severe. Moreover, he

had consumed a large chunk of his internal Saint Force already, so his current body's condition made even the simplest movements difficult to carry out, let alone fighting. Since Jian Chen was currently traversing the Tian Yuan Continent, and could encounter danger at any moment, his strength was most important. Thus, Jian Chen continued to expend all his effort in trying to recover his own strength, without daring to stop for even a second.

The caravan quickly advanced on the road. Since the people were afraid of reinforcements from the Boundless Bandits chasing them, their current speed was many times faster than their previous traveling pace. Despite this, it was still only slightly faster than the average person running at their peak speed. After all, the carriages contained many goods, so speeding up further was impossible, even if they wanted to. The current speed had already nearly flipped the carriages multiple times whenever they had passed through uneven parts of the road.

Because of the current situation, Jian Chen didn't dare to completely enter a self-healing state. Thus, his severe injuries were only recovering at a snail's pace.

At that moment, Jian Chen couldn't help but recall his mother, Bi Yuntian. He still clearly remembered that time a few years ago when he had injured his third brother, Changyang Ke. Bi Yuntian had unexpectedly healed his injuries as if it were the easiest thing in the world, without leaving a single scar. If there was a Radiant Saint Master at the scene right now, the internal injuries within his body would've probably recovered faster. Unfortunately, Radiant Saint Masters were really too rare, and their statuses were highly esteemed. With the strengths of the three mercenary groups

currently present, there was absolutely no way they could have invited a Radiant Saint Master.

Just as Jian Chen had thought of Radiant Saint Masters, a divine light suddenly flashed within his mind. Immediately, he opened his previously closed eyes, and in that instant, a bright ray of light seemed to shoot out from his eyes in amazement, dying out immediately afterwards.

“That’s right, I can sense light Saint Force, and even gather it. I wonder if I can control the light Saint Force like a Radiant Saint Master would, and be able to heal my own wounds.” Jian Chen pondered this furiously. When he recalled the possibility that he would be able to control light Saint Force just as Radiant Saint Masters could, his heart momentarily surged from the excitement, and was uncontrollably delighted at the thought.

Ever since he saw Bi Yuntian use light Saint Force to heal Changyang Ke’s injuries back at the Changyang household, Jian Chen had realized that this power was exactly the special energy that he felt every time he absorbed the World Essence during cultivation. At the time, Jian Chen had really wanted to test and see if he could control the light Saint Force. Unfortunately, due to the various situations that had occurred since then, he never got to try testing his thoughts. Afterwards, this thought had gradually been pushed further and further back into his mind, and he had forgotten about it until just now.

Chapter 80: Blue Wind Kingdom

Jian Chen took a deep breath and slowly tried to control the emotions in his heart. After he had calmed, he immediately closed his eyes and began to cultivate the World Essence around him. However, there was a difference between the time he had absorbed World Essence in the past compared to now; Jian Chen was able to differentiate the special energy from the World Essence and absorb that specific energy into his body.

Although in theory this was rather simple, it required an extremely strenuous amount of effort when put into practice. However, to Jian Chen who had practiced how to use his “Soul”, this wasn’t that hard; it would only require more concentration than usual.

To the Jian Chen who was strong in spirit, he could detect the special energy mixed in with the World Essence. Aside from Radiant Saint Masters, no one else would be able to detect it. After he had detected the special energy, he immediately used his “Soul” as a vacuum to wildly bring the special energy towards him. As it gathered, Jian Chen absorbed it into his body.

Jian Chen understood that once the special energy had condensed to a certain degree, it would emit a faint white glow. To prevent this from happening, Jian Chen absorbed the energy extremely slowly; almost at a snail’s pace.

After Jian Chen absorbed the special energy into his body, a reinvigorating sensation immediately spread throughout his body. It traveled so quickly that Jian Chen felt as if a ball of warmth had

enveloped him. Being bathed inside with this pleasant sensation, Jian Chen's face let loose an expression of satisfaction.

When the special energy fused with Jian Chen's serious injuries, they started to heal at an extremely fast rate, so fast that Jian Chen was flabbergasted and couldn't believe his eyes. With this, Jian Chen finally understood how fearsome a Radiant Saint Master was when they used their light attribute Saint Force to treat other people's injuries.

"The books said that not only could high level Radiant Saint Masters regrow arms, they could even revive the dead. It would appear that this wasn't a lie. If they could heal injuries like this, then perhaps the Radiant Saint Masters who stood at the peak have truly transcendent skills." Before, Jian Chen had doubted that Radiant Saint Masters could regrow an arm and revive the dead, but after seeing the effectiveness of the energy they used, Jian Chen firmly believed that this was the truth.

While riding, Jian Chen continued to use his Soul to take the Light Saint Force from within the World Essence, before slowly absorbing it into his body. As a result of this constant absorbance, Jian Chen was enveloped in a strange misty fog; it was the special energy that Radiant Saint Masters used. Although there were countless mercenaries nearby, some of them being Great Saint Masters, none of them had noticed Jian Chen's strange appearance.

This Light Saint Force was a special type of energy that, aside from Radiant Saint Masters, no other cultivators would ever be able to perceive. Even if there was an expert at the peak of the

Heaven Saint Master level, they wouldn't be able to perceive it. Because of this, Radiant Saint Masters were exceedingly rare within the Tian Yuan Continent, since every single Radiant Saint Master had to be born with this innate ability. From birth, their spirits had made special contracts with the Light Saint Force. Thus, Radiant Saint Masters were able to perceive its existence. And as their "Souls" grew, they would gradually be able to control the energy.

When the concentration of the Light Saint Force grew to a certain degree, it would become milky white in color. At this point, a cultivator would be able to see the existence of it with their eyes. However, they would not be able to see the Light Saint Force like they would see the World Essence; the Light Saint Force would only be seen as a blank space.

The night went by quickly for the caravan and its mercenaries. For the entire night, no one slept at all. If they were not trying to clean their wounds, they were trying to heighten their concentration to detect movements in their environment; no one wanted to be ambushed by the Boundless Bandits once again.

Under the tense environment of the mercenaries, the night quickly passed and became day. However, the mood did not lighten at all. Although they had long since departed from their previous resting spot, they weren't safe yet. In this area, many different bandit groups could still attack them.

If the mercenaries were in their prime conditions, then they would not fear any bandit group. However after the Boundless Bandits, they were all heavily injured, and had lost many of their

numbers. With their current strength, if they were to come across another bandit group, then they would only be able to put up a bitter struggle.

Although they knew that abandoning some of their goods would help them stay alive, the things that they were delivering were quite precious. Unless it was a last resort, neither the mercenaries nor the merchants were willing to make such a decision.

As the bright, red sun rose overhead, Jian Chen, who had sat without moving for the entire night, finally opened his eyes. Jian Chen could feel a very pleasant and joyous sensation within as he stretched his limbs.

After a single night of therapy, Jian Chen's body, which would have normally taken five or six days to heal from the grievous wounds, had been completely restored. Even his nearly used up Saint Force had reached a level of saturation that put Jian Chen back at the peak of his strength.

Not only that, but Jian Chen could clearly tell that his Saint Force was even bigger than before.

"I didn't think that I would be able to control Light Saint Force like a Radiant Saint Master could!" Jian Chen cheered internally. He was quite ecstatic to discover this, as it was a pleasant surprise to him. Equipped with this special power, his life would gain an additional source of protection. No matter how serious of an injury he would get in the future, he would be able to quickly heal it at any given place or time.

While being happy at this discovery, Jian Chen was also greatly shocked at how effective the Light Saint Force was at healing. If he were to use herbal medicines, then it would have taken him four or five days to completely heal from his wounds. But using the Light Saint Force, he had been completely healed in a single night. In addition, Jian Chen had been absorbing the Light Saint Force slowly; he didn't want to speed up his absorption rate just in case it was revealed that he could do such a thing.

However, Jian Chen knew that he could only use the Light Saint Force as a last resort. It was better to keep it a secret. He had considered this issue very thoroughly. There was a possibility that his ability to control Light Saint Force would raise unexpected issues during a critical moment. Although Radiant Saint Masters were highly revered in Tian Yuan Continent, this empty glory meant nothing compared to what he wanted for his life.

Meanwhile, the road was relatively peaceful for the caravan. There was nothing aside from the occasional weak magical beast; they didn't come across any bandits or stronger magical beasts. With the increased traveling speed, they traveled what would have taken ten days in six, and after the third day, the caravan had finally passed the dangerous roads into a peaceful one. They were finally at the border fort of the Blue Wind Kingdom.

Seeing the huge faraway walls, every single mercenary let loose a smile, as if a huge burden was lifted off their backs. Although they still had a ways to go, the usually unruly road seemed relatively peaceful. There were few cities that were scattered about Blue Wind Kingdom's vicinity. The caravan would be able to hire some new mercenaries at each of these cities to replenish their battle

strength.

“We’ve reached the Blue Wind Kingdom, we’ve finally reached the Blue Wind Kingdom!”

“We’re safe now, we don’t need to worry about the Boundless Bandits chasing us.”

Many of the mercenaries started to cheer out loud with joyous expressions. Even Jian Chen couldn’t help but smile faintly. At this moment, his heart felt lighter; after all, he was still quite weak, so if he were to leave the mercenaries and get attacked by bandits, then even he would be in dire straits.

Although the massive wall could be seen in the distance, there was still five thousand meters of road. On the way, many people and caravans could be seen traveling about.

The caravan finally arrived at the gates to the border fort. However, a guard soldier blocked their path.

“Halt, where did you all come from?” He asked as his eyes swept over to look at the head merchant representative.

This type of event was already prepared by the merchants, who immediately had one of the mercenaries negotiate with him. At the same time, the mercenary flashed a few glittering, golden things, and carefully placed them into the guard’s outstretched palm.

The guard inspected the items in his hand closely before smiling widely at him. With a wave of his hand, he said, "You may enter!"

Afterwards, the caravan finally passed through the giant gates of the border fort and entered the Blue Wind Kingdom.

After passing through the border fort, Jian Chen immediately calmed down quite a bit. At the very least, he had escaped from the powerful grasp of the Hua Yun Sect. Although they held a formidable amount of power within the Gesun Kingdom, Jian Chen was convinced that their powers did not stretch over to the lands of the Blue Wind Kingdom.

Not too long after passing through the border fort, they came across a decently sized city. The merchants stopped to rest, and the mercenaries disbanded in order to rest. Two of them remained to guard the goods.

The marketplace had allocated a place for goods to be parked, so the merchants all dropped off their items there. Since they had a few strong experts to ensure the goods were protected, the mercenaries had no need to worry about the possibility of the goods here being stolen by bandits.

In actuality, no mercenary would dare rob from this place; otherwise, they would be unable to exit through any of the city gates, and would be surrounded by the city guards.

Chapter 81: Zim Zam Zoopity Woo

After storing away the merchandise, the mercenaries went off to enjoy their free time, and the merchants went to reorganize their military strength. After spending many days and nights constantly rushing without stop, everyone was tired. So the moment they were disbanded, they immediately headed towards the nearest inn and started to sleep. Those who were injured headed off to a place to heal their injuries.

Jian Chen tied his horse to the stable area and looked around, only to see a single person wearing regular clothes standing around. After another sweeping glance, he quickly walked towards that person.

Arriving behind the person, Jian Chen whispered, “Mu Yun, your battle skill is already known to many mercenaries. Take advantage of this opportunity, and quickly leave. Otherwise, I fear that they might try to do something to you.”

Hearing Jian Chen, Mu Yun turned his head around and smiled at him, “Don’t worry. If they want to take my battle skill, they’ll find out that it won’t be that easy to do.”

Jian Chen frowned as he looked at Mu Yun carefully, “If it’s like that, then I won’t speak of it anymore.” He paused in thought before asking again, “But now that we’ve reached the Blue Wind Kingdom, it is nearly time for me to separate from the mercenary group. From this road on, we will no longer be walking the same one. Brother Mu Yun, please take care of yourself.” He cupped his hands together respectfully. Although Mu Yun and him had only

just met, they were on good terms with each other. Plus, Mu Yun had revealed his secret battle skill for the sake of rescuing Jian Chen, so in his heart, Mu Yun was a decent guy. However, this wasn't enough for Jian Chen to consider him a good friend.

“You take care of yourself as well!” Mu Yun cupped his hands together in response.

“Are the two friends here preparing to leave already? Everyone is exhausted, and so we've prepared a top rated restaurant for everyone to enjoy. It'd be better to come eat and drink with everyone first.” At that moment, a deep voice spoke out towards the other two. Mu Yun and Jian Chen turned around to see an older man who had a smile adorned on his face.

Seeing the man, Jian Chen was a little stunned, but he quickly regained his composure. Cupping his hands in respect once more, he said, “This one greets Captain Lang Tian!” Over the past few days, Jian Chen had become familiar with the three mercenary groups. The strong man wearing the black robes was Captain Lang Tian, an expert who had reached the Great Saint Master level.

Seeing Captain Lang Tian, Mu Yun also cupped his hands in respect. Even with a laugh, this was still considered a respectful greeting.

“My two friends, I don't know what to call you two, but when the Boundless Bandits attacked us, we honestly suffered greatly. It was thanks to you two that our casualties did not get any worse.” Lang Tian smiled with a face full of benevolence.

“This one is named Jian Chen. Captain Lang Tian is too generous. During the ambush with the Boundless Bandits, the one who had contributed the most was Captain Lang Tian, who had killed many of the expert bandits.”

“Your humble servant here is called Mu Yun. What brother Jian Chen said was correct. The reason why we could successfully push back the Boundless Bandits was Captain Lang Tian. If not for the captain, then I’m afraid all of our lives would have been forfeit.” Mu Yun laughed.

Hearing Jian Chen and Mu Yun, Lang Tian’s eyes flashed with a brief moment of shame before he quickly concealed it. “My friends Jian Chen and Mu Yun are too polite. Whatever the end result of the ambush was, I still have to thank you as the captain of my mercenary group. For the past few days, everyone had been so worried about the Boundless Bandits overtaking us, so we’ve been spending day and night traveling as much as possible and sacrificing sleep. We’ve really placed a burden on the two of you. I’ve already prepared a great feast; it would be great if we were to all eat together with joyous smiles. Afterwards, we can all rest well for a few days and heal from our wounds.”

“Alright then, after eating rations for the past few days I’ve almost forgotten what meat tastes like. I was just about to prepare myself to gorge on a great meal, but since Captain Lang Tian has already prepared a feast, I can save my meal money.” Mu Yun readily agreed. Facing Jian Chen, he said, “Brother Jian Chen, it’d be for the best if we both went. After eating rations for the past few days, you must be sick of it.”

Jian Chen shook his head gently, “I appreciate Lang Tian’s kindness towards this one, but I have some important matters to attend to. I will have to leave immediately and won’t be able to accompany everyone. If I have offended Captain Lang Tian, I beg for forgiveness.”

Lang Tian looked regretful at that, but he didn’t continue to try and persuade Jian Chen into staying. Cupping his hands together, he said, “If brother Jian Chen has some important matters to attend to, then this one won’t hold brother up any longer from his business.”

After Jian Chen bid farewell to Lang Tian, he immediately left the area, now that he had separated from the mercenary group, he no longer had any responsibilities. If he wanted to leave, he could leave without notifying anyone.

After Jian Chen had left, the black robed Lang Tian and a few other mercenaries were quietly discussing something within the room of a restaurant.

“Caleb, you’re sure this mercenary named Mu Yun has a battle skill?” Said a white robed elderly man right next to Lang Tian. He had a head of long black hair that trailed behind his head. His face was bronze in color and had many fierce looking wounds on it. Since there was still blood on some of his wounds, one could tell which wounds were new and which were old.

“Yes, Captain Bai Fei Yun. When the mercenary called Mu Yun

used his battle skill, many people around had seen it, so this information is definitely not false.” Caleb replied.

“That’s correct, Captain Bai Fei Yun, Captain Lang Tian. Everyone that survived the ambush can testify this. What Mu Yun used was definitely a battle skill, and it was actually a highly advanced one as well.” Another mercenary said.

Originally this was an important manner that the mercenaries should have reported earlier. Unfortunately when they were ambushed by the Boundless Bandits, the battle skill was the last thing on their minds, since their lives were more important. Even if they were to learn the battle skill, if they weren’t alive to enjoy it, it would be completely pointless in the end.

Moreover, the current situation was different. Since they had entered Blue Wind Kingdom, they were temporarily safe. Now, they could mention the battle skill that Mu Yun had.

Although the mercenaries were all in the same group, life on Tian Yuan Continent was extremely cruel. Even these mercenaries would try to forcibly take an item they were jealous of, just like the Boundless Bandits had. Such circumstances happened all the time in Tian Yuan Continent

Hearing these two mercenaries talk, all the other mercenaries in the room frowned.

The white robed man looked at Lang Tian and said, “Captain Lang Tian, what do you think about this situation?”

Lang Tian knit his brows together in contemplation before slowly opening his mouth, “I am sure Mu Yun knows that his battle skill has been leaked to all of the mercenaries. But what I don’t understand is that with his Great Saint strength, why did he not run away at the first chance he had when he knew that his battle skill was leaked? Could it be that he believes we won’t make a move against him?”

“Taking a step back, even if he trusts us, could it be that he isn’t worried about us trying to force the battle skill out from him? This would bring him an endless amount of trouble, possibly to the point of losing his life.” Lang Tian analyzed. Although he looked to be a straightforward person, he certainly wasn’t a stupid person.

“So that means either the mercenary called Mu Yun is just some mindless idiot, or he is relying on some type of support that makes him so fearless.” The white robed middle aged man muttered to himself.

Hearing this response, Captain Lang Tian asked, “I was previously in contact with Mu Yun. In my opinion, Mu Yun isn’t a mindless idiot. He’s a veteran mercenary that has experience. How could someone like that commit such a fatal mistake?”

“Does anyone know where that Mu Yun came from?” The white robed middle aged man continued.

“That Mu Yun joined us midway, and is of the same occupation as us. I don’t know the exact details though; after all, almost all

solo mercenary planning on a long journey will join a caravan, and guarantee that the trip will go smoothly. We can't really question people like that." A middle aged man responded. He wore a long, cyan robe, and his face was slightly pale. If Jian Chen were here, he'd immediately recognize that this man was the one who had agreed to let him join the caravan back in Gesun Kingdom.

The mercenaries in the room all grew silent. After a while, one of the mercenaries finally couldn't hold back anymore, and said, "Captain, are we doing it or not? If we succeed in obtaining this battle skill, then we'd gain quite a bit of wealth. Even if we don't use it ourselves, we can sell it. Considering how precious battle skills are in Tian Yuan Continent, we can definitely get a sky-high price for it. After all, this battle skill is of a pretty high quality."

"Captain, why don't we put our all into this fight?" Another mercenary said, an eager light constantly pulsing within his gaze.

Captain Lang Tian frowned, however he didn't immediately reply either. Instead, he turned around to look at the white robed man next to him, and asked, "Captain Bai Fei Yun, what do you think about this situation?"

The white robed middle aged man called Bai Fei Yun knit his brows. A light flashed in his eyes, and it seemed as if he was hesitant to reply.

After contemplating for a while, Captain Bai Fei Yun finally said slowly, "Captain Lang Tian, I'm sure that you still remember the battle we had against the experts from the Boundless Bandits a few days ago, and how at the end, a mysterious expert secretly aided

us, right?” He said in a serious tone.

Hearing Captain Bai Fei Yun’s words, the expressions of a few of the mercenaries that hadn’t known the situation clearly changed. Aside from the five that had returned, nobody else knew about what had happened earlier. Originally, these mercenaries had naturally assumed that the experts from the Boundless Bandits had been killed by their own elite captains. However, it seemed that the circumstances were completely different.

Captain Lang Tian was slightly moved by this, and said in a voice heavy with emotions, “Of course I remember. If that mysterious expert hadn’t helped from the darkness, I’m afraid that we wouldn’t have survived the ordeal.”

Chapter 82: Accident At The Restaurant

Hearing what Lang Tian said, the mercenaries in the room all looked each other in the eyes with stunned expressions. None of them could believe what they had just heard.

Lang Tian continued to say, “Captain Bai Fei Yun, I am guessing that you suspect the mysterious stranger and Mu Yun are working together.”

Bei Fei Yun nodded, “If it were not for the fact that Mu Yun had leaked his battle skill at the same time the mysterious stranger showed up, I would not have linked them together.”

‘There’s logic in your words.’ Lang Tian said. “If Mu Yun is really working with the mysterious stranger, then we definitely cannot make a move on him. Otherwise, we would be in grave danger if we were to run into the mysterious stranger.”

“That mysterious stranger would definitely be able to wipe us out with ease.” Bai Fei Yun said.

“Send the order that Mu Yun is not to be touched, and that everyone must pretend that they saw nothing.”

.....

After he bid farewell to Mu Yun, Jian Chen took a stroll in Black Wind City. While it wasn’t a big city, it was close to the border

fort. So for that reason, all four directions of the city were filled with the bustling traders and travellers, as well as caravans with mercenaries.

After arriving not too far away from the Mercenary Union, Jian Chen walked into a nearby restaurant since it had been a long time since he had last eaten meat. He had been rushing for so many days that the taste was almost forgotten to him.

After eating and drinking to his heart's content, Jian Chen was led to his room by a waiter.

Sitting on the bed, Jian Chen took out some Class 1 Monster Cores in order to cultivate. Right now, Jian Chen didn't want to waste any time and cultivate slowly. He wanted to use every single monster core to help him cultivate to help him grow so strong, that even the Hua Yun Sect would be afraid of him. Then he would be able to return to his family with pride. Although he could secretly sneak back without the Hua Yun Sect noticing, Jian Chen was too prideful for that, so he wouldn't do such a thing.

The energy within the monster cores was rapidly being drained away at a frightening speed and being absorbed into every single pore of his body. However Jian Chen could only absorb the 1% of the massive amount of energy, while the other 99% was absorbed into his dantian. The two glows inside his dantian were like bottomless pits that absorbed all of the energy without a single change.

When it came to his dantian, Jian Chen couldn't do much since it wasn't under his control. Although the two glows within his

dantian were taking up all of the energy, what made Jian Chen happy was that his absorption speed was much faster than before. Even his cultivation rate was slightly faster, which comforted Jian Chen just a bit.

During the next morning, the rays of the sun shined down onto the ground as Jian Chen woke from his cultivational slumber. The Class 1 Monster Core he was holding in his hand was completely devoid of energy. He couldn't help but to laugh bitterly, "This consumption rate is too much; I've used up 50 Class 1 Monster Core in a single night. Even if I still have a few monster cores left within the Space Ring, I'll be all out in 10 days at this rate."

Jian Chen got off of his bed, and moved his feet about. Afterwards, he walked up to the window and looked out at the constant stream of people walking about the main street. He murmured to himself, "Cultivation definitely cannot be stopped. But if I don't have any monster cores and just rely on absorbing the World Essence, the cultivation speed will only be 10% of the normal speed, and undesirable result. It looks like I'll have to think of a way to replenish my monster cores."

Jian Chen walked out of the room, and went to the restaurant's lower floor to look for an empty table to sit at.

"Customer, what would you like to order?" A cordial waiter welcomed Jian Chen with a smile as Jian Chen sat down in his seat.

"A plate of stir fried flower tiger meat, as well as any two side dishes. I also want a bowl of white rice." Jian Chen casually

ordered a few dishes.

“Alright. customer, please wait for a bit.”

Sitting at the table in boredom, Jian Chen casually looked around the restaurant. It wasn't that large, and within Black Wind City, it could only be qualified as middle sized. However, it was currently breakfast time, and quite a few merchants and mercenaries had gathered within the restaurant to eat. The majority of the 30-40 tables had been filled; only 5 remained open.

The restaurant was extremely noisy, as quite a few mercenaries were speaking loudly to each other, without any consideration for those around them.

“Customer, your food has arrived.” Without giving much time for Jian Chen to wait, the waiter quickly brought over the dishes that Jian Chen had ordered, and carefully placed them on his table.

While Jian Chen ate breakfast, he also listened in on the the idle gossip from the surrounding mercenaries. Although the restaurant was extremely chaotic, the mercenaries gathered here had all traveled extensively, and quite a bit of interesting and up-to-date matters could be learned from their words.

At this moment, a few mercenaries walked into the restaurant. There was a total of five men; three of them looked like 20-30 year old youths, while the other two looked like 40 year old middle aged men. They wore the same cyan colored robes, and identical silver

colored emblems in front of their chests. All of them were from the same mercenary group, and judging by their emblems, the group wasn't of a low level either.

Five people entered the restaurant together. They all looked around for seats, however it was currently the peak hours, and all of the restaurants tables were already filled. There were no available spaces left.

“Such bad luck, to think that there are no more seats.” A slim, frail youth wearing a cyan colored robe cursed.

A youth stood on one side, his gaze sweeping across the restaurant. It finally stopped on the table that Jian Chen was currently occupying by himself and he laughed, “Gan Hou, who said there aren't any more spots? Look, isn't that a free table right there? Even though it'll be a bit crowded if we all cram into a single table, it's not impossible.”

Aside from Jian Chen, there were still quite a few people occupying tables alone. However, that group of people could tell the others were not people they could pick fights with. Only Jian Chen appeared to be completely powerless. Thus, the youth's attention naturally locked onto Jian Chen.

The people's gazes all gathered onto the white-clad Jian Chen. After noticing that Jian Chen's appearance didn't look over 20, they smiled evilly. Afterwards, the five walked in together.

Once he arrived in front of Jian Chen, the youth called “Gan

Hou” patted Jian Chen’s shoulder, and said with a smile that didn’t quite reach his eyes, “Young friend, this table is now occupied by us. It’s better if you switch to another.”

Jian Chen knit his brows and raised his head. His gaze swept across the expressions of the five people. Once his Soul determined that the five weren’t actually that strong, his heart immediately calmed, and said, “I’m sorry, but I also need this table right now.” Jian Chen wasn’t at all afraid of the consequences. Although two of the people were quite old, their strength wasn’t very significant.

After all, the strength of one’s power didn’t solely depend on age. There were some people with outstanding talent, and had become renowned peak level experts at a young age. On the other hand, some of the more mediocre people would spend their whole lives unable to condense Spirit Weapons and overcome the threshold to becoming a Saint.

Gan Hou’s expression sank, and coldly stared at Jian Chen as he said, “Brat, don’t refuse a toast only to be forced to drink a forfeit. If you’re wise, get out of my sight right now.”

TL Note: Don’t hesitate do something until being forced to do it.

Although Jian Chen’s situation was naturally drawing the attentions of others in the restaurant, however such things happened quite often on Tian Yuan continent, and wasn’t anything new. Therefore, everyone watched the situation unfold, as if watching a show, and had no intention to help out.

Chapter 83: Desert Mercenary Group

Upon hearing Gan Hou's words, Jian Chen's originally nonchalant face turned into one full of killing intent. Although Jian Chen was currently rather weak, that did not mean he was easily intimidated.

Gingerly putting down his chopsticks, Jian Chen's lips moved slowly as he spoke, "With your paltry numbers, you don't have the right to make me move from this table."

Gan Hou looked stunned at this answer for a moment before sneering at Jian Chen coldly. There was a hint of undisguised killing intent within his eyes; it appeared that Jian Chen didn't know what mercy was when it was given to him, Gan Hou wouldn't mind teaching him a lesson. To Gan Hou, Jian Chen's weak appearance along with his young age made him look like someone who wasn't an expert.

"Kid, you really don't know kindness when it's handed to you, so why don't you let brother Gan Hou teach you a lesson! Be sure to remember it!" He immediately swung out with his palm towards Jian Chen's face. His palm was traveling so fast, that before it had even reached its destination, a fierce palm wind blew across Jian Chen's hair. This signified that Gan Hou's hand was not lacking in strength at all.

Jian Chen's eyes flashed dangerously as his right hand grabbed onto the chopsticks and stabbed into Gan Hou's outstretched palm.

Jian Chen's right hand moved so fast that no one could see his movements. Before Gan Hou could even react, Jian Chen's right hand had already made contact with Gan Hou's palm. All people could see was Jian Chen's chopstick stabbing deeply through Gan Hou's palm, piercing through it as easily as if it were a hot metal knife cutting through butter.

"Ah!" The intense pain from his palm caused Gan Hou to cry miserably as he held his injured hand. His screams echoed throughout the restaurant, causing everyone to hear him clearly.

Immediately afterwards, the restaurant was filled with gasps of shock. What happened was very different from what they were expecting, causing everyone to look at Jian Chen in surprise. However, those who were slightly more discerning saw Jian Chen use a single chopstick to stab through Gan Hou's hand, their faces became heavy and hardened. The following looks towards Jian Chen also slightly changed; quite a number of them carried deep shock.

To use a flimsy wooden chopstick to stab someone's hand, just how strong did someone have to be to do that? At the very least, no one in the restaurant would be able to perform such a feat.

Immediately after stabbing Gan Hou, Jian Chen's right leg lashed out and connected with Gan Hou's chest. The kick had sent Gan Hou's weak body flying back three meters before he crashed into a table and pitifully fell to the ground.

The mercenaries who had been sitting at that table quickly left the area to avoid getting involved. Although Jian Chen did not

seem old, the strength he demonstrated, as well as the vicious way he had dealt with things, intimidated many people in the restaurant. After this display, the few mercenaries who were eating at that table naturally didn't dare to offend Jian Chen over such a small matter.

Seeing Gan Hou's end, the four other mercenaries that came with Gan Hou immediately looked on with disbelief. Although their expressions recovered afterwards, they looked at Jian Chen with eyes full of cold murderous intent.

"To think you're picking a fight with the Desert Mercenaries, you must be tired of living." One of the youths shouted angrily. A giant sword appeared in his hand, and he immediately shot towards Jian Chen.

Jian Chen gave a hidden smile then snorted quietly. In an instant, the silver white sword with the words "Light Wind" engraved on it appeared in his own hands.

The Light Wind Sword was Jian Chen's sword in his previous life. During his time as a wanderer, his sword had gained a fearsome reputation that every martial artist knew of. And within this new world, he was still using an identical Light Wind Sword; Jian Chen's feelings towards his sword were very deep.

The moment the Light Wind Sword appeared in Jian Chen's hands, it immediately transformed into a streak of silver lightning under Jian Chen's control, and flew at the other man at an inconceivable speed. Before the youth's sword could even get halfway towards Jian Chen's sword, it had already stabbed

towards the youth's throat with a demon-like speed. The point of the sword halted right at the moment of contact on the outermost layer of thin skin at the throat, causing some blood to slowly drip down his throat for everyone to see clearly.

Feeling a tinge of pain from his throat, the youth's expression became deathly pale in an instant, completely drained of blood. Sweat began to gather, covering his whole forehead in the blink of eye. He made a great effort to keep the greatsword in his hand frozen in midair. His body was locked into a firm posture, as he didn't dare to move even a single inch. The youth's appearance looked as if a mysterious force was keeping him locked in place.

Seeing how nobody knew when the silver sword had appeared at the youth's throat, the clamor around them had descended into a strange silence. Everyone's eyes went wide as they looked at Jian Chen wield his Light Wind Sword; no one could believe what had just happened.

In regards to how the sword arrived at the youth's throat, only two or three people in the restaurant had caught a glimpse of the sword traveling through the air. Most of the people there weren't even able to see the flash of silver, and only saw the point of the blade appear before the youth's throat.

It was as if time had stood still as everyone held their breaths. After a while, the sounds of everyone inhaling cold breaths could be heard breaking the silence of the restaurant. At that moment, everyone was looking at Jian Chen with expressions of surprise.

As for the youth who was being held at swordpoint, he didn't

dare move. His fear was that if he were to move, the sword would pierce into his throat.

“My fellow brother, please stay your hand. We are part of the Desert Mercenaries, and this was our fault. I hope that you’ll let our companion go.” A middle aged man spoke with some moderation and showed a face full of sincerity.

Hearing this, Jian Chen’s gaze shifted towards the middle age man who spoke. After a brief moment of hesitation, he slowly lowered the Light Wind Sword in his hand and said to the youth, “Scram!”

Hearing Jian Chen, the youth that was held at swordpoint glared at him with an indignant expression for a brief second. But owing to the fact that he just escaped a disaster, he didn’t dare to say a single word.

The Light Wind Sword disappeared from Jian Chen’s hands as his gaze coldly swept across them. He then pulled out a single gold coin and placed it at the table. “Waiter, this is for the meal!” He stated flatly before exiting from the restaurant.

After such an event, Jian Chen didn’t wish to stay there any longer. Since he had already eaten and drank, he was content.

Afterwards, the youth that was released by Jian Chen, he glared at Jian Chen with murderous intent. Glancing at his three other companions with a knowing look, they all nodded at the same time. Following this, the four of them acted in unison, as if they

had long since prepared for this to happen. They all summoned their Saint Weapons and immediately charged at Jian Chen from different positions, aiming towards several vital parts on Jian Chen's body at the same time.

Hearing the sounds of activity happening behind him, Jian Chen's eyes narrowed as he started to leak an intense killing intent from within his eyes. Swaying slightly, his body had already flashed forwards two meters with an extreme speed just as the weapons slashed at where his back was just moments ago, causing them to just narrowly miss him. Using sheer skill, he had managed to escape the encirclement. At that moment, Jian Chen's Light Wind Sword materialized in his right hand once more as Jian Chen immediately turned around to face the four men. With just a single step he closed the gap between himself, and the four people. His right arm abruptly shook, and his Light Wind Sword stabbed at the closest middle aged man with an insane speed.

Just like a silver streak of lightning, the Light Wind Sword had already closed in on the middle aged man, stabbing towards his throat.

The middle aged man wasn't weak at all and was much stronger than the first youth. The moment he saw Jian Chen's Light Wind Sword stabbing towards him, the middle aged man's face immediately hardened, before bringing back his sword that he already slashed outwards to replace it protectively across his neck.

“Ting!”

Just as the middle aged man finished this movement, the Light

Wind Sword's tip pierced the flat side of his sword, causing a metallic sound to ring out. A small, shallow mark appeared on the flat side of his blade.

Seeing how his sword was blocked, Jian Chen sneered, and his eyes flashed once more. The next moment, the Light Wind Sword had a hazy glow burst out from the blade. It did not look very strong, but it was actually concealing its sharpness. No one from the restaurant could detect that hidden power however, and when Jian Chen stamped forward, he simultaneously twisted his body in midair to form a horizontal rotating line. His Light Wind Sword began to rotate at high speeds as well, before flying forward with Sword Qi adding to its power.

“Hisssss!”

An unpleasant sound echoed throughout the restaurant as the Light Wind Sword began to rotate at a lightning quick speed. That violently strong penetrating power bore a two finger wide hole through the man's sword like a hot knife through butter, leaving behind a deep cavity through the sword. Entering through the cavity and under the disbelieving gaze of the middle aged man, Jian Chen's sword pierced deeply into his throat.

Jian Chen landed gracefully on his toes as he pulled out his sword from the throat of the middle aged man. Without stopping, he moved towards the other three before they could react, and with another silver flash of his sword, he stabbed at the youth who had originally attacked him.

“Ai!”

Against the extremely fast movements of Jian Chen's sword, the first youth was far too weak to do anything to resist. Before he could even react, the Light Wind Sword had already pierced through his neck, spilling blood everywhere.

Before anyone could even take a breath, Jian Chen had already killed two people with extreme haste. This type of speed was absolutely unimaginable to everyone watching.

Even after killing two people, Jian Chen showed no change in emotions. Instead, he stared at the remaining two people and his sword abruptly shook again. But as he was about to set forward to kill the two, unimaginably, they immediately recalled their Saint Weapons. They began to kowtow onto the ground while crying out loudly, "Spare our lives oh, great, swordsman. Spare our lives! We beg of you to spare us, we will never bare our weapons towards you ever again!"

Chapter 84: Wake City

Seeing the two remaining mercenaries act in such a way, everyone in the restaurant looked on in shock. Not long after, their expressions changed to a 'just as expected' attitude. There were all sorts of people in Tian Yuan Continent; some would rather lose their lives than to bow their heads and admit their errors. Others only clung onto their lives and were scared of death. These people would sooner sell off their brothers, and even their friends, when their lives were threatened.

Jian Chen slowly lowered his sword; the point of the sword now faced the ground. Staring coldly at the two people begging for their lives, Jian Chen's brows furrowed as he gazed at the two with contempt. When it came to people who were afraid of death like this, he was disgusted by them.

Upon seeing Jian Chen lower his sword, the two mercenaries that were kowtowing really thought that he was letting them go, and they smiled in relief. But before they could be happy for too long, a single phrase made the smiles on their faces go rigid.

"I had already let you go before, but it's a shame that you didn't cherish it. The time for forgiveness is over." A cold and indifferent voice came from Jian Chen's mouth. Just as he finished talking, his right hand burst into motion, appearing like a hazy shadow. Immediately sweeping forward with an extreme speed, the Light Wind Sword transformed into a silver streak, stabbing the two people.

The Light Wind Sword moved so fast that the two people didn't

even get a chance to react. Slashing gently across their necks, small lacerations could be seen, and large amounts of blood began to pour out, dying their necks red.

If the two mercenaries had wanted to resist while Jian Chen wished to kill them, he would have had to expend a little more effort, and they could possibly have even escaped from Jian Chen if their luck was good. Unfortunately, they had already been intimidated by Jian Chen's might, which had been demonstrated when he killed their two companions with a lightning fast speed. This blew away any notions of running away or resisting, making it easier for Jian Chen to kill them.

After effortlessly killing the two, Jian Chen turned around to look at the last terrified mercenary. Like a shining beam of light, the Light Wind Sword slashed at his neck as well.

The five members of the Desert Mercenaries had all been killed by Jian Chen before anyone could breathe more than a dozen times.

Jian Chen didn't react at all to the five deaths; instead he pulled out a few gold coins from his Space Belt and placed them on the table. "These gold coins are for you to clean up this place." With that, Jian Chen left the restaurant unhurriedly.

The Tian Yuan Continent was a cruel place where disputes and murders ran rampant. So murder was a common thing that everyone was used to. Even though a murder had happened within the restaurant, the other customers wouldn't care. As long as they weren't involved, they would treat it as a good show to watch,

without it having any affect on their appetites.

The other customers watched Jian Chen leave and the entire restaurant descended into an odd silence. At this point, every person had forgotten about their food and just stared blankly at Jian Chen, and then back at the five dead mercenaries. They didn't believe what had just happened in this restaurant.

For a while, the odd silence permeated the restaurant before a loud sigh of admiration could be heard—

“What a fast sword, they couldn't even react to it. And what precise control he had! I've traveled the Tian Yuan Continent for many years and never have I ever seen anything like that!” A middle aged man wearing blue robes said. He was one of the few that could catch a glimpse of Jian Chen's movements.

“That man looked to be quite young, yet quite strong. His movements were also vicious, and each blow was a fatal one. If he isn't from a major clan, then he must have an excellent master backing him up.”

“I don't know what his name is, but with his strength, it'd be nice if he could join my mercenary group. If he does, then my group's strength would increase.” A male said.

Another male youth spoke out in reply to him, “Don't even dream about it; he looks much younger than you, yet he has this much strength. These kinds of people would not have a simple background. We are just a small mercenary group that has no

chance of attracting such an expert. Not only that, he just killed five mercenaries from the Desert Mercenaries; their group won't take this offense lying down. So even if we were to be able to bring him into our group as a member, it is quite possible that we'd also attract huge trouble. After all, we're still an extremely tiny and weak group in comparison to the strong, thousand man Desert Mercenaries."

.....

After leaving the restaurant, Jian Chen arrived at the Mercenary Union in order to find a mission to protect some caravans. Since they were all going to cities that were close by, Jian Chen could take these missions despite his low mercenary level.

Wake City was a third class city, but despite its ranking, the city walls were on par with a first class. This was because the nearby mountain range was filled with many strong magical beasts. Those magical beasts would often raid the city with an all out frontal assault, so while Wake City wasn't very large and could only be considered third class, the citizens had constructed an extraordinarily strong and secure wall to protect themselves from the magical beasts.

In the afternoon, the fierce sun started to release a strong glow, and that intense illumination prevented everyone from lifting their heads. Many of the mercenaries on the road had started to squint to prevent their eyes from being hurt by the sun's rays.

Outside of Wake City, a caravan group of two or three hundred people slowly trekked towards the city gates.

“The weather can go and die, why is it so hot? How can people survive this weather?”

Within the caravan group, a ** year old cursed out loud. Grabbing his water canteen, he ruthlessly chugged away at it.

Not too far away from the thirsty man, a youth with simple clothing sat on top of a white horse with a serene face, looking as if he were sleeping.

The youth was rather ordinary looking, and had a very common appearance. From his looks, he seemed to be around twenty years old or so.

Despite the fact that the scorching sun was currently high in the sky, this youth was tightly wrapped in clothes. The material wasn't very thick, but a normal person still wouldn't be able to take the heat in such a state. The most astounding fact was that there was not a single drop of sweat on the youth's forehead.

Compared to the mercenaries and merchants in the caravan that had either naked torsos or were sweating furiously, this youth's appearance was clearly strange. Although quite a few of the mercenaries and merchants had cast peculiar looks towards the youth, they didn't attempt to strike a conversation with him.

This youth was Jian Chen.

Jian Chen slowly opened his eyes and indifferently looked at the large city wall in front of him. During the past 2 days on the road, he had followed the caravan and finally arrived at Wake City. Jian Chen had specially chosen Wake City as it was a good place for himself to stay; he planned on living in Wake City for a period of time. That way, he'd be able to diligently improve his strength by a whole new level with the help of monster cores from the nearby Magical Beast Mountain Range.

Chapter 85: Going Alone Into The Magical Beast Mountain Range

After successfully escorting the caravan to Wake City, Jian Chen left the caravan and headed straight towards the Mercenary Union to register the completed assignment. With this, he was able to earn a bit of reputation and a small amount of money.

Because Wake City was so close to the Magical Beast Mountain Range, the number of mercenaries that stopped to rest here were much greater than any other city. The majority of the mercenaries had their eyes set on the favorable living conditions here, and tended to stay around for a long term period. It was extremely convenient to enter the Magical Beast Mountain Range and hunt magical beasts in exchange for money.

Although the dangerous factor of hunting magical beasts was much greater than escorting caravans, it was also an extremely profitable task. There were many people who lost their lives to magical beasts daily. But because the monster cores had such great value and were in high demand, many mercenaries were willing to risk their lives for the profits gained from hunting magical beasts.

After all, monster cores were simply too precious in Tian Yuan Continent. Since almost everyone needed them, the amount they required was quite large. After gaining monster cores, they could directly absorb the energies within them to quicken their cultivation rate. In addition, even if one didn't personally use them, one could easily exchange the cores for a considerable amount of money.

The mercenary union was extremely noisy due to there being many mercenaries inside. A union as large as this was filled with hundreds of people. The majority of the men had naked torsos, and their robust builds could clearly be seen from their bare muscles. It seemed as if they displayed their bodies to demonstrate how powerful they were.

Under such blistering hot temperatures as well as the poor ventilation system within the union, the sour odor of sweat pervaded the air and assaulted the nose. It made Jian Chen, who very rarely experienced this type of odor, knit his brow, and use a hand to lightly pinch his own nose.

After leaving the mercenary union, Jian Chen went around the city to replenish his supplies. He bought a map of the Magical Beast Mountain Range, and then headed straight out of Wake City. Under the scorching sun, he advanced forward alone to the Magical Beast Mountain Range.

The Magical Beast Mountain Range was only about 30 kilometers away from Wake City. After rushing towards the mountains on horseback, Jian Chen finally arrived at the edge of the Magical Beast Mountain Range two hours later.

A stretch of forest bordered the edges of the Magical Beast Mountain Range and deep inside the forest was a large mountain range. Within the mountain range were numerous magical beasts. The environment inside was vile as well, and according to the description of the Magical Beast Mountain Range from the map, there were countless poisonous vipers and insects within the forest. Not only that, swamps could also be found all over, and if a

person were not careful, they could sink into one. Without the help of a companion, it would be extremely difficult to escape with their life.

The proverbs once said that fortune and danger live together. So while the Mountain Range of Magical Beasts had many dangers, at the same time, there was also treasure to be found. The Magical Beasts frequently fought each other, so upon their deaths, their monster cores would be preserved. If one had good luck, then they would be able to come across a few magical beast corpses that still had their cores, and collect them, but the chances of that happening were still rather low.

Monster cores could be used by the magical beasts as well, but the lowest rank of magical beasts didn't know if or how it could be used and only operated on instinct.

Jian Chen sat on his horse with his head facing the verdant forest in front of him. "From today on out, this forest will be my training ground where I shall gain some experience." Dismounting, he stroked the horse gently on its head and without caring if the horse, that had accompanied him for quite a number of days, could understand him he said, "Go on, you're free now, go wherever you want to go." Afterwards, Jian Chen turned around and headed towards the forest within.

"Neigh!"

The horse behind him stamped on the ground firmly as it looked at Jian Chen as it was saying goodbye.

.....

After covering a stretch of road, Jian Chen finally entered the depths of the forest, and without stopping, continued on his path towards the Mountain Range of Magical Beasts.

The forest had weeds everywhere that reached the height of a regular person, completely blocking his vision. In this type of environment, one could lose their way if they weren't careful.

Every few steps Jian Chen would jump onto a huge tree to view the surrounding routes around him to ensure that he hadn't lost his path, allowing him to keep track of where he was. Every so often, he would find a viper hidden in between the blades of grass, but with his "Soul", he could easily perceive it and take care of the vipers whenever they appeared.

After traveling for 4 hours, Jian Chen finally entered the depths of the forest, where ferocious beasts were beginning to gradually appear.

At that instant, a dark green figure leapt out from the weeds, and attempted to attack Jian Chen from behind with extreme speed.

Just as the dark green figure approached Jian Chen, a white light flashed past, and a silver sword suddenly appeared. It accurately pierced into the green figure's concealed body with unmatched quickness.

The moment after the sword made contact, Jian Chen's body swayed, and he shifted half a meter to the side. The moment he moved away, a soft 'bang' could be heard as the dark green figure fell at where Jian Chen had just been standing.

Only now was he able to clearly see that the dark green figure was a beast that looked similar to a leopard. Its neck was already soaked with blood that continuously poured out from its deep wound.

Jian Chen's gaze swept across the leopard-type beast lying on the ground. He then continued to advance into the forest. He could tell from a single glance that the beast was only a normal wild animal; it wasn't even a Class 1 Magical Beast. There were absolutely no monster core that could be retrieved from within its body; otherwise, he wouldn't have been able to kill it so easily.

“Roar!”

“Aooo!”

As Jian Chen continued to travel deeper into the forest, the howls of magical beasts gradually started to fill the air. There were many different types of cries; some were unpleasant as they sounded like the wails of malicious spirits that made anyone hearing it feel terrified.

At that moment, Jian Chen suddenly stopped in his tracks. He turned around, and his eyes flashed with a serious light as he

stared towards his side. The silver Light Wind Sword materialized in his hand.

This was the first time Jian Chen displayed such a serious expression since he first entered the forest.

A faint ‘sha sha’ sound emitted from the location Jian Chen was looking towards. Shortly after, a dusty yellow scorpion slowly appeared within Jian Chen’s line of sight.

The scorpion was extremely large. Its body alone was a meter wide, and two meters long. A poisonous stinger hung from the end of its tail, which was at least 5-6 meters long. Right on its head, a pair of jade, beady eyes started to flicker with a strange glow.

The scorpion headed straight towards Jian Chen. Only after it was 5 meters away from Jian Chen did it stop its advance. Its bright eyes flashed with a strange glint as it locked its gaze onto Jian Chen, brandishing its pincers at Jian Chen as a “zhi zhi” sound came from its mouth.

The silver Light Wind Sword in Jian Chen’s hand was enveloped in a hazy glow. Immediately, he attacked first and his body blurred as he shot towards the scorpion with his blade.

His original intent in coming here was to kill magical beasts, so he naturally wouldn’t hold back after encountering one.

The scorpion’s reaction was quick; as soon as Jian Chen began to

move, the poisonous stinger at the end of its tail blurred, and rapidly darted at Jian Chen.

“Ding!”

Jian Chen’s Light Wind Sword simultaneously shot out towards the scorpion’s poisonous hook. As the two made contact in midair, a clear sound that was similar to metal striking metal rang out. The collision generated a powerful aftershock that caused both Jian Chen’s Light Wind Sword and the scorpion’s hook to recoil backwards.

With only a slight sway of his body, Jian Chen had already retreated back quite a few meters. He looked at the poisonous stinger of the large scorpion in shock. The hardness of it had surpassed his expectations. Jian Chen reckoned that even a superior type steel could not compare to this scorpion’s stinger. Moreover, the power that it contained was immense. After a single collision with it just now, Jian Chen’s arm had already begun to feel numb.

“The scorpion in front of me should be a Class 2 Magical Beast.” Jian Chen muttered to himself as he fixed his bright eyes on the scorpion.

Chapter 86: Hunting For Poisonous Scorpions

Although Jian Chen had killed quite a few Class 2 Magical Beasts in Kargath Academy before, the ones in the Magical Beast Mountain Range were on a completely different level. The Class 2 Magical Beasts in Kargath Academy were not even equivalent to some of the Class 1 Magical Beasts in this mountain range. Moreover, the magical beast that he had encountered was one indigenous to the Magical Beast Mountain Range.

Just as Jian Chen was distracted, the poisonous scorpion didn't give him any time to relax, as its six powerful legs began to scamper across the floor. In a blink of an eye it covered dozens of metres and arrived in front of Jian Chen as its poisonous green pincers widened menacingly and pincerd towards Jian Chen's head.

Encountering a local magical beast for the first time in the mountain range, Jian Chen did not dare to be negligent. He had learned the hard way in his previous life that being careless only led to disaster.

Jian Chen's expression immediately grew solemn. He tilted his head, dodging the giant scorpion's pincers by a hair's breath. He then gathered strength in his feet and pushed off the ground, leaving a deep footprint in the ground as his body burst forwards towards the poisonous scorpion's much smaller head. The Light Wind Sword in his hand was once again enshrouded in that hazy white light as Jian Chen aimed it straight at the scorpion's tiny eyes.

The eyes, throat and heart were three of the most fatal and weakest parts of the body. That much Jian Chen understood, but this poisonous scorpion had a neck that could not easily be pierced due to the angle. Not only was the neck rather short, but it had scales that were interwoven with each other to protect it. Under this circumstance where it was impossible to determine how tough the scales protecting its neck were, Jian Chen had decided to attack its eyes.

Although Jian Chen was very confident in his precise and powerful stab, the defenses of some magical beasts were also just as tough. Thus, he wasn't 100% sure that he would be able to penetrate the scales and deal a serious injury to the beast.

Jian Chen's sword traveled towards the scorpion with blinding speed, his sword had already reached the scorpion's eye.

Just as the Sword Qi enhanced Light Wind Sword as he was about to pierce the scorpion's eye, it suddenly opened its mouth and spat out a pungent green blob of poison. Almost as if it were being controlled by a mysterious force, it flew quickly towards Jian Chen. At the same time, the scorpion's eye shut and the head dodged towards the side, avoiding the Light Wind Sword.

The Light Wind Sword's speed was matchless, and so even at this crucial moment where the scorpion desperately tried to dodge, the scorpion wasn't able to completely avoid the sword. In the end, the sword slashed open the scorpion's outer eyelid.

While the Light Wind Sword hit the scorpion's outer eyelid and it paused for a bit as it encountered resistance. After a moment, the amazing amount of Sword Qi around the sword caused it to break through the strong defenses of the eyelid and stab through into the eye of the scorpion successfully.

Simultaneously, Jian Chen's entire body was covered by the green fog of poison.

“Hiss!”

As it felt the sharp pain in its eye, the scorpion let loose a hoarse scream. A dark green fluid began to leak out of the injury in its eye, and its great mouth opened wide, revealing rows of needle-sharp teeth. Its overall appearance was extremely terrifying.

The poisonous mist floated around. Jian Chen, who was shrouded inside the fog, retreated outwards, in a sorry state, as fast as lightning to escape. Right now, Jian Chen's appearance was the complete opposite of his previous state; his whole body was covered with a layer of dark green poison. His coarse clothing had begun to disintegrate at an alarming rate, and even his originally short hair had begun to fall off as green threads.

Feeling a painful burning sensation throughout his body, Jian Chen's face hardened before growling, “What a strong poison!” Quickly, Jian Chen grabbed onto the melting clothes before tearing them off from his body while using his Saint Force to counter the poison that made contact with his skin.

Jian Chen looked at the one eyed scorpion that was still crying out in pain. He knew in his heart that this was the perfect time to kill the scorpion. With a flash of killing intent, he dashed towards it without even stopping to take out a spare change of clothes from within his Space Ring, making him completely naked while moving to finish off the scorpion.

Jian Chen's movements were agile and nimble, and he quickly flashed to the poisonous scorpion's side. With a shake of his arm, he reached out as fast as lightning, moving the Light Wind Sword in his hand so fast it appeared to be just a ray of silver light. It shot towards the scorpion's throat, and in that instant, the blade suddenly exploded with sharp Sword Qi. Although it didn't seem to be very powerful, that Sword Qi was similar to a sharp blade.

Like a streak of lightning that briefly illuminated the world with a gorgeous and magnificent light, and it immediately disappeared without a trace momentarily afterwards.

“Ding!”

Jian Chen's Light Wind Sword accurately struck the poisonous scorpion's throat. When the blade came into contact with the dense scales covering the scorpion's throat, a clear sound similar to metal striking metal rang out. However, the scales' defense was quite strong, it was only able to withstand the Light Wind Sword for an instant before the blade sharpened with Sword Qi broke through, and pierced deeply into the throat.

“Si!”

The poisonous scorpion once again cried out miserably. The single, intact eye pulsed with a strange, dark green glint as its thick pincers quickly jabbed forcefully outwards towards Jian Chen. The 5-6 meter long poisonous hook behind it blurred as it flew over Jian Chen's head and tried to pierce the back of Jian Chen's head.

Jian Chen pulled out the Light Wind Sword buried in the scorpion's throat. His feet pushed off the ground, and his body sailed through the air as he jumped onto the scorpion's wide back.

“Hiss!” “Hiss!”

The poisonous scorpion was evidently extremely annoyed by the fact that Jian Chen had jumped onto its back. It began to violently shake its body, wailing unpleasantly as it recklessly waved its giant pincers around in the air.

Based on the scorpion's current state, it appeared that the injury on its throat that Jian Chen had just inflicted didn't harm it that much.

Seeing that the scorpion was still as ferocious as it was before, Jian Chen frowned. He couldn't help but mutter, “Its ability to stay alive is really too great, to think that it still hasn't died.” Because the scorpion's body was so massive, Jian Chen once again realized how limited his strength was. Aside from attacking the two vital region of its eyes and throat, he couldn't find any other way to harm this scorpion.

At that moment, Jian Chen heard a faint ripping sound. Without any hesitation, Jian Chen flashed horizontally to the side.

Just as Jian Chen dodged to the side, the shining dark green poisonous hook flew over his head, and then ruthlessly pierced the scorpion's own back.

A soft sound could be heard as the strong, plated section of its outer shell was pierced through by its own sharp poisonous hook. Under its own sharp poisonous hook, its shell did not offer a whit of resistance , and was easily pierced through. The sharp hook buried itself deeply into the scorpion's own body, and dark green blood began to flow out from the wound.

Seeing this scene, Jian Chen's expression clearly went blank. However, immediately afterwards, he couldn't help but feel unsure of whether to laugh or cry. He had really never imagined that the poisonous scorpion would be stupid enough to actually hurt itself.

The scorpion tugged at its poisonous hook. But because it was already deeply buried within its body, its movements instantly pulled out a chunk of flesh as well. The scorpion felt such intense pain that it ceaselessly wailed in pain as its entire body shook. That fierce pain was enough to disperse any further thoughts about pulling the hook out.

Whenever a human or creature receives a serious injury, there will be a cushion of time where the strength that they exhibit, as well as their reaction speed, will be at its worst.

Jian Chen saw this, and grasping the perfect timing, his body flew high up into the air as he jumped off the scorpion's back. The Light Wind Sword in his hand flashed with a silver light, and pierced towards the scorpion's other eye.

Because the scorpion was feeling fierce pain from its back, its reaction time had greatly slowed down compared to its normal reaction speed. In addition, Jian Chen's blade's every movement was incomparably fast. In the scorpion's current state, it was extremely difficult to evade or withstand Jian Chen's lightning fast sword.

The Light Wind Sword accurately penetrated the poisonous scorpion's other eye without resistance.

Jian Chen showed a pleased expression. He exerted more strength into his hand, forcing the Light Sword even deeper into the scorpion's eyes. Eventually, after thrusting at least half of the 4/3 meter long blade into the scorpion's eyes, he finally managed to injure its brain.

This time, the poisonous scorpion no longer struggled or made any move to resist. Its entire body shuddered a few times before it fell like jello to the ground. With a loud bang, its enormous one meter tall body fell to the ground.

Jian Chen slowly pulled out his Light Wind Sword. His brows knit together at the sight of the scorpion's bright green blood and white fluid covering his treasured sword. With a single thought, the green and white fluids covering his sword slid off the blade, and it instantly returned to its original appearance.

Jian Chen's gaze circled around the poisonous scorpion corpse for a bit, then raised his Light Wind Sword to pierce through the skull. However, the Light Wind Sword had just gone through the outer shell of the head before getting blocked. Even though the poisonous scorpion was already dead, its outer shell's defense was still just as strong as before. There was no way Jian Chen could break through its defense with a casual wave of his sword.

“This snake skin is really thick!” Jian Chen furrowed his brows, and sighed, “Forget it, I might as well conserve my energy. The magical beasts here come and go randomly. If I preserve my extra strength, then that is an extra layer of protection for my life. I'll just retrieve this monster cores by going through its eyes.” Saying this, Jian Chen resumed his actions. After great effort, he was finally able to retrieve the monster core stored within the scorpion's skull.

Chapter 87: Surviving In The Mountain Range

Looking at the thumb sized monster core, Jian Chen couldn't help but smile, "It really was a Class 2 Monster Core; look at the purity of the energy inside! Not only that, this Class 2 Monster Core is much better than the ones I found at Kargath Academy. It really is true that the magical beasts in the Magical Beast Mountain Range are stronger than the ones in the Kargath forests."

After collecting the monster core, Jian Chen lowered his head to look at his body that was now dark shade of green. However, his body wasn't injured at all. Since he had been refining his body since he was young with the special techniques from Azulet Sword Law, his physique was really strong. So even though the poison caused his body to feel some pain, it couldn't get past his skin and enter his body. The majority of the damage was being counteracted with his inner Saint Force. So while his entire body was tainted with a green poison, the only symptom he felt was a slight burning sensation.

Jian Chen looked around himself and listened attentively, "There probably isn't a water source here, so I won't be able to wash this off. I guess I'll have to handle this roughly." Plucking a few tree leaves, he began to wipe off the excess venom while pulling out a new change of clothing from within his Space Belt. Although this place was extremely large and there wasn't be anyone around, Jian Chen had no hobby of walking around naked.

After changing his clothes, Jian Chen walked away from where the carcass of the scorpion lay without a care at all for it. Although

magical beasts had many important parts that could be harvested and sold off for a high price, this scorpion was just a Class 2 Magical Beast. If he were to sell this, he wouldn't be getting much since it wasn't a precious type of material, plus, Jian Chen had plenty of Purple Coins to spare, so the him today did not care for such a little sum of money.

While the beasts that were born and grew in the Mountain Range of Magical Beasts were much more powerful than those in Kargath Forest, they were much rarer than the ones in Kargath Forest. After all, while the Mountain Range of Magical Beasts may not be the largest in the Tian Yuan Continent, it was still vast in its own right. The magical beasts in the mountain range were all scattered about, so meeting a magical beast was not impossible, but rather quite rare.

For the entire day Jian Chen slowly walked deeper into the mountain range. By nighttime, he had only seen two magical beasts, excluding the previous Class 2 Poisonous Scorpion, these two were both Class 1 Magical Beasts.

The moon was hanging high up in the sky and basked the earth with its lunar glow. However it did not reach into the forest where darkness reigned supreme, so one couldn't even see their fingers if they stretched out their hand in front of their faces. With the abundant amount of leaves covering the forest, the weak lunar lights wouldn't be able to penetrate through onto the ground below.

Meanwhile on a flat piece of ground, a large bonfire burst into life and lit up the night with its dancing flames.

Jian Chen knelt by the bonfire with a stick in his hand as he slowly cooked a piece of meat that was speared through. Slowly, the meat began to caramelize as the fat began to slowly drip off onto the fire below, sputtering it out.

After eating his fill, Jian Chen pulled out a unique smelling herb from his Space Ring and sprinkled it on the surroundings. This herb was one of the few things that every mercenary entering the forest would need to prepare. Before resting, if one were to sprinkle this herb in his surroundings, it would be able to repel the majority of poisonous creatures from disturbing him. Of course, this medicine was only useful towards normal animals, and had no effect on magical beasts.

After using the herb, Jian Chen immediately leapt onto a nearby tree. Sitting cross legged on a slightly flatter branch, Jian Chen took out another faintly sweet smelling herb from within his Space Ring and started to sprinkle it on his body. This white colored herb was very effective in suppressing one's Qi, preventing his qi from escaping which might attract any kind of wild beasts while he was sleeping at night. After all, both the wild animals and the magical beasts in this mountain range had extremely acute senses of smell. Although this powder wouldn't be able to completely hide Jian Chen's Qi, it could at least conceal it from the senses of normal animals.

The mountain range had many magical beasts as well as wild animals. The reason why wild animals were called so was because they had no monster core within their bodies. Wild animals were also not as strong as a Class 1 Magical Beast, similar to humans that hadn't yet manifested their Saint weapons.

Although the wild animals weren't strong and anyone who dared to enter the Mountain Range of Mystical Beasts could easily kill them, when it came to cultivating or sleeping at night, no one would want to be bothered by a wild animal. Therefore, practically every mercenary who entered the mountain range or slept outdoors overnight would be prepared, and bring a good amount of this type of herb.

After the safety preparations were complete, Jian Chen took out a big handful of monster cores and distributed them between his two hands. Jian Chen slowly closed his eyes and began to absorb the energy from the monster cores.

The energy from the monster cores started to flow out at an extremely terrifying speed towards Jian Chen, before funneling into his body via his pores and nostrils crazily. This absorption rate naturally placed a slight burden on Jian Chen, causing his pores to feel a slight ache from expanding. Throughout his entire body, there was no area that did not hurt.

Although it was aching a little, this was not enough for Jian Chen, who had a strong willpower, to mind it much.

The energy of the monster cores had a berserk element to it. If it weren't for Jian Chen using the World Essence to strengthen his body since he was young which meant that his internal organs and his fundamentals were made to be a lot stronger than most others, he would have been heavily injured alone by the berserk element contained within the energy of the cores, nevermind the fact that he was absorbing the energy into his body so crazily.

Following the absorption of the large amount of energy, the berserk element accumulated inside Jian Chen's body. When the berserk element reached a certain point, a large absorption power started to surge from Jian Chen's dantian, pulling these elements continuously towards the dantian, before finally being absorbed by the two glows of azure and violet.

On Tian Yuan Continent, if a practitioner wanted to rely on the monster cores to cultivate, then they would need to clear away the berserk element within the energy and absorb the pure energy remaining. Just removing that element from the energy would take a lot of time, and even then, the berserk element wouldn't be completely removed, and would leave behind some harmful effects within the body. So while there were many people who relied on using monster cores to cultivate, not many would continue down that path. Every so often, a person would need to stop using monster cores and completely refine the energy absorbed, in order to not suffer from any negative effects.

Though with Jian Chen, he could absorb and refine the energy from the monster core without fear of the consequences which was possibly due to the glows within his dantian. The moment the energy entered his body, the berserk element would immediately be absorbed by them. allowing for Jian Chen to absorb the energy from the monster cores without fear. This was why Jian Chen had such a large advantage over the other cultivators.

Following the steady absorption of the monster cores, Jian Chen could clearly feel the Saint Force slowly growing larger and larger in his dantian. Although it might look slow to the naked eye, Jian Chen understood that this speed compared to others was really

fast. At this rate, it would not be long until he would breakthrough to become a Great Saint.

On the second day, when the sunlight passed through the small chinks between the dense tree leaves, Jian Chen, who was sitting cross-legged and cultivating, slowly opened his eyes. He then flipped in the air, jumping down from the tree, and smoothly landed on the ground below.

Jian Chen stretched his body for a bit. After consciously feeling his inner Saint Force, he couldn't help but smile. He could clearly sense that his current Saint Force was much more powerful than when he had first condensed his Saint Weapon. Based on his calculations, his current strength was most likely already at the level of a Middle Saint.

Although he was only a Middle Saint, it had been less than a month since Jian Chen had first condensed his Saint Weapon and broken through to Sainthood. If anyone else heard that Jian Chen had managed to become a Middle Saint only less than a month after, they would definitely find it hard to believe.

After eating some food to fill his stomach, Jian Chen once again continued on his journey.

.....

Time quickly passed by. In the blink of an eye, a month had already passed. at the foot of the Magical Beast Mountain Range, a youth wearing a coarse set of clothing was currently facing a pitch-

black, panther-type magical beast that was a meter tall and three meters long.

The youth held a long, thin, silver sword. He stood tall and straight, seeming to be as immovable as a mountain. His face was brightly colored by mud and dust, making it impossible to make out any of his facial features.

The panther-type magical beast was glaring at the youth opposite of it with a ferocious glint in its eyes. It roared deeply, and began to fall into a crouching position. Its hind legs firmly planted into the ground, preparing to attack at any moment.

Chapter 88: Great Saint

“Hou!” Suddenly, the loud growl of the panther-like magical beast was heard. It leapt into the air with such force that its pawprint was visibly imprinted on the ground, as its entirely black body transformed into a black shadow that shot towards the youth ten meters away. While in midair, the black panther began to open its large jaw that revealed its sharp teeth that could fill a person’s heart with dread.

The youth smiled coldly as the silver white sword within his hand started to emit a faint white glow. With a single slash, the sword tip flew towards the black panther’s opened mouth.

The sword was traveling extremely fast, just like a flash of lightning. However, the black panther’s reaction was very fast, so when the sword reached its jaws, the black panther tilted its head to the side, barely dodging the incoming attack. However the sword was still traveling too fast to be evaded completely, so it grazed its head. It left a very noticeable wound on the black panther’s shaggy head.. However, the black panther’s speed did not slow down at all; maintaining its previous speed, it shot towards the youth in front of it.

The corners of the youth’s mouth tilted upwards, as if revealing a mocking expression. His eyes radiated a flash of killing intent. Hoisting the sword in his right hand, he immediately stabbed towards the black panther once more.

This speed was faster than before, almost bordering the inconceivable. The black panther wasn’t able to dodge the sword

this time and so the sword speared through its throat before it could even react. Due to the panther's momentum, the sword in its throat penetrated even more deeply. The sword only stopped after it was completely buried in the panther's throat up to its hilt. The other side of the sword was already covered in blood as it pierced through the back of the panther's neck. Blood started to drip from the inclined sword onto the back of the black panther.

The youth slowly pulled out his sword from the black panther. Afterwards, the blood on the sword strangely started to gather at the tip of the sword, and drip onto the ground. In the blink of an eye, the originally bloody sword had regained its original bright luster.

On the hilt of the sword were two words—Light Wind.

This youth was Jian Chen, who was adventuring around the Mountain Range of Magical Beasts alone. Unknowingly, he had already stayed in the Mountain Range of Magical Beasts for a month. This whole month, Jian Chen had remained in the outskirts of the mountain range, not going deeper in or farther out.

During this month, Jian Chen would explore the outskirts of the mountain range during the day, and cultivate during the night. During this period of time, he had focused primarily on improving his strength, unlike back in Changyang Mansion where he had to slow down his cultivation speed so that his performance wouldn't be too outstanding. Because of that, Jian Chen's strength had practically skyrocketed in the course of a month. He had already broken through from a Peak Saint to become a Great Saint.

In this short month, Jian Chen went from a Primary Saint to a Great Saint. If this speed was to be found out by the public, then it would send a huge shockwave throughout the continent. This was because for any regular person, it would take two or three years to go from a Primary Saint to a Great Saint. Even geniuses would need around a year, so Jian Chen's frightening speed was unheard of. Unbeknownst to everyone else, he had already set a new record in the history of Tian Yuan Continent. But this would be a piece of history that would be buried deep, never to be heard about by anyone.

Since he had broken through to the Great Saint level, Jian Chen's fighting strength had skyrocketed as well. The current him could easily hunt down a Class 2 Magical Beasts, and he had already set his sights on Class 3 Magical Beasts.

The Light Wind Sword dissected the black panther, before a bloodstained but white monster core came bouncing out, which was caught by Jian Chen.

Jian Chen casually used a handful of grass to wipe the bloody monster core clean even though he himself could care less about the amount of blood on it.

Looking at the single core in his hand, Jian Chen smiled and murmured to himself, "My luck today is not that bad, I've collected 12 Class 2 Monster Cores already."

After grabbing the core, Jian Chen didn't pay any further mind

to the black panther's corpse and left the area.

Jian Chen carefully trekked inside the mountain range. He was now a Great Saint, so it could be said that he was a lot stronger than before. However, he was in the Mountain Range of Magical Beasts so he didn't dare to be careless. He knew clearly that while his position was currently in the outskirts of the mountain range, he would still be able to encounter some stronger magical beasts that came from the deeper parts of the mountain range, ones that Jian Chen currently wouldn't be able to handle .

It could even be said that the current Jian Chen was very vigilant. Carefully looking around constantly, he had to be extra careful, especially with the hidden swamps since they were very hard to detect. From far away, the flatlands and swamps couldn't really be differentiated. But the moment one walked over a swamp, they would be devoured by it, and wouldn't be able to escape without another person's help.

Right at this moment, Jian Chen's ear twitched. He began to shout with a great big smile, "Water, I can hear the sounds of water! There's water around here." Jian Chen immediately headed towards the direction of the water with great speed.

Not too long after, Jian Chen passed through some tall weeds and finally reached a small stream. This creek was only three meters wide and wasn't too deep. Yet the water was so clear that the stones on the bottom of the river could be clearly seen.

Seeing this river, Jian Chen smiled with joy. This was the first time he had come across a water source since entering the

Mountain Range of Magical Beasts. And after all the time he had spent here, the clean water he had in his Space Belt was almost all gone. If he hadn't found a water source soon, he had considered leaving the forest.

Looking around the place, he inspected it to ensure it was safe, before pulling out a few canteens from within his Space Belt before kneeling down to fill them with water.

After a few more canteens were filled, Jian Chen threw off his clothes and jumped into the stream to wash away the sweat he had built up on his body.

Not even a few seconds after Jian Chen started to bathe, his face suddenly changed expression from a relaxed one to a battle ready expression in an instant. Immediately leaping up into the air from the water, he materialized his Light Wind Sword into his right hand, and stabbed downwards with it.

Chapter 89: Silver Striped Golden Snake

Just as Jian Chen stabbed downwards with his Light Wind Sword, a golden vine-like thing flew out of the water and attacked Jian Chen.

When Jian Chen's sword and the golden vine-like thing collided into each other, Jian Chen's downward momentum was stopped. His whole body maintained a stabbing posture while he was suspended in midair. The tip of his sword accurately pierced the head of the golden vine-like creature.

This scene lasted for a span of two breaths. Suddenly, from the forest next to the river, another golden vine suddenly burst out from the tall grass and flew at Jian Chen.

Jian Chen's face didn't change from the sudden ambush. Bracing his arm as he prepared to borrow the power of the golden vine-like thing below him to gain momentum, he kicked off of his attacker and whirled through the air, landing firmly down by the riverside. The moment he hit the ground, he immediately sprinted to where his clothes were and put them on.

After putting on his clothes, Jian Chen looked up to assess the golden vine-like thing only to find out that it was a golden snake. Its entire body was golden in color, but there were a few silver lines going from the top of its head to its tail. It was also long in length; just the exposed area alone was almost 6 meters long. The moment Jian Chen noticed the silver streak on its body, he was stunned. It seemed like he had remembered something, as his face suddenly changed dramatically. He couldn't help but exclaim

loudly, “Silver Striped Golden Snake!”

The Silver Striped Golden Snake was something that Jian Chen had read about before from the books in the academy’s library. It was a rare magical beast that was regarded as the emperor of serpents. In the entire Tian Yuan Continent, considering the tens of thousands of magical beasts, the population size of Silver Striped Golden Snakes barely even reached three digits. .

The Silver Striped Golden Snake wasn’t precious because of its rarity, but because of its body. Whether it was for meat or blood, it was very valuable. The venom in its body was especially precious; it belonged to the type of goods in the Tian Yuan Continent where there was no market, even if people offered high prices for them.

This was because if this highly toxic venom was specially refined, it could even kill a Peak Heaven Saint Master. Moreover, purging this venom was impossible. Unless one had the blood of the Silver Striped Golden Snake, there was no other method; even a Radiant Saint Master wouldn’t be able to do anything about it. Although the Light Saint Force had mystical healing effects, and could detoxify many poisons, it simply couldn’t remove the unique and highly toxic venom that a Silver Striped Golden Snake possessed, as well as several other rather special types of venom. At most, a Radiant Saint Master would only be able to temporarily suppress the poison; however, completely purging it was impossible.

Also, the Silver Striped Golden Snake was different compared to any other snake. Not only was it long it was also relatively thin. It could be said that a few Silver Striped Golden Snakes that reached the Class 5 Magical Beast rank would reach up to a hundred meters

long, but their widths would not even be thirty centimeters wide.

A Class 6 Silver Striped Golden Snake was able to control the size of its body, and could even shrink its body down to one or two meters long.

Not only were Class 6 Silver Striped Golden Snakes very strong, but rumors said that they could fly through the air and burrow into the ground. Its venom was unrivaled, and even a Heaven Saint Master would be afraid of the consequences of being infected by one.

In the ancient records, a hundred years ago in the Holy Empire, a Class 6 Silver Striped Golden Snake had laid waste to a King City with the population of ten million people in the time it took for a candle wick to burn out. Every single person was killed by the potent venom even decayed corpses. All that was left in the city was the stench of fresh blood that rose endlessly into the air.

After this horrifying event, the Holy Empire sent out over ten Heaven Saint Masters to go kill the Silver Striped Golden Snake. But before half a day was over, seven of the Heaven Saint Masters were killed by the poison with the remaining few having serious injuries or were poisoned heavily. However not long afterwards, the remaining few experts that were poisoned died as well.

This event had caused every single Saint Ruler in the Holy Empire to become shocked. In the end, a Saint Ruler finally fought the Silver Striped Golden Snake in an earth shattering battle that had only led in the withdrawal of the beast instead of killing it.

But in the end, everyone knew how strong a Silver Striped Golden Snake could become.

Recalling the information he had read about this beast back in Kargath Library, Jian Chen looked at the golden colored snake with a horrified look of disbelief. His heart couldn't help, but begin to race rapidly. He didn't think that he would come across the rare Silver Striped Golden Snake in such a desolate place like the Mountain Range of Magical Beasts; it was only the outskirts of the Mountain Range, where it should've been hard to even encounter one on the entire Tian Yuan Continent.

Sweeping his eyes over the wrist sized snake attentively, Jian Chen had to concede to the fact that he had come across a Silver Striped Golden Snake.

“What terrible luck, how could I come across such a thing?” Jian Chen quickly calmed himself, but inwardly, he was still cursing to himself. He knew how terrifying a Silver Striped Golden Snake could be despite never seeing one in real life. Just reading about it was enough for Jian Chen to understand that with his current Great Saint strength, fighting against a Silver Striped Golden Snake was extremely troublesome.

Jian Chen heavily stared at the Silver Striped Golden Snake only ten meters away from him, his gaze filled with vigilance. He gripped his sword tightly as he thought about the fact that the Silver Striped Golden Snake he encountered was no ordinary magical beast. A single mistake could possible cause him to lose his life today.

This was definitely the most dangerous encounter that Jian Chen had experienced since he had first entered the Mountain Range of Magical Beasts. It was to the point where he was unsure if he would be able to leave the place alive.

If it was any other strong magical beast that Jian Chen couldn't defeat, he would still be able to run away. But the moment he recognized the Silver Striped Golden Snake, he had already given up all such notions. He was fast; even if he just relied on his Saint's strength, he could surpass the speed of a wind attribute practitioner. However, Jian Chen was sure that his speed was incomparable to the snake's; he wouldn't even be qualified to carry the shoes for the snake if it owned any.

That was because the Silver Striped Golden Snake was extremely fast while running in a straight line. Although it wasn't the fastest magical beast, when it came to the ones that crawled on the ground, the Silver Striped Golden Snake was in the top three. When compared to humanity, unless you had the wind attribute and were multiple ranks higher than the snake, then you wouldn't be fast enough to outrun it.

"When seeing a Silver Striped Golden Snake, one cannot run away in a straight line, or else a dead end will be the only thing that'll greet them. I don't know how strong this snake is either; if it is a Class 1 Magical Beast, then the danger will be significantly smaller, and I might be able to kill it. If it's a Class 2 Magical Beast, then there will be a bigger threat to my life, but I should be able to run away from it with no problem." Jian Chen muttered. Right now, his only wish was for the snake to not be too strong; otherwise, he didn't think he would be able to leave this place

alive.

As Jian Chen was pondering to himself in that brief moment, the Silver Striped Golden Snake suddenly opened its mouth and spat out a gray poisonous mist that quickly floated over to where Jian Chen stood. As it floated over, every single plant life in the mist immediately began to wilt, and even the larger trees were noticeably changing. In a flash, it looked as if its very life was being drained away quickly.

The moment the gray gas drew closer, Jian Chen's head started to feel a little dizzy. At the same time, Jian Chen felt as if his strength was being sucked right out of him.

Feeling the change that was happening in his body, Jian Chen's eyes widened in shock; he realized the Silver Striped Golden Snake could directly contaminate the air with its poison. Now he finally knew how terrifying the poison was; it was no wonder that the poison could easily kill a Heaven Saint Master.

Without hesitating, he bit down onto his tongue with his teeth. The piercing pain from his tongue finally cleared away the dizziness he was feeling. After that, he jumped further back, and began to circulate his Saint Force around him so that the strength draining sensation was weakened.

Once again calming himself down, Jian Chen narrowed his eyes in concentration. Although he hadn't fought the Silver Striped Golden Snake yet and only experienced its poison, Jian Chen could deduce that this snake was at the very least a Class 2 Magical Beast.

Seeing the poisonous fog float closer, Jian Chen didn't hesitate before immediately holding his breath. His legs glided across the floor as he ran further away from the poison.

The moment Jian Chen began to move, so did the snake. Turning into a golden streak of light, it flew towards Jian Chen at a speed multiple times faster than him.

Although the Silver Striped Golden Snake was only the size of his wrist in width, it was still very fast. In the blink of an eye, it had already caught up to where Jian Chen was, with its mouth wide open: ready to bite his neck.

Right as the Silver Striped Golden Snake was about to bite into Jian Chen's neck, Jian Chen tilted his head in this crucial moment and retreated backwards. At the same time, his Light Wind Sword flickered into view in his right hand. With a single swing, a silver light came trailing behind the blade, slashing at the snake. With a large amount of Sword Qi concentrated together, the sword trail left behind looked like the lunar moon, and left a dazzling effect. Jian Chen had used his entire strength in that one swing.

The Light Wind Sword met no obstructions as it smoothly stabbed towards the Silver Striped Golden Snake. But there was no excitement on Jian Chen's face; in fact, his face had started to look quite unsightly, as his sword didn't pierce through the scaly skin of the snake. Not a single mark could be seen on the scales.

"What a strong defense." Jian Chen gasped, his face deathly pale;

because of his cultivation methods, his attacking power was extraordinarily strong. Although he only had the power of a Great Saint, his attack was not much weaker than a Saint Master's. But an attack with his entire strength hadn't left even a single trace on the Silver Striped Golden Snake. By this point, Jian Chen was aware that this Silver Striped Golden Snake was at the very least a Class 3 Magical Beast, maybe a Class 4 Magical Beast. This was not a fight Jian Chen could afford to have.

If it were an ordinary Class 3 Magical Beast, Jian Chen would have to expend a little more energy to kill it, but the Silver Striped Snake couldn't be evaluated the same way as a normal magical beast could.

Chapter 90: The Magical Power Of The Soul Sword

While Jian Chen was dazed, the Silver Striped Golden Snake's unproportionately small head compared to its non-matching large mouth had turned and nipped at Jian Chen's neck once more. Brandishing its sharp fangs, a continuous stream of gray colored poisonous mist flowed out from its mouth.

Sensing the wide open jaws of the snake biting towards him, Jian Chen immediately tilted his head to the side to dodge the gaping maw of the beast. Immediately after, his furious footsteps moved him around to the back of the Silver Striped Golden Snake. Jian Chen's Light Wind Sword shined brightly as he swung it down onto the snake's body once more, refusing to believe that it would be ineffective.

The Light Wind Sword accurately stabbed against the skin of the Silver Striped Golden Snake, but only stopped at the very first layer of the snake's scale, unable to penetrate any further. The thin golden skin was as like an impenetrable fort; no marks would remain on it even from a full powered blow of Jian Chen.

Seeing this, Jian Chen's face became even more grim. His mood, after discovering how ineffective his sword was, had completely dropped. The Silver Striped Golden Snake's powerful defenses had left Jian Chen with no options, as his strongest attacks against the powerful defense of the snake were like a child's scratches, wouldn't cause any harm.

Jian Chen didn't hesitate at all. Immediately recalling his sword,

he gathered strength in both legs to jump off the ground. Before the snake could react, his body was already high up in the air. After getting his bearings, he borrowed the power of the tree branches and flew towards the abyss of the Mountain Range of Magical Beasts.

The Silver Striped Golden Snake's strong defense wasn't something Jian Chen could handle. All Jian Chen could do was run away into the depths of the mountain range in hopes that another strong magical beast would somehow attract the Silver Striped Golden Snake's attention. This was the only way Jian Chen would be able to escape. Although this method would be braving huge danger, there was no other choice.

Jian Chen knew that there were many mercenaries within the Mountain Range of Magical Beasts that he might be able to draw support from to help stall the Silver Striped Golden Snake. However, the mountain range was simply too vast, and the chances of meeting up with another mercenary was quite slim.

Jian Chen flew into the air, using the tree branches on either side of him to catapult himself into the direction of the mountain range. Right behind him was the Silver Striped Golden Snake that was in close pursuit, its tongue continuously flickering up and down. The upright part of its body was 6-7 meters long.

The snake was fairly long, and its body dimensions weren't scaled completely yet. At that moment Jian Chen hadn't seen the features of the snake completely. However, he could estimate that judging from what he had seen from the Silver Striped Golden Snake so far, it was at the very least fifty meters long.

Jian Chen continued to run in an S shaped trajectory while looking for obstacles in hopes that the Silver Striped Golden Snake would be blocked.

“Rawr!”

Suddenly, the roar of a tiger could be heard nearby. The sound of its arrival quickly headed towards Jian Chen’s direction, and soon after, Jian Chen saw a three meter long black tiger appear within his line of sight. The tiger’s eyes glinted with an ominous feeling as it looked at Jian Chen, but just as it was about to pounce at him, a golden vine-like body fifty meters long appeared before it.

The moment it saw the golden snake, it was as if the black tiger had received an electrical shock. All of the fur on its body flew straight up as the ominous glint in its eye withered away to nothing in an instant. Fear replaced the ominous glint as it looked at the snake. Not daring to stay any longer, the black tiger quickly ran away with its tail between its legs.

Although the Silver Striped Golden Snake was a serpent, if put in a crowd of magical beasts, most magical beasts would not dare try to bother it.

This type of situation had happened in the mountain range many times before. Jian Chen had come across many different types of magical beasts, but this was the first time he saw one retreat so fast after seeing the Silver Striped Golden Snake. This black tiger had practically pissed itself without a sound, as it gloomily began to

run away. There wasn't a single magical beast here that would dare provoke the Silver Striped Golden Snake behind him.

An hour later, Jian Chen was already close to the abyss of the Mountain Range of Magical Beasts. The forest was growing more and more lush, causing Jian Chen to encounter more obstacles in his way. Right behind him, the Silver Striped Golden Snake was chasing him relentlessly. It was as if the snake had determined that Jian Chen was its prey; despite coming across a vast amount of magical beasts, its gaze continued to remain locked onto Jian Chen.

“Hiss!” The snake's head disappeared with a blur as it nipped at Jian Chen once more.

Jian Chen was constantly keeping track of the situation behind him, and so the moment he saw the snake move towards him, his legs pushed off of the sturdy tree branch he was on. The sudden force propelled him to the side, causing the snake to miss.

Over and over again, Jian Chen continued to dodge the snake's attacks. The Silver Striped Golden Snake grew angrier with each failure, as the dangerous glint in its eyes intensified. Suddenly, a long, golden snake tail quickly flew out from the tall grass toward Jian Chen.

Jian Chen's expression changed as he noticed the tail come at him. Noticing the sturdy tree branch to his side, he immediately jumped and kicked away from his spot without hesitation. His entire body was then sent flying forward towards a large tree with dense, leafy branches.

The tail of the snake immediately changed its angle and shot at Jian Chen with breakneck speeds. It caught up to Jian Chen in an instant, and began to wind around his waist tightly.

As the tail wound around his waist, Jian Chen's face turned pale with fright. The Light Wind Sword began to glow brightly, immediately slashing down at the tail. But because the outer scales were extremely tough, Jian Chen's sword left no marks at all.

At that moment, a stinky stench wafted on over as the Silver Striped Golden Snake's mouth, which was even larger than its body, could be seen. In a flash, it flew towards Jian Chen's neck, and was about to clamp down on it.

Without any time to prepare himself, Jian Chen immediately thrust his Light Wind Sword at the snake's mouth in alarm.

But the snake was cunning, and it twisted its head to dodge the sword. Afterwards, the snake opened its jaws wide and sunk its sharp fangs deeply into Jian Chen's left shoulder.

Feeling the intense pain in his left shoulder, Jian Chen's face drained of blood. The venom of the Silver Striped Golden Snake was very strong, and once bitten, the only antidote was the lifeblood of the snake. There was no other method; even a Radiant Saint Master wouldn't be able to cure it.

But the scales of the Silver Striped Golden Snake were far too strong for Jian Chen's current strength to even leave a mark on, let

alone bypass them to acquire blood.

Seeing the snake tightly biting down on his shoulder, Jian Chen grew even more panicked by the second, and his expression became crazed. Influenced by this state of mind, Jian Chen's "Soul" became unprecedentedly active, as a hazy picture of the scenery around him came into view in his mind. Although this feeling was very faint, if Jian Chen was not sensing it intentionally, he wouldn't be able to feel anything. However, as his emotions currently were very agitated, he did not notice this fact.

"Ah!" Jian Chen bellowed into the sky. Without even caring if he could break through the snake's defenses or not, he brought the Light Wind Sword up into the air before swinging the sword back down, in hopes of beheading it.

The moment the Light Wind Sword came down, it was as if Jian Chen's spirit connected with the sword in his hand. It was like the two had completely merged into one, without any distinction. The union was so smooth that it brought up an indescribable feeling within his heart, as if his sword was his spirit and his spirit was his sword.

At the same time, the azure and violet glows within his dantian began to flicker, as a weak light ray started to spread throughout his body from these two points of light. While Jian Chen himself was unaware of this, the rays had already started to spread from his head.

"Shing!" The sword in Jian Chen's hand emitted a loud sound as a formidable amount of Sword Qi completely enveloped the sword.

This time, the Sword Qi looked as if a dense fog had covered the sword. The blade within was indistinct, making it hard to see.

“Ding!” The Light Wind Sword viciously smashed into the head of the Silver Striped Golden Snake. A light noise rang out; this time, the strong Sword Qi had allowed the sword to cut through the first layer of the super strong defensive snake scales. Immediately, a deep looking wound appeared on top of the snake’s head, and fresh blood began to flow profusely from the wound.

“Hiss!” The Silver Striped Golden Snake hissed out in pain. Its bite on Jian Chen’s shoulder was loosened, and it slithered away from him. Its eyes were closely locked onto Jian Chen, as it flicked its forked tongue out repeatedly.

Seeing the bloody wound on the snake’s head, Jian Chen was momentarily stunned. But soon afterwards, a joyous expression formed on his face.

“So it seems the Spirit Sword can break through the Silver Striped Golden Snake’s defenses.” Jian Chen cheered inwardly. Under his deliberate control, the sword and his spirit had joined together so that the sword became the spirit and the spirit became the sword. This type of miraculous fusion that Jian Chen had clearly felt made him feel as if this sword was his life, his soul.

As Jian Chen’s connection between the sword and his spirit deepened, the violent Sword Qi around his Light Wind Sword grew even sharper. It was as if this large amount of Sword Qi was completely controlled by his spirit .

Not too experienced with such a mysterious sensation, Jian Chen loosened his hold on the Light Wind Sword. The sword that was completely enveloped with Sword Qi didn't drop to the ground, but instead hung queerly in midair. It slowly ascended, finally stopping around Jian Chen's nose level a meter away from him. The tip of the sword directly pointed at the Silver Striped Golden Snake.

“Shing!” A clear, drawn-out sword cry was heard from within the Light Wind Sword.

Chapter 91: Slashing And Killing

The Silver Striped Golden Snake cautiously stared at the floating Light Wind Sword with its forked tongue flickering in and out of its mouth. The incredibly strong and sharp Sword Qi gave off a dangerous air around it that the Silver Striped Golden Snake could easily feel, which made it not dare to attack carelessly.

Jian Chen slowly closed his eyes as he continued to carefully experience the mysterious sensation born from his spirit controlling the sword. Following this, his intention changed, and the Light Wind Sword became a silver streak of lightning and flew towards the snake without anyone moving it, at an unbelievably fast speed.

“Whoosh!”

As the sword traveled through the air towards the head of the Silver Striped Golden Snake, it emitted an ear piercing shriek. Before the Silver Striped Golden Snake could even react, the Light Wind Sword had already pierced deep into its brain. Immediately, a deep wound appeared on its head as fresh blood began to flow out from it, dyeing the head of the snake a bloody red.

Even though Jian Chen was still bound up by the snake's tail in midair, seeing the wound he inflicted on the snake made him very happy. Since he could break apart the first layer of the snake's defenses, this meant that Jian Chen had a chance of beheading and killing the snake.

Jian Chen once again used his spirit controlled sword technique to continuously attack the snake.

“Whoosh!”

The Light Wind Sword under Jian Chen’s control appeared to be a silver-white flash of lightning as it stabbed towards the Silver Striped Golden Snake repeatedly. However, the direction he was attacking toward was now the body of the snake.

Following the silver streak of light that flashed into the body of the Silver Striped Golden Snake, another deep bloody wound appeared. Although the wound wasn’t a light one, it clearly hadn’t damaged the vital regions of the snake.

The snake’s heart was located seven inches away from its head. Although this attack had broken the snake’s skin right above its heart, its defense provided such a powerful resistance that the Light Wind Sword couldn’t harm the heart at all.

Feeling the layer of skin where its heart was being attacked, the snake became more frantic. In a rush, the snake began to coil its body around itself so that it could protect the spot that was just attacked. At the same time, the tail that wound around Jian Chen’s body had loosened and released him.

No longer constrained by the snake, Jian Chen dropped down to the ground. Just after he landed, a strong wave of nausea surged through Jian Chen’s head, but it was quickly suppressed by Jian Chen’s spirit.

Using his right hand as a support, Jian Chen crawled up from the ground with some difficulty. He glanced at his left arm which he had completely lost all feeling. Sensing that his whole body had become really weak, Jian Chen's expression changed. With a sudden burst of power in his right arm, he ripped apart his own clothes, and saw that the entire section of his body starting from the end of his right arm all the way to the left half of his chest was pitch-black. The color was also visibly spreading throughout his entire body.

“What a strong venom.” Jian Chen's face sank. Only a span of a few breaths time had passed since he had first been bitten by the snake, but within this short period, the poison had already spread to half of his body. Such a pace of progression caused Jian Chen to feel terrified. Moreover, the most frightening part was that his Saint Force was unable to suppress the spread of the venom.

Remembering that the light Saint Force was able to help suppress the venom, Jian Chen didn't hesitate at all. While using his Light Wind Sword to fight off the Silver Striped Golden Snake and prevent any further attacks towards himself, he began to rapidly gather the light Saint Force from within the World Essence toward himself.

Under Jian Chen's control, the light Saint Force began to gather where Jian Chen was with extreme speed. Upon reaching a certain concentration, a hazy white glow appeared around his surroundings and was growing stronger very quickly. In the span of a few breaths, that previously hazy layer of white glow had completely changed into a strong milky white radiance, enshrouding Jian Chen within it. It was as if he was wrapped

within a white cocoon, and while the glow radiating from it was strong, it did not hurt the eyes.

Within the cocoon, the light Saint Force began to enter Jian Chen's body as a steady stream. The quickly reacting poison had finally met with an obstruction, and it began to slow down tremendously. However, that was the only effect. Although the light Saint Force could bring about a miraculous healing effect and heal many of the world's strongest snake venoms easily, it was not so for the Silver Striped Golden Snake's poison. The light Saint Force could only bring about a temporary repressive effect.

On the other side of the cocoon, the Light Wind Sword changed into a silver radiance that spiralled around the snake endlessly, leaving a silvery white circle in the air. Trapped within the spiral, the Silver Striped Golden Snake stared vigilantly at the light while protecting the injured part of its body, without exposing it at all. Even the snake had realized by now that its life was being significantly threatened

“Whoosh!”

The Light Wind Sword swirled around the snake with an ear piercing sound. In a split second, the sword stabbed at the snake's head.

Under the control of Jian Chen's spirit, the Light Wind Sword was simply too fast, multiple times faster than if Jian Chen were to personally swing it. Before the snake could even react, the sword had pierced its head once again.

“Hiss!”

Feeling a sharp pain, the Silver Striped Golden Snake began to hiss in pain while its forked tongue flicked about. Finally, it opened its mouth wide, and a thick gray fog of snake venom began to float out. The fog quickly spread out to the rest of the environment. In a flash, the plant life began to wilt rapidly. Even the nearby trees that had very strong vitality couldn't resist this venom; they withered as the previously lush leaves became orange, falling down to the ground slowly, as if it was autumn.

As the poisonous fog permeated the air of the surrounding area and dissipated into the surroundings, the previously verdant and lush trees began to wither and wilt as they came into contact with the fog.

When the poisonous fog had first appeared, Jian Chen had immediately held his breath, as the milky white cocoon rapidly dissipated. Even with the light Saint Force, the extremely dangerous snake venom could not be cured, so Jian Chen was very afraid of this fog.

Borrowing the cover of its poisonous fog, the Silver Striped Golden Snake began to move; it immediately slithered backwards to escape. The infamous snake that had spread fear with its name alone was feeling dread in its heart from the speed of the Light Wind Sword, as the snake couldn't follow the blade's movements. In a life threatening situation like this one, the Silver Striped Golden Snake had given up on chasing Jian Chen.

Seeing the snake trying to run away, Jian Chen became anxious. Without hesitation, he commanded the Light Wind Sword to chase after it at the fastest speed possible.

Since he was poisoned by the venom from earlier, he definitely needed the blood of the Silver Striped Golden Snake to cure himself. Otherwise, even if he were to use the light Saint Force to suppress the spread of the venom, he would still die in the end. This was because the light Saint Force was only a temporary measure. Moreover, gathering the light Saint Force took a lot out of him, so Jian Chen wouldn't be able to keep it up forever.

The Light Wind Sword streaked by the forests in a huge ray of light. In a flash, it had caught up to the Silver Striped Golden Snake and stabbed into its body near where its heart was.

Against the fast speed of the Light Wind Sword, the snake had no time to react at all; the sword easily penetrated its underside and through its heart.

When the sword stabbed into its heart, the Silver Striped Golden Snake shook heavily a final time before it came to a grinding halt. With a loud desolate hiss that shook the heavens, it fell to the ground lifelessly.

“Phew!” Jian Chen let out a long breath of air. The heart that had previously leapt into his throat had finally calmed down, as Jian Chen had finally protected his life successfully.

A loud metallic sound was heard as the Light Wind Sword flew

out of the Silver Striped Golden Snake's body before flying around in the sky. Then it flashed towards Jian Chen, and returned back to his right hand.

Seeing the sword in his hand, Jian Chen suppressed the elation in his heart. He immediately ran over to the body of the Silver Striped Golden Snake; he needed to absorb the blood in order to detoxify himself. He had to do it now since in the Magical Beast Mountain Range, every moment delayed added to the unknown danger that existed.

Walking shakily toward the nearly 50 meters long carcass of the snake, Jian Chen knelt down, grabbed onto the bleeding part of the snake's body to bring it to his mouth, and began to suck the blood without any hesitation.

“Gudong!” “Gudong!”

Without stopping, Jian Chen continued to swallow the snake's blood in large gulps. He could clearly feel the special energy from within the snake's blood as it entered his stomach. Wherever this blood flowed to, the slowly creeping poison there instantly began to lessen, as the blood quickly counteracted and cured the poison.

Feeling the changes within his body, Jian Chen started to drink even more of the snake's blood at an even quicker rate, as if it was a delicious delicacy he couldn't get enough of.

Chapter 92: Misfortune

Until Jian Chen was completely full from the fresh blood of the Silver Striped Golden Snake, unable to drink another drop of snake blood, he then finally stopped drinking.

“Ah!” Jian Chen tilted his head backwards and let loose a comfortable sound, then gasped for air.

Inside his body, the massive amount of energy from the snake blood had accumulates in his stomach. Finally it began to assimilate into his veins at an extremely slow speed, absorbed by the body. At the same time, on the left part of his body including his shoulder where the venom was, the previously black skin color was rapidly fading, returning back to a normal skin color.

Although the toxicity of the Silver Striped Golden Snake’s poison was incomparably strong, with only the snake’s blood as the cure, this detoxifying process was also extremely fast.

Not too long after, the poison inside Jian Chen’s body was completely detoxified. Aside from the two initial bite marks left on his shoulder, the skin color of his body was back to normal.

“Hu!” Seeing how his body was healthy once more, Jian Chen let out sigh of relief. It was fortunate that in the very last moment when he was fighting the Silver Striped Golden Snake, he had managed to successfully kill it. If not, even if he had had the light Saint Force to temporarily help him suppress the spread of the venom, he would not have been able to live past three days. After

all, he was not able to maintain light Saint Force for a long period, since using his “Spirit” consumed an extremely large amount of energy.

Slowly standing on both feet, Jian Chen sized up the golden colored snake that lay on the floor before him with no small amount of excitement. The Silver Striped Golden Snake population didn’t surpass three digits on the Tian Yuan Continent so it could be said to be a very rare species. In addition, the body of the Silver Striped Golden Snake was an extremely treasured commodity. This was no exaggeration; while the virulence of the poison was unmatched, its whole body was a treasure trove. It was said that the snake meat could not only help one improve their poison resistance, but also strengthen one’s inner body. Although it would not be as monstrous as the defense of a Silver Striped Golden Snake, it would still make one significantly stronger than before.

And the gall of the Silver Striped Golden Snake was said to be an extremely high grade medicinal ingredient that could increase one’s poison immunity if refined together with the blood of the Silver Striped Golden Snake with a special method. It was even possible to create a body that was immune for thousands of different types of poison, unless the toxicity of the poison was stronger than that of a Silver Striped Golden Snake, or another snake that was equally formidable. In all other cases, no poison under the heavens would pose a threat to the Ten Thousand Immunity.

The fangs of the Silver Striped Golden Snake could also be synthesized into an extremely horrifying killing weapon. The fangs were constantly soaked from birth in the deadly venom day

and night, to the point that the base quality of the fangs had slowly evolved. By this point, the venom had completely polluted the fangs, unable to be removed, and a single strike by those fangs would inject any enemy with the Silver Striped Golden Snake's venom. If there was no Silver Striped Golden Snake blood to act as an antidote, then the only outcome for one who was injected with the venom was death. This type of venom was capable of poisoning even Heaven Saint Masters.

Of course, this specific Silver Striped Golden Snake didn't have a strong enough venom to kill a Heaven Saint Master in a short moment, but it was strong enough that they would never be able to completely get rid of it. They would ultimately die from this venom if they didn't get the antidote — the snake's blood.

Despite the venom being very strong, its toxicity was directly linked to the strength of the Silver Striped Golden Snake. The stronger the snake was, the stronger its venom was. If a Silver Striped Golden Snake were to reach the strength of a Class 6 Magical Beast, then its venom would definitely be capable of killing a Heaven Saint Master in a flash.

The snake skin was not only soft, but it was also extremely durable, making it an extremely valuable material in producing armor. This gave it an incredibly high value.

And with regards to the venom sack, it was considered to be priceless. This venom, when refined correctly, would become an odorless and colorless type of poison that could bypass any type of poison detection or people's senses. With this poison, even Heaven Saint Masters would be hard pressed to escape from death, since

the only cure was the Silver Striped Golden Snake's blood.

The venom of the Silver Striped Golden Snake appeared on the market several times, but every time it appeared, men with particularly special motives paid sky-high prices to purchase it.

Silently remembering the information he had read about about the various materials from the Silver Striped Golden Snake in books, Jian Chen couldn't help but feel excited. This was the biggest profit he had harvested since he entered the Magical Beast Mountain Range. Jian Chen was especially tempted for the ability to be resistant to most poisons.

Without any hesitation, Jian Chen began to work on the Silver Striped Golden Snake's body. When it came to this corpse, he was definitely not going to ignore it like he had with the other magical beasts.

After expending a bit of energy, Jian Chen finally dragged the rest of the snake's body out of the tallgrass and piled it in one place. It wasn't until then that Jian Chen had realized that this Silver Striped Golden Snake was actually 70 meters long in length.

The Silver Striped Golden Snake's strength could be determined by how long it was. A Class 1 Silver Striped Golden Snake was 20 meters at the very least. With every increase in class, it would grow 20 meters in length, all the way to a maximum of 100 meters long at Class 5 . Any Class 6 Silver Striped Golden Snake or higher would already be able to freely manipulate their body dimensions, so it was useless trying to rank one by its body length.

Judging from the length of this snake, it looked as if it was on the verge of breaking through to the Class 4 rank.

Jian Chen retrieved the Space Ring on his neck given to him by his father when he had departed from the Changyang Mansion. The space within the Space Ring was incomparably bigger compared to that of the Space Belt. If he wanted to bring this 70 meter long snake away, the only possible solution was to use the Space Ring to store it. There was no way the Space Belt would be able to store the body within its tiny internal space.

But if Jian Chen wanted to store the 70 meter long Silver Striped Golden Snake within his Space Ring, it was not an easy task. Just as he was about to start, his face suddenly changed as he abruptly turned his head around.

Where Jian Chen was looking, he saw the shadows of some people from within the foliage walk out. Just as Jian Chen spotted them, they discovered his existence at the same time.

“What terrible luck!” Jian Chen cursed, afraid that he was going to meet with some trouble.

There was a total of 20 people who looked to be mercenaries from their outfit. The moment they saw Jian Chen, the mercenaries all looked a bit dumbfounded. To have come across Jian Chen, it was clear that this was unexpected. However, immediately after, their eyes were drawn to the coiled body of the Silver Striped Golden Snake.

Walking at the forefront of the other mercenaries was a middle aged man that looked to be around 40 years old. After his gaze fell on the Silver Striped Golden Snake, his brow slightly furrowed, revealing an expression deep in thought. Then, as if remembering something, his eyes flashed in realization. A look of extreme joy took over his entire face in an instant. As if he couldn't believe his eyes, he continued to focus on the snake's body behind Jian Chen. He cried out, "Silver Striped Golden Snake! This is actually the Silver Striped Golden Snake!"

The words of the mercenary caused every other mercenary behind him to be stunned, as if they had never heard of such a magical beast before. Not too long after, the memories they had regarding the Silver Striped Golden Snake came back to them, causing their faces to change one by one. Looks of amazement and doubt filled their faces as they looked at the snake's corpse behind Jian Chen, and evaluated it. After closer inspection, more and more shouts of surprise that they were not able to repress rang through the air.

"So this is the Silver Striped Golden Snake?"

"This really is the Silver Striped Golden Snake; it looks exactly how the rumors describe it."

"I didn't think we'd come across a Silver Striped Golden Snake here, we're rich!"

.....

Every kind of surprised comment came from the mouths of the mercenaries as their eyes began to heat up from looking at the Silver Striped Golden Snake. The avarice of greed in their eyes was shown on their faces; they didn't try to hide it.

Jian Chen sighed to himself. He didn't think that such an unfortunate event would happen at such a crucial point. This was definitely the last thing he had wanted; it was a shame that fate didn't go as he had wished.

Quickly hiding his Space Ring, the silver glow from his Light Wind Sword appeared in his hand once more. Without any hesitation, he disappeared in a blur as he charged towards the group of mercenaries.

The people in front of him had already recognized the Silver Striped Golden Snake and its worth. There was no point in contemplating any further, since Jian Chen knew that these mercenaries would try to take the body from him by any means necessary. There was definitely no room for negotiation.

Jian Chen crossed the 30 meters between them in a flash, the Light Wind Sword immediately striking out.

"Hmph, you came. Good!" The middle aged man that was the leader was not weak at all, and returned to his sense. A cold expression took over his previous joy as he stared at Jian Chen, sneered, and summoned a great sword to his hand. With a single movement, he slashed at the charging Jian Chen.

Just as the middle aged man's sword was about to hit Jian Chen, Jian Chen's trajectory suddenly changed. He dodged the sword and moved around the middle aged man, attacking the group of mercenaries standing just behind the man.

Chapter 93: Silencing By Killing

Seeing Jian Chen come at them at such a high speed, the mercenaries all came to their senses and summoned their Saint Weapons in preparation to attack him.

Jian Chen didn't want to be entangled with them, so instead of taking the blows head on, he dodged their attacks and quickly moved to their sides. In an instant, his sword sliced through the necks of two mercenaries.

As the silver light disappeared, the two mercenaries became rigid as the light in their eyes slowly faded away. From their necks, a slow trickle of blood started to flow out for everyone to see. In the next instant, the blood suddenly began to surge out from their wounds as the bodies slowly toppled to the ground.

Without slowing down, Jian Chen swept past the two dead bodies and charged at the hindmost mercenaries in the blink of an eye; these were the weakest of the group and thus were Jian Chen's first targets. Although there were around 20 mercenaries total, the majority of them were only Saints and Great Saints. Only the first middle aged man and one other were Saint Masters.

Using the Profound Steps, Jian Chen immediately flickered behind the group. His Light Wind Sword flashed as mercenaries continued to fall to his blade. The mercenaries who were only Saints were unable to do anything against such a fast attack. Since they were unable to react at all, there was no way they could possibly resist.

In the time it took to take a breath, the mercenaries that were barely at the Saint level had died by Jian Chen's sword. The remaining people who were of the Great Saint level or above had already started to prepare themselves to defend against Jian Chen.

Even after killing all of the weak Saints, Jian Chen didn't pause at all. The Light Wind Sword became a flash of silver lightning as he swung out at the one of the Great Saint mercenaries next to him.

Seeing such a fast attack come at him, the mercenary's face immediately changed. Since there was no time to dodge, he could only desperately throw his battleaxe up in front of him.

But Jian Chen's Light Wind Sword was like a viper. With a single movement, its trajectory suddenly lowered and changed from aiming at the mercenary's throat to his heart.

"Pft!" This time, the Great Saint mercenary wasn't able to react. The silver streak that was the Light Wind Sword embedded itself deeply into the left side of the man's chest, piercing straight through his heart.

Just as quickly as it entered, the sword was immediately pulled out of the man's chest. Jian Chen then began to move on to fiercely attack the other mercenaries.

Seeing their comrades die so quickly right in front of their eyes, the remaining mercenaries all cried out in both anger and shock.

“Bastard, go die!”

“Give back the lives of our comrades!”

The remaining Great Saint mercenaries all rallied together and raised their Saint Weapons to attack Jian Chen from various directions and seal off any possible escape routes Jian Chen had.

Jian Chen let loose a subtle sneer before swinging his sword in a way that left a silver crescent trail behind. Like lightning, the sword pierced the other Great Saints.

“Ding!” “Ding!” “Ding!”

In that short moment, Jian Chen’s sword had rapidly hit three of the mercenaries’ Saint Weapons dead on. With each collision, a metallic sound rang out, but Jian Chen had swung so fast, it was it was hard to differentiate separate weapons, as the sound was was just like a single loud collision’s.

The moment the Light Wind Sword made contact, a large amount of force was transmitted back through the mercenaries’ Saint Weapons.

Feeling the feedback transmitted back to them, the mercenaries’ faces all changed. Unable to control their bodies, they were forced back a few steps. None of them had thought that such a slender sword would contain a power that was definitely not inferior to any other’s.

The flash of light in that instant sparkled brightly with killing intent. Using the opportunity given by people suffering from temporary paralysis, Jian Chen approached the unmoving mercenary. The Light Wind Sword became covered by a dense layer of Sword Qi, and it rapidly shot towards the mercenary's neck.

Faced with such a fast sword, the mercenary hadn't managed to even regain his footing couldn't put up any form of resistance at all. During his final moment, his expression of one of shock and anger at the sight of the Light Wind Sword having already deeply pierced through his throat. Fresh blood suddenly burst forth directly from the hole, completely covering Jian Chen, as the sword was completely pushed through the body and out of the wound.

Right at this moment, a strong gale attacked Jian Chen from behind. Jian Chen's eyes flashed as he immediately pulled his sword out from the neck of the mercenary he just killed. Jian Chen turned around with his Sword Qi enhanced Light Wind Sword, and quickly thrust his blade behind him like a flash of silver-white lightning.

“Clang!”

The two finger-wide swords clashed against the three inch-wide blade in midair, neither Saint Weapon forced the other backwards, and the two were stuck in something like a stalemate.

However, no one had noticed that the moment the swords had collided, Jian Chen's right arm had shaken twice afterwards.

Jian Chen's eyes swivelled upwards to look at the owner of the great sword coldly. It was the middle aged mercenary that had first spoken out before; the man was looking at him with an extremely overcast expression, but his eyes were filled with intense killing intent.

"Haa!" The middle aged man cried out angrily, the bloodlust flashing in his eyes. His left hand curled into a fist, and shot it out toward Jian Chen, bringing a bitter cold wind along with it.

Jian Chen's eyes flashed coldly as he sneered. Against the middle aged man's strong fist, he wouldn't run; instead, Jian Chen would raise his own fist without fear.

"Bang!"

The fists collided against each other with a loud bang. At the moment of contact, a powerful shock wave came out from between the two and affected everything in all directions. Under this almost invisible force of strength, the surrounding trees nearby the two combatants began to sway. Even some of the weeds nearby were immediately flattened to the ground.

As for the two fighters, the force of their blows caused a powerful aftershock that forced the two to retreat a few steps. Finally, at a distance of 10m, the warrior was swaying back and forth while waiting for the opponent.

The middle aged man looked at Jian Chen with an intense glare, “Youngster, you’re quite fast, I’ll take great pleasure in disposing of you.”

The remaining Great Saint mercenaries began to gather behind the middle aged man. Each one of them snarled at Jian Chen with an angry look.

Jian Chen stared coldly at the group of mercenaries without saying a word. Since the Silver Striped Golden Snake was now discovered by them, Jian Chen had no other choice but to silence them. With the experiences from his previous world, Jian Chen wasn’t some new inexperienced youth; he knew that if the news about the Silver Striped Golden Snake were to leak out, then it would bring him an endless amount of trouble since the snake was a very precious source of profit. Many of the major wealthy clans would go to war in order to obtain the Silver Striped Golden Snake. If he were to come across those clans, it would be even worse than his current troubles with the Hua Yun Sect, so this was something that Jian Chen wanted to avoid at all costs. Thus, with this chance, Jian Chen definitely wanted to kill the mercenaries here to stop the rumours before they started.

There were only 11 mercenaries left in the group aside from the middle aged Saint Master. Another man that looked to be 30 years old had also possessed near Saint Master strength. Amongst this mercenary group, it was only that thirty year old man and middle aged man that could give threaten Jian Chen.

Seeing that Jian Chen wasn’t talking, the middle aged man spoke

out loud, “My fellow brothers, attack with me! If we kill him, not only will our dead comrades be avenged, but that Silver Striped Golden Snake will be ours! If we can take that Silver Striped Golden Snake, then we will no longer have to risk our lives in the Magical Beast Mountain Range in order to earn a profit!”

With that, the middle aged man charged towards Jian Chen, with the rest of the mercenaries following right behind him.

Jian Chen still didn’t say anything, but the fighting spirit within his heart had unconsciously reached a high point. Raising the Light Wind Sword, Jian Chen activated his Profound Steps and flew towards the group of mercenaries.

“Ha!” Seeing the charging Jian Chen, the middle aged man’s eyes revealed the killing intent within them. He brought his great sword high up into the air to prepare for splitting Jian Chen’s head in two later.

Jian Chen sneered once more; he had no wish to meet with the middle aged man. Altering his path, he slid by the man and continued onwards to fight the weaker mercenaries.

But the middle aged man had already taken a loss before from the very same tactics. He could only see the great sword suddenly change angles in midair as the path was changed with only brute force. Afterwards, the great sword followed behind Jian Chen, swept past his shadow, then continued to slash horizontally toward Jian Chen.

The great sword was definitely fast as well. As it traveled towards Jian Chen's back, it carried about a strong gust of wind that immediately cut into Jian Chen's waist without obstruction.

However there were no signs of a smile on the middle aged man's face. Instead, his gaze hardened as he realized Jian Chen's body gradually disappeared. "Mirror image!" He growled.

Chapter 94: Annihilating Everyone

Avoiding the middle-aged man's great sword, Jian Chen appeared in front of the other mercenaries with his Light Wind Sword, stabbing out multiple times in unbroken succession. At the same time, the mercenaries raised their Saint Weapons one after another to swing at him.

“Ding ding ding!”

The noise of many weapons colliding could be heard. In a brief moment, Jian Chen used an unimaginably fast speed to slash out dozens of times, causing the Saint Weapons that the mercenaries attacked him with to deviate from their original trajectories. Afterwards, Jian Chen's actions contained no hesitation as the Light Wind Sword in his hand emitted an indistinct sword glow. Taking advantage of the moment where the mercenaries were trying to bring their Saint Weapons in their hands back under control, the Light Wind Sword once again transformed into dozens of silvery white flashes that pierced outwards.

“Pf!” “Pf!” “Pf!”

In that short moment, Jian Chen's Light Wind Sword stabbed out three times, each one accurately hitting the throats of three different mercenaries. Their bodies went rigid immediately as their throats started to leak blood, dying their necks red. Slowly, their bodies fell to the ground.

At that moment, a sharp sound carrying a strong amount of

power pierced the air, whooshing in from the side. Sensing this strength that suddenly appeared out of nowhere, Jian Chen immediately turned around and shifted toward the side by two meters. But before Jian Chen could get to the side safely, another surge of wind came at Jian Chen and arrived right in front of him in a blink of an eye.

Jian Chen's face didn't change at all as he brought his Light Wind Sword to block the frontal attack.

“Clang!”

A huge sword heavily smashed against Jian Chen's Light Wind Sword, causing Jian Chen to fly back uncontrollably by quite a few meters.

“Whoosh!”

As Jian Chen flew through the air, a long silver spear chased after Jian Chen's heart with an ear piercing whistle.

Sensing that the silver spear had a great amount of Saint Force within it, Jian Chen grew solemn as he saw the second Saint Master had finally taken action.

Jian Chen stamped down onto the ground fiercely, leaving a deep footprint as he forcibly stopped his body from continuously retreating backwards. His right hand shook as his Light Wind Sword slashed at the spear in front of him without fear.

“Ding!”

The tips of the Light Wind Sword and spear collided into each other in midair. Seeing this, Jian Chen’s eyes flashed coldly as an intense amount of Sword Qi escaped from his sword. It transmitted through the spear toward the 30 year old man.

Catching on to what Jian Chen was planning, the 30 year old man sneered. Following after, an enormous amount of Saint Force came flooding out from his body, coursing along the spear toward the Light Wind Sword. It stopped Jian Chen’s Sword Qi in the spear from moving any closer. Immediately afterwards, the Sword Qi momentarily stopped advancing forward due to the collision with the flood of Saint Force that moved like a galloping wild horse. This weakened its advancing speed.

Jian Chen’s eyes flashed dangerously as he began to increase the amount of energy to fight against the man. Immediately, an intense amount of Sword Qi surged outwards, smashing against the Saint Force of the other man without fear.

“Bang!”

As Jian Chen’s unique Sword Qi made contact with the other mercenary’s Saint Force, a loud explosion was heard. The energy from the contact exploded outwards, with the colliding Saint Weapons as the epicenter.

The shock wave caused the two fighters to be blown backwards.

With each step they traveled, the mercenary left a deep footprint from stepping heavily on the ground. However, Jian Chen's body looked incomparably nimble. As his toes lightly made contact with the ground, he swayed momentarily before quickly shaking off that backwards momentum.

However, just as Jian Chen stabilized his body, a fierce force came from behind him and approached his body in a blink of an eye.

Jian Chen's face changed slightly. Just from his recent encounter against that mercenary, he had used up a lot of energy. At the moment, he was lacking some strength, and was unable to gather enough Saint Force to resist the incredibly strong Saint Master's attack from behind him. In a moment of desperation, Jian Chen rolled to the ground to evade, but even so, the great sword had landed a wound on his back, so deep that even the bone could be seen.

"Ha!" Seeing that he now had the upper hand, he raised his sword mercilessly once more to slash at Jian Chen.

Feeling a burning sharp sensation in his back, Jian Chen bit his lip as his left hand hit the floor. His entire body immediately flew upwards. Then, his body slightly twisted to the side, barely dodging the second sword stroke from the man by a hair. However, his Light Wind Sword flashed like a bolt of lightning as it pierced towards the older mercenary at an extremely fast speed.

The older man was alarmed. Since he had just swung his Saint Weapon, it was far too late for him to pull it back and defend

himself. Forced by the desperate situation, the man tilted his head narrowly to dodge the sword piercing towards his throat. However, despite managing to dodge the fatal blow, the sword had still left a small nick on his neck that dripped with blood.

With a grim smile, Jian Chen twisted his wrist to allow his Light Wind Sword to chase after the other man's neck once more, before the man could even react.

Immediately after the silver Light Wind Sword flashed across the man's neck, his face became rigid as blood began to pulsate out of his neck in small waves.

"Y-you..." The man's eyes opened wide as he looked at Jian Chen in disbelief. He strained to lift his hand, finger slowly shaking as it pointed at Jian Chen. It seemed as if he wanted to say something, but the wound on his neck prevented him from doing so. In the end, the man wordlessly collapsed on the ground.

Seeing the dead man, the remaining mercenaries could only be extremely shocked. They began to look at Jian Chen with expressions of extreme dread.

Upon killing the middle aged man, Jian Chen didn't leave any time for the other mercenaries to catch their breaths. With his Light Wind Sword, he began to run towards the remaining people.

Seeing Jian Chen approach, the single remaining Saint Master mercenary moved forward to block him. With a thrust, his long spear immediately disappeared and reappeared in a blur towards

Jian Chen.

The other Great Saint mercenaries had been intimidated by the death of the middle aged Saint Master, and were afraid of charging forward. The idea of retreating had already been planted within their hearts. If not for the other Saint Master level mercenary, then they would have already long since run away.

“Ding ding ding...”

A series of colliding sounds rang throughout the forest as Jian Chen and the 30 year old mercenary exchanged a dozen blows at a lightning fast speed in a brief moment. Now that there were no outside factors, Jian Chen's Sword Qi had swiftly helped him take the advantage and completely suppressed the other person. In the blink of an eye, the youth was forced onto the defensive.

Because Jian Chen's swordplay was far too fast, the 30 year old mercenary didn't dare attack. Instead, he continued defending himself, reacting to Jian Chen's movements. He was afraid that if he were to try to attack, then Jian Chen would be able to swiftly use that moment to kill him before the man could even complete the attack.

Not only that, but Jian Chen was fighting him at close range. The 30 year old mercenary wasn't able to show off the true power of his long spear at such a short distance, so he was left with the feeling of having one arm tied behind his back.

After attaining the Great Saint level, Jian Chen's battle strength

had improved several times over. So with his current strength, he could contend against those a level higher than him on equal footing.

After a dozen high speed blows were exchanged, the two were finally split apart. However, the 30 year old man looked to be in a sorry state as his clothes were completely ruined by this point. A few parts of his body had deep looking wounds, and even his neck had a thin line from where Jian Chen had only barely cut apart the first layer of skin.

As for Jian Chen, besides the single wound on his back, he didn't look very different. The only change was that his face had grown paler.

Staring at Jian Chen with a hardened face, the 30 year old mercenary said, "The enemy is far too strong! I'll stall him while everyone else runs away!" After fighting Jian Chen, the 30 year old mercenary knew how fast and strong Jian Chen was. In the mercenary's heart, he knew that it was possible he wouldn't be leaving here alive, so he had to take the worst plan of action for himself.

He had realized another thing in his heart regarding the situation with the Silver Striped Golden Snake. For the sake of keeping this matter a secret, Jian Chen would definitely kill anyone that tried to leave this place. He wouldn't let anyone spread details about the situation. If it was the mercenary who was in this situation, he would have done the same thing.

This was the rule for survival for the Tian Yuan Continent;

everything was decided by the fist. Whoever was strongest would have the last laugh.

Hearing these words, the remaining mercenaries all started a bit before immediately running away from the area in all directions.

Seeing every mercenary scamper away, Jian Chen's face darkened. He slashed his sword to try to kill the man quickly.

"Ah!" The 30 year old mercenary let loose a battle cry as he moved towards Jian Chen without fear. Because of the speed Jian Chen demonstrated, the man knew that it was unlikely that he would be leaving here alive. Rather than dying with everyone else, he had decided that it was better to use his life to garner some time for everyone else. Once the news of the Silver Striped Golden Snake was leaked out, there would be no shortage of people to avenge him.

"Ding!"

The Light Wind Sword collided with the long spear once again, causing sparks to fly out between the two. Then, under the 30 year old mercenary's control, the sword was flipped on top of the spear and was immediately sent flying into the air as he performed a move on instinct.

At this, the man looked on with shock. However, a joyous look soon appeared on his face as he immediately manipulated the spear to stab straight towards Jian Chen's throat.

Jian Chen smiled in disdain as his palms suddenly filled with very strong Saint Force. Both palms disappeared into a blur, and his hands blurred as they shot out to grab onto the spear shaft tightly.

At the same time, the Light Wind Sword that had been knocked into the air suddenly stopped, as it began to pulse out a shroud of Sword Qi that enveloped the sword. With a large glow, the Light Wind Sword traveled through the air quickly, like a flash of light, appearing as if it could cut open a space in the air. With an ear piercing whistle, the sword bore through the man's throat, disappearing into the nearby forest area.

“Ah!”

“Ah!”

Suddenly, the loud cries of a few people could be heard from within the forests.

The Soul Sword was Jian Chen's last resort. Until it was the final moment, Jian Chen would not use it easily.

Chapter 95: Pitiful Profit

Using the Soul Sword, Jian Chen had caught the Saint Master off guard and killed him. The other mercenaries who had run off in all directions to escape had fallen one after another to Jian Chen's sword.

The silver glow from the sword flashed as it shot towards Jian Chen. Holding his hand into the air, the sword immediately returned to its rightful place in his hands. As it smacked into his palms, a fierce amount of Sword Qi briefly shot out from the sword.

A few moments after the Light Wind Sword returned to Jian Chen, the intense atmosphere coming from the sword suddenly disappeared without a trace. Soon after, the Light Wind Sword also slowly disappeared.

"Hu..." Jian Chen let out a long breath of air. He had already fought two battles in a row; this wasn't an easy feat to do. After killing the Silver Striped Golden Snake and then killing the two Saint Master mercenaries, Jian Chen's internal Saint Force was all but gone. If it wasn't for the fact that his Azulet Sword Law was a unique technique, his Saint Force would not have gained so many mystical effects. Without it, Jian Chen would have been unable to kill the Silver Striped Golden Snake, let alone fight another battle after it.

Jian Chen shifted his body. Just as he began to move, the wound on his back immediately seared with hot pain. The muscles on Jian Chen's face twitched a few times due to the strong feeling of pain.

“This really hurts!” Jian Chen hissed under his breath. Wanting to move, his powerful Soul gathered a large amount of the Light Saint Force from the World Essence towards him. Slowly, a large indistinct white ball of light that had appeared around him began to slowly turn milky white. Although the light was dazzling, it was extremely warm, and did not hurt the eyes at all.

Bathing in the glow of the milky white light, Jian Chen’s figure became so indistinct within the glow that it was hard to see him. Even the deep cut on his back was quickly healing itself under the energy of the Light Saint Force.

Under this Light Saint Force, a comfortable and refreshing feeling spontaneously arose from his chest, and quickly spread throughout his entire body. It bypassed Jian Chen’s self-control, and he could barely hold himself back from ** .

Although he had already used the Light Saint Force before while trying to resist the Silver Striped Golden Snake’s venom, his attention had been stretched thinly at that time, so he hadn’t noticed the feeling of happiness the Light Saint Force had brought to him. But now that he could fully focus, Jian Chen finally realized how much of a pleasure the Light Saint Force could give.

The Light Saint Force continued on for a while before gradually disappearing, showing Jian Chen’s body once more.

Jian Chen twisted his arm behind his back to feel the wound that was previously there, but he could only feel smooth skin. Although

the shirt he was wearing was moist with blood, he didn't feel any type of pain, and not a hint of a scar could be found.

Nodding his head in satisfaction, Jian Chen began to smile at the miraculous results the light Saint Force had shown. With a skill like this, Jian Chen's ability to save his own life would be even more bountiful on the Tian Yuan Continent from now on.

Just then, a dizzy sensation struck Jian Chen as the world seemed to sway twice for him. The dizzy spell was over in a moment only to be replaced with a wave of exhaustion. At that moment, Jian Chen felt that he had not slept for a whole day and night, and was in a very serious state of weariness. Jian Chen wanted to just find a bed and sleep in it right then.

“What a pity, the Soul Sword and the light Saint Force brings about such a high energy consumption. Right now my soul is evidently all used up.” Jian Chen gloomily sighed to himself. He knew that in the future, he would have to refrain from using the Soul Sword and light Saint Force too much. Otherwise, if he ran out of soul in the future, it would majorly affect his fighting strength.

Fortunately, while his soul was for the most part exhausted, it was not at a critical point yet, so his fighting strength was not impacted by that much.

Taking out an intact set of clothes from within his Space Belt, Jian Chen looked at the few mercenaries on the ground. Looking at the Space Belts on their waists, anticipation flashed through Jian Chen's eyes.

“I hope there’s a few good things in them.” Jian Chen thought to himself. On the Tian Yuan Continent, a majority of people generally put all of their valuables within their Space Belts. It could be said that a single Space Belt could contain a person’s life savings. Of course, many weaker mercenaries were very poor, and so they wouldn’t have much in their Space Belts.

Walking past the mercenaries without touching their Space Belts, Jian Chen quickly walked up to the Silver Striped Golden Snake and put it in his Space Ring.

Since the Silver Striped Golden Snake was huge, it had taken Jian Chen the same amount of time it took for a candle wick to burn to store the snake in the Space Ring. Placing the Space Ring within the folds of his inner robes once more, Jian Chen let loose a breath in relaxation as an inconcealable feeling of joy took hold.

“An unpoisonable body!” Recollections of the good benefits of the Ten Thousand Immunity came flashing back into Jian Chen’s head. Right now, he had the body of the Silver Striped Golden Snake. And although he had swallowed a good amount of the snake’s blood, the rest of it was still within the body of the snake. It could be said that given enough time, Jian Chen could take the Silver Striped Golden Snake’s blood and gall bladder and refine them to gain an unpoisonable body.

Slowly calming down his heart, Jian Chen walked towards the bodies of the mercenaries once more and removed their Space Belts. Making sure they didn’t have any additional items, he departed from the area and disappeared into the forest.

Once Jian Chen was far enough, he found an empty spot to sit down with his legs crossed.. He then took out the 20 Space Belts, and began to look through them.

The items within the Space Belts were numerous; a good majority of them were essentials that were needed to survive within the Tian Yuan Continent. Comforters, tents, food and water accounted for half of the items, while the rest were all items of little worth. There were pitiful amounts of silver and copper coins stacked on top of each other within the Space Belts, but Jian Chen did not feel inclined to take such a trifle amount.

After going through quite a few of the Space Belts, Jian Chen still couldn't find any items of value. The Space Belts only had items for everyday use like bandages and herbs—there wasn't even a single Class 1 Monster Core to be seen.

Jian Chen didn't have a surprised look on his face, since he knew that these mercenaries were here in the Magical Beast Mountain Range to earn a profit in the first place. To be trying to earn money in such a place could only mean that they were poor; the most valuable items they could possibly have would be a few low leveled monster cores.

After going through half of the Space Belts, Jian Chen finally found one that had a small pile of around a dozen monster cores, but they were all pretty much Class 1 or Class 2.

Taking the monster cores from the Space Belt, Jian Chen

continued to look through the rest of the Space Belts.

Quickly, Jian Chen had finished looking through the 20 Space Belts and casually tossed them to the side. Turning his head back to look at the small pile of monster cores and money, Jian Chen couldn't help but have a look of helplessness.

From the 20 Space Belts, he had only collected around 20 monster cores and almost 100 Gold Coins. Among those 20 monster cores, there was a single Class 3 Monster Core, 6 Class 2 Monster Cores, and the rest were only Class 1 Monster Cores.

Not knowing if he should laugh or cry, Jian Chen shook his head and said with a bitter smile, "Isn't this profit way too low? There were two Saint Masters within the group and yet they still have only this pitiful amount of monster cores. I could get more by myself in a single day." Storing the gold coins and monster cores within his own Space Belt, Jian Chen left the area.

The following day, Jian Chen drifted through the depths of the Magical Beast Forest. However after being chased by the Silver Striped Golden Snake, he was already very close to the abyss of the Magical Beast Mountain Range. The majority of the magical beasts here would be at the Class 3 level, and a very few of them would be at the Class 2 level.

Compared to the Great Saint leveled Jian Chen, Class 3 Magical Beasts were no longer as much of a threat as they once were. Although it took some more effort to kill them, the profits here would be greater since there were more Class 3 Magical Beasts than Class 2 Magical Beasts. A single Class 3 Monster Core had the same

amount of energy as ten Class 2 Monster Cores, and even the purity of the energy within the core was better than the Class 2 Monster Core. They were necessary for Jian Chen to use to cultivate, as 3 Class 3 Monster Cores would most likely take him the entire night with his terribly fast rate of consumption.

In the blink of an eye, Jian Chen had spent another ten days in the forest where he hunted for magical beasts in the day and cultivated in isolation at night. After those 10 days, Jian Chen's strength had improved by leaps and bounds. Although he was still at the Primary Great Saint level, he could clearly sense that he was not all that far away from the Middle Great Saint level.

During these 10 days, Jian Chen would spend each day walking through the mountains carefully with one of the Class 3 Monster Cores in hand. At one point, Jian Chen had come across a Class 4 Magical Beast, but it was far too strong for him to fight against. After a dozen blows, Jian Chen had escaped while suffering from a serious injury. From that point on, Jian Chen had recognized the strength of a Class 4 Magical Beast, so he continued to fight against Class 3 Magical Beasts instead. Afterwards, whenever he encountered a Class 4 Magical Beast, he would just run away immediately without provoking it.

Chapter 96: A Lucky Encounter With A Woman By The River

Over the course of those 10 days, Jian Chen had hunted many Class 3 Magical Beasts. Although there weren't as many beasts as when he had hunted in Kargath Forest, the profits he had received were still high. He had about 20 Class 3 Monster Cores, which was only a little bit more than how many Class 2 Monster Cores he had. Considering how fast he had initially cultivated the 3 Class 3 Monster Cores from before, he would probably finish cultivating the rest of the cores in around seven days.

What Jian Chen didn't know however, was that since he was traveling alone in the Magical Beast Mountain Range, magical beasts would come upon him more frequently than if he was in a large group of mercenaries. This was because many magical beasts on the mountain range had an extremely sensitive sense of smell and high vigilance. Since they had lived their entire lives on the mountain range, their ability to track footprints was remarkable, and so if they had come across a strong group with many footprints, then the magical beasts would carefully run far away from them. So although the magical beasts did not have any intellect, their honed survival had ingrained themselves deep within their minds.

But if they were to come across a weak or single person that they were sure they could kill and eat, then the previously hiding magical beasts would come out and search for that person. They wouldn't need to use an extraordinary amount of energy to chase after and hunt their prey, so since Jian Chen was by himself in this place, the chance of encountering a magical beast was greatly increased.

If it wasn't for the fact that Jian Chen's "Spirit" was strong enough to detect movements around him, he would have been beaten black and blue by the sneak attacks from some magical beasts.

The next day, the crosslegged Jian Chen finally opened his eyes as he awoke from his cultivation on top of a tree branch, and jumped down onto the ground. Dusting himself off, he took a look at the monster cores he had stored within his Space Belt. During this short amount of time, he had collected a decent amount of monster cores, and even though he had used many cores to cultivate, his Space Ring still had plenty of cores in stock.

"There are still 50 Class 2 Monster Cores and 120 Class 3 Monster Cores." Checking the inventory within the Space Belt, Jian Chen nodded his head in satisfaction. Currently he was using 20 Class 2 Monster Cores to cultivate with per night, and his Space Belt only had enough for two days worth of cultivation at most. All of the other monster cores added together would last for over 10 days.

"Eh, I still have 2 Class 4 Monster Cores; one is from the prize given by Kargath Academy, and another is what father gave to me. Since the Class 4 Monster Core has way more energy inside it than a Class 3 Monster Core has, I don't know how long a single Class 4 Monster Core will last me." Jian Chen thought. He didn't realize that the amount of monster cores within his possession was considered a massive pile of wealth. To Jian Chen, it was just a way to sustain his cultivation for a mere 10 days.

Looking up at the bright sun overhead, he immediately discerned

his location and began to walk off towards the outskirts of the Magical Beast Mountain Range without even stopping to eat breakfast.

By this point, the amount of time Jian Chen had spent in the mountain range was quite long. The monster cores in his Space Ring were more than enough for him to cultivate with for a few days, but the supplies he had on hand were about to run out. So for that reason, Jian Chen needed to return to Wake City to replenish his supplies. Not only that, but he also needed to handle the Silver Striped Golden Snake within his Space Ring; otherwise if left alone long enough, who knew what type of situation would occur? For example, the body might rot away. Jian Chen wasn't too sure about such things, since he hadn't read about them in the books. So for the sake of achieving his goal, Jian Chen wanted to get the Silver Striped Golden Snake matter over with as soon as possible.

Throughout the mountain range was the scent of bloodshed, something magical beasts were especially sensitive to. It would be incredibly unwise if he were to keep the body of the Silver Striped Golden Snake here, so Jian Chen decided to take it back to Wake City and plan from there.

The Magical Beast Mountain Range had plenty of dense tall grass and just as many swamps. It was hard to detect them just by looking, but as Jian Chen traveled on the road, he kept an eye out everywhere. During the past days he had spent in the mountain range, he had already sunk into the swamps a few times before ultimately escaping from them.

Under the guidance of the blazing sun, Jian Chen managed to

leave the Magical Beast Mountain Range without deviating from the path too much. After walking for two days, he finally exited the depths of the mountain range and entered the flat lands of the forest. Within those two days, Jian Chen's Space Belt had gained even more Class 2 Monster Cores.

Taking in a deep breath of the fresh air within the forest, Jian Chen tilted his head to look at the clothes he had fashioned from animal hides with a grim smile. With his current appearance, he looked like a beggar. It was a shame that there wasn't much water within the mountain range, making it impossible for Jian Chen to wash the stink off of himself.

Jian Chen hadn't forgotten about the river at the outskirts of the forest. Throwing off his animal hide clothes, he leapt into the depths of the water and began to cleanse himself of the grime he had collected.

The amount of body odor and dirt he had amassed over the past days had already covered his body like armor, making him feel sick everytime he moved. He wasn't comfortable at all with the sticky yet greasy feeling on his skin, but he had felt restraint while in the Magical Beast Mountain Range. Yet as soon as the river came into view, he had immediately thrown off that restraint and leapt into the water.

Jian Chen wrapped the Space Belt around his neck as he began to knead at his entire body. His arms continued to rub everywhere as the water nearby him began turn black with contamination.

Even after washing himself in the river, he didn't leave the

waters. Instead, he floated on his back and slowly closed his eyes, allowing the river to wash over him. For the first time in a long time, his mind was at rest as he relaxed under the pleasure of the icy cold waters. The past few days had been taxing on his mind, as he traveled within the mountain range. Now that his mind was at rest, the very depths of his soul felt free, letting Jian Chen finally sleep in peace.

Jian Chen closed his eyes as he laid back in the water and took a gentle bath from the cold water from the river and the warm rays from the sun. His naked body bobbed up and down the river as he floated along with the waves.

As the river flowed, he began to float towards the direction of Wake City, letting Jian Chen have a free ride for a while. So while he was traveling for free, he could take in a bit of enjoyment from the ride.

After a while, Jian Chen completely lost track of time. He didn't know how long it had been since he was traveling down the river, but at that moment, Jian Chen's head bumped into something soft. The moment he felt contact, Jian Chen was brought back to awareness and focused on whatever he had hit. Whatever he had hit, it was moving.

“An animal!” Jian Chen thought in his drowsy state of mind. In an instant, he sobered up and reactivated his “Spirit” to an active level. The surrounding environment became known to Jian Chen as he instantly changed from sluggish state to his concentrated state. His previously closed eyes snapped wide open to reveal his bright eyes. Immediately, he flipped his body over from his laid

back position to be on his legs. The water rose to his waist, leaving only the top half of his body above the water.

As he completed that action, the face of a person came into view. It was the face of a woman that could cause a city to fight over her and could even be considered to be a snowy white face of perfection. The five facial features on her face were perfectly matched up to the point that even a picky person wouldn't be able to find a fault within them. She was like a fairy that had descended onto the mortal world.

The woman did not look all that old, roughly around ** years old. Within her sparkling white eyes were beautiful and dark pupils, she sluggishly stared back at Jian Chen's eyes. Below, her considerably big ** were exposed to the air, and were only separated from Jian Chen by a narrow margin.

“What terrible luck! To think that there was a woman taking a bath here.” Jian Chen thought immediately as his face began to darken. Thanks to his previous experiences, he knew just what was happening here.

He didn't think that while drifting away on the river to relax after wandering the Magical Beast Mountain Range, he would stumble across a woman bathing in the very same river he was in.

“Ah!”

Just as Jian Chen realized what was happening, the small eyes of the woman in front of him opened wide as she too realized what

had just happened, and a scream came out of her mouth.

“You stinking scoundrel!”

Her previously sluggish eyes turned red hot with anger and shame as she screamed and swung her arm rapidly at Jian Chen’s chest.

“Bang!”

Before Jian Chen could even react, the woman’s palm had already hit his chest with a muffled sound. Jian Chen was then sent flying backwards over the waters as a small stream of blood came pouring out of his mouth.

Chapter 97: Mysterious Old Man

The palm sent Jian Chen flying backwards into the air by 20 meters before sinking back down into the river. A look of astonishment flashed through Jian Chen's eyes as he felt the strong energy from her hand. That single strike had caused a decent injury on him, as the bones where she had hit started to hurt as if something heavy had smashed into it.

Jian Chen's arm paddled through the water briefly before he leapt into the forests on the opposite side of the river. Hiding behind a broad tree, he used his Saint Force to evaporate the water droplets on him before taking the Space Ring from his necklace. With a simple motion, he pulled out the last intact piece of clothing and put it on.

Just as Jian Chen put on his robes, his already pale face froze momentarily before leaping towards the side in a hurry.

“Bang!”

Just as Jian Chen dodged to the side, the tree he had previously been hiding in exploded into splinters as a tremendous amount of pure Saint Force exploded on over. As it landed where Jian Chen was once at, the dirt around it was sent flying as a huge crater was left behind in the impact zone.

“You scoundrel, to think that you would peek at me taking a bath, I will definitely kill you!”

There was a small mournful tone mixed in within her angry words as her face grew redder by the second in front of Jian Chen. Her jade like white hands carried a blue colored Saint Force before flying at Jian Chen so fast that it whistled through the air.

Feeling the huge amount of Saint Force within her palm, Jian Chen's face changed rapidly and became abnormally solemn. Gathering up the Saint Force within himself, he concentrated it in his right hand and lashed out.

“Bang!”

The two palms collided against each other with a muffled explosion as the shockwave flew out in all directions. Jian Chen was sent flying backwards violently, crashing through various bushes before finally slumping to the ground.

“Pff!” A mouthful of blood splashed out from Jian Chen's mouth and formed a small bloody mist for a brief moment. As it escaped from his mouth, his face grew deathly pale.

With difficulty, Jian Chen tilted his head upwards in disbelief at the woman in front of him. She wasn't too far away from Jian Chen's age and yet she had such an unbelievably strong amount of strength, he had estimated that she possessed Great Saint Master strength at the very least. This was deduced by the fact that Jian Chen knew his own strength like the back of his hand, especially after fighting against Saint Masters while in the Magical Beast Mountain Range. With his current strength, even Saint Masters wouldn't be able to contend against him. So the woman right in front of him was an unbelievably strong opponent that he wasn't

able to defeat with ease with his current strength.

“Great Saint Master!” Jian Chen swallowed nervously. To think that the woman in front of him was actually that strong, Jian Chen couldn’t believe it. In Kargath Academy, where every single gifted individual of Gesun Kingdom was gathered, there were still quite a number of young women of the same age as the woman in front of him that weren’t even able to condense the Saint Weapon to promote into the Saint level.

The woman slowly walked towards Jian Chen with the beauty of an immortal that could almost be said to be unmatched within the world. Her beautiful eyes were filled with shame and indignation, her fury slowly tearing away her charm. Covered with a strong killing intent as she gave the death glare towards Jian Chen, it looked as if she had wanted nothing more but to make mincemeat out of him.

The woman wore a pink leather robe that was rather messy. It was clear to see that she had thrown it on quickly without sparing enough time to smooth herself out. Her long hair was draped behind her shoulder and clung to her waist as water droplets slowly made contact with her robes. With her pink slippers that made no sound as she walked, the lady walked towards Jian Chen slowly with a blue colored sword in hand. Seeing the sword with such a color, Jian Chen’s face changed.

With difficulty, Jian Chen slowly crawled up from the ground as his right hand began to tremble. The woman was surely very strong, in a single blow, Jian Chen’s right arm had already suffered from such a critical blow.

Controlling the light Saint Force within the air, Jian Chen had made sure that the healing effects of the light Saint Force couldn't be seen by his opponent first. When it came to the special attribute that was the light Saint Force, he did not want anyone to know about the milky white glow or healing abilities.

“Hold on, miss! This was just a misunderstanding, I had no intentions on peeking on the miss taking a bath!” Jian Chen laughed, the power of the lady's strength had amazed him.

“You scoundrel, just shut up for me!” The woman's beautiful face turned ashen as she heard Jian Chen. It was clear to see that she was not feeling better, and so with a single stride, her pink shoe lashed out at Jian Chen's groin.

Jian Chen's body swayed to the side by this and dodged it by a narrow margin. Soon after that moment, she turned around and chopped at Jian Chen with her blue colored sword.

The blue sword was traveling fast, and in a blink of an eye, it was already by Jian Chen's figure. Seeing this, Jian Chen began to turn around but despite this, there was still a large sword wound that appeared on Jian Chen's chest. Blood began to fly out like a fountain as it flowed from his body violently; in a flash, Jian Chen's newest pair of clothing had been dyed red with blood.

Unable to realize he was cut, a burning sensation began to swell up within Jian Chen as he realized there was pain happening. Quickly, he began to gain some distance from her while letting the

slender form of the Light Wind Sword appear within his hand. Although Jian Chen had chanced upon the sight of her naked body, this was not on purpose. He had already apologized three or four times, but the lady was still so angry and calling for his death, this brought about no small amount of anger from her.

The young woman did not plan on letting Jian Chen go at all and chased after him.

Her blue sword carried a type of Saint Force that seemed to sound like waves as it slashed towards Jian Chen.

Jian Chen let loose a groan as his eyes flashed with an icy cold glare. Despite the lady being stronger, he wasn't the type of person to sit around and wait to be captured. With the wave of his hand, the Light Wind Sword sprung into action. In a streak of silver, the sword attacked at the throat of the would be murderer.

The sword was already going as fast as it possibly could, but the strength of his opponent wasn't so great that he would not dare try to block the attack. He would do whatever it takes to win, even if his opponent was a girl, Jian Chen didn't hesitate at all.

Just as the blue sword was about to make contact with Jian Chen again, he twisted his body and caused the sword to narrowly scrape against his armpit. Jian Chen on the other hand already had his sword pointed at her throat.

At that moment, the lady let loose an expression full of panic as she gave a small shout. Immediately turning his neck, she had dodged Jian Chen's stab at her throat, but despite all that, there was a thin line of blood that leaked out from the small wound the

sword had made.

Feeling a small pain in her neck, the lady had a small expression of panic as her beautiful eyes finally began to reveal the tiniest amount of fear.

Seeing this, Jian Chen began to smile inwardly. Although the woman was strong, she did not have enough combat experience, so in this fight, she was at a disadvantage.

However, Jian Chen didn't plan on letting the woman go either. Feeling the sharp burning pain inflicted onto him by her, Jian Chen's Light Wind Sword became indistinct as it chased after the woman.

The woman's face grew even more panicked as the Light Wind Sword began to pierce through her body. Suddenly, the woman's body suddenly disappeared from Jian Chen's line of sight before reappearing 10 meters away for some strange reason, as if it was some sort of magic trick.

Jian Chen's heart trembled as he watched the girl reappear 10 meters away from him. But when he saw that the girl's face was paling, it looked like it had taken a great amount of energy to use such a fast movement technique.

"Could it be this is a special type of battle skill?!" Jian Chen thought.

“You scoundrel, to think you would raise your hand against a woman, this one will not let you go!”

To be put in such a state by a weaker person, the girl was furious. After yelling at Jian Chen, the blue colored sword in her hand began to glow brighter as all of the Saint Force within her surged out and pulsed around the sword.

The woman raised her sword and yelled, “First Form of the Imperial Water Arts–Water Dragon Strike!” As she spoke, the concentrated amount of Saint Force within her sword took on the form of a dragon almost instantaneously before breaking away from the sword and charged at Jian Chen.

Jian Chen’s face changed the very moment he saw the blurry form of the dragon come out from the sword. When the dragon came into view, Jian Chen had felt a strong sense of pressure, making him feel like he was carrying a thousand pound rock on his back. Just breathing was already a heavy task, let alone dodging.

His face changed even more drastically as he realized his current situation. The only way to defend himself against this water dragon was to dodge, but he was incapable of doing so. He knew that the amount of Saint Force within the water dragon was strong enough that he wouldn’t be able to take it without it inflicting serious damage.

“Such a threatening person, don’t blame me if I treat you badly!” Jian Chen’s eyes glinted dangerously as Sword Qi began to swirl around his sword once more. Once fully enveloped, the sword lifted off from Jian Chen’s hands and shot towards the woman at

such a speed that even the naked eye would have difficulty spotting it. When the woman saw the sword coming at her, the wound on her neck began to sting faintly.

The lady grew pale with fright, the secret technique she had used to dodge Jian Chen's blow earlier had taken up a lot of energy as well as with the water dragon. Right now her internal Saint Force was practically empty, so she wasn't able to dodge the sword.

Desperately, she commanded the water dragon to come back and block the incoming sword. Immediately, the water dragon turned around and chased after the Light Wind Sword. Opening up its giant jaw, it snapped at the Light Wind Sword.

However, the Light Wind Sword was incomparably faster than the dragon. As the jaws of the water dragon snapped shut, it only tasted air as the sword was now just a meter away from the lady's neck.

“Outrageous, to have the audacity to raise a hand against the young miss!”

At this critical moment, a furious aged man came flying from the skies, shouting in a loud tone that echoed throughout the area. The figure of a large man flew out and stood in front of the woman, blocking the Light Wind Sword.

This was an elderly man around the age of **, with a large build that seemed to have a height of two meters tall. He wore a white robe that had his hair trailing behind him with a jade ring holding

it in place. His sharp eyes with matching white eyebrows had made him look like a very sharp individual.

Seeing the Light Wind Sword travel towards him, the elderly man couldn't help but have a look of disdain. With a sneer, he lifted his powerful looking right arm into the air and caught the blade in between his two fingers. Despite the strong amount of Sword Qi, it had not damaged the elderly man at all.

Right after, the elder waved his other arm at the incoming water dragon, causing it to stop suddenly. In the next moment, the water dragon started to dissipate before dispersing into the Qi of the world.

“Uncle Feng, help me kill him quickly!” Seeing the arrival of the elderly man, the woman's face no longer had a look of terror, instead, the lovely tone returned to her speech as she spoke angrily as if she was wronged by Jian Chen.

The elderly man didn't pay attention to her, instead, his eyes gazed at the Light Wind Sword that was stopped by him with a small amount of astonishment. Tilting his head to look at Jian Chen, he said, “What is your name, and who is your master?”

Chapter 98: Another Heavy Loss

“Uncle Feng, what nonsense are you spouting at him? Help me kill him!” The girl cried out behind him with a furious glare in her eyes. Already, her eyes were tearing up from the thought that Jian Chen had seen her body in its full glory. Indeed, just thinking about how she was naked in front of Jian Chen had caused her to be angry beyond belief, causing her to also feel wronged. This was the first time since she was born that she was seen by a man like this, and it was by a stranger. For the conservative lady, this type of outcome was worse than death.

“Haha, young miss, although your uncle Feng is unwilling to help out, then let your uncle Yun come help teach this daring bully a lesson.” At that moment, another voice came into the clearing as another white robed elderly man came into view. Appearing in front of Jian Chen, he waved his fist for a brief moment before striking at Jian Chen’s chest.

The elder’s strength was unbelievably profound, in that one fist, Jian Chen didn’t doubt that it was extremely strong. Immediately dodging towards the side, Jian Chen suddenly felt a large amount of pressure on his body. The pressure was so large that it felt as if his entire body was burdened with a thousand pound weight, or even a mountain. Breathing was already a difficult task, his entire body felt like it was about to be crushed.

Just at the moment when the pressure was at its heaviest, the azure and violet glow in his dantian began to flicker rapidly. However, while his dantian was undergoing such a state, Jian Chen himself did not notice.

“Old man Yun, hold on a moment!” The first elder named Uncle Feng by the lady cried out as his face changed rapidly.

Unfortunately, he had spoken too late. The one named Uncle Yun looked at his fist as it struck Jian Chen’s chest precisely.

A mouthful of blood escaped his mouth as he felt his internal organs get damaged, the elder had smashed Jian Chen’s chest hard enough to leave a dent in it. Not only did the elder break Jian Chen’s bones where he was hit, but even his internal organs were just as heavily damaged.

In the moment the elder had attacked Jian Chen, the weak azure and violet glow flickered as it made contact with the elder’s palm before instantly disappearing. Jian Chen on the other hand was sent flying back.

“Yi!” The elder’s face changed as he gave a small start. Looking at Jian Chen fly into the air with an flabbergasted face, his eyes contained a glint of disbelief and astonishment.

Jian Chen flew 30 meters into the air before crashing into the ground with a large bang. As he laid on the ground, he spat out a large mouthful of blood as he felt the pain from his ruptured organs. Already his face was as white as a sheet of paper from the lack of blood, even his face was lax.

Seeing Jian Chen barely alive, the one named Uncle Yun started to blink slowly before opening his mouth to say, “Youngster, you

have such a strong vitality if you can take one of my blows without dying. Fine then, today I will let you go.” With that said, the one called Uncle Yun walked back towards the woman.

“Ai, I hope there won’t be anymore disturbances.” The elder behind the woman said. The one called Uncle Feng waved his hand and sent the Light Wind Sword stuck between his fingers back towards Jian Chen. As it made contact with him, it disappeared from sight.

“Young miss, let us leave now.” The one named Uncle Feng said loudly as a large flying magical beast descended, landing near the three.

The woman’s anger wasn’t completely satisfied however. Turning her head back, she said, “Uncle Feng, that person isn’t dead yet, that won’t do. I want him dead today.” She walked towards Jian Chen with her sword ready to strike, it was clear that she did not want Jian Chen to get away with seeing her bathe.

“Young miss, don’t make such trouble.” Uncle Feng stood in front to block the girl from moving closer to Jian Chen.

“Uncle Feng!” The woman argued. She had still felt wronged to the point of tearing in the eyes, almost ready to cry at any moment.

“Young miss, don’t be so unruly. It’s getting late, so we should get going now.” The elder behind her spoke flatly. With a wave of his hands, a large ball of Saint Force enveloped the lady and placed

her on top of the flying magical beast.

On top of the flying magical beast, the lady stamped her feet in anger at the elder who put her there, “Uncle Yun, why aren’t you spoiling Luan Er?”

The two elders looked at each other in the eye with a look of helplessness. Stepping onto the flying magical beast, they immediately took off from the ground with a large gust of wind, sending them flying into the horizon.

In midair, the lady stood on top of the back of the flying magical beast and glared down at the rapidly shrinking figure of Jian Chen. In her eyes was a look of anger that would never dissipate.

“Uncle Feng, Uncle Yun, what is going on with you two? How could you let that scoundrel go?” She stamped her foot in angry grievance. The mist in her eyes had already become tears that threatened to fall off of her eyelashes.

Hearing that, the one named Uncle Feng sighed, judging by how wet and disorderly her hair was, he already knew what had happened to her.

“Young miss, that man is quite complicated. Right now the clan is under a great deal of pressure, at this critical moment, it is best to avoid to make new enemies just in case they bring a new source of trouble to the clan.” Uncle Feng said helplessly.

“Uncle Feng, since when were you a coward afraid of death? That scoundrel’s strength was weak, how could you think that he could be a threat to our clan?” The lady said angrily.

“Young miss, that man really isn’t simple, it’s best not to offend anyone. Although his power is quite weak, but the person behind him is definitely strong.” Said the one who first struck out at Jian Chen, Uncle Yun with a solemn but worried face. Then, he lifted his cloth-wrapped hand to show the two deep wounds on his right hand. Although the blood had stopped, the elder’s right hand could still be seen as having two wounds that went from the hollow of his palm to the back of it as if a sword had cut through it.

When the lady saw the injured hand of the elder, her cherry red lips opened wide along with her eyes in disbelief. “Uncle Yun! You’re...you’re injured!” She cried out in astonishment.

The one named Uncle Feng started before saying, “Old man Yun, how unexpected for you to be injured.”

Uncle Yun nodded his head slowly, “This wound was given to me by that 20 year old youth.”

“How is this possible, Uncle Yun. You have to be joking. The scoundrel’s strength wasn’t strong at all, if he couldn’t even beat me, how would he be able to harm you?” She bounded forward in shock.

“Old man Yun, how did you get such a wound like this?” Uncle Feng said with doubt.

Uncle Yun could only look back at the other with a blank face, “I don’t know that either. When I attacked him earlier, I felt a pain in my palm and then I saw the wound. Whatever had hurt me, I don’t know.”

Hearing this, Uncle Yun gave a gasp, “This youngster really is complicated. From the moment I saw his Saint Weapon, I knew that it would stand out from the masses; his Saint Weapon wasn’t like everyone else’s. Whatever happened within him, it made his Saint Weapon even stronger, even his strength isn’t matching up with what is expected.”

The woman was left stunned by Uncle Yun’s words.

“It’s a good thing we didn’t kill him, otherwise the one standing behind him would be a huge bother for our clan if they stepped forward. Right now we can only hope the ones supporting him won’t be too strong, or that this person had only inherited some techniques from his ancestors.”

.....

By the riverside, Jian Chen laid down on the ground with blood dying his clothes red. The elder’s fist had caused serious damage to Jian Chen, the bones in his chest were crushed, and his organs suffered extreme trauma. Right now, aside from being fully conscious, Jian Chen was powerless to move. It could be said that ever since Jian Chen was born, this was the most serious damage he had suffered. If it was not for the fact he had used a unique way

to cultivate and had refined his body in ways that far outstripped others, the elder's hand would have sent him to a messy death.

The Light Saint Force from the World Essence began to surge and condense towards Jian Chen. Quickly, Jian Chen was enveloped within the milky white glow and had it absorbed into every single pore of his body. With that, Jian Chen was beginning to recover at a very fast rate.

Chapter 99: Returning To Wake City

The Light Saint Force within the World Essence gathered within Jian Chen and quickly began to heal him. However Jian Chen's wounds were too serious, so even with the miraculous healing effects of the light Saint Force, it took a long time for Jian Chen to recover.

Controlling the light Saint Force had taken up a lot of Jian Chen's spirit. After four hours, he had used up almost all of his spirit, causing him to stop. Right now, he was suffering from major blood loss as well as a dizzying headache. He was also very exhausted and desired sleep, it was almost as if he hadn't slept for three days and three nights and was almost unconscious.

After healing himself for four hours, his inner body was healed by a little less than half his original strength. His inner organs had been treated by the Light Saint Force, and although it wasn't completely healed, the injured parts had been regrown. All that was left was the fractured bones on his chest that were slightly more troublesome than his organs.

Regarding the serious injuries on his chest, the fractured bones had already pierced into his flesh. So whenever Jian Chen moved even the tiniest bit, the wounds on his chest would make Jian Chen feel even more pain. The pain was so intense that the signals his brain was receiving were practically torturing it. Slowly reclining on the grass, he closed his eyes and slowly started to use the rest of his spirit to heal himself. However, Jian Chen had fortunately memorized the entirety of the contents of the Azulet Sword Law, the method of "Recuperation", With the "Recuperation" method, he could slowly regain his spirit.

Jian Chen laid there on the grass for a whole day and night. Without moving his body a single time, his eyes had remained closed for just as long.

The time quickly passed by as the afternoon approached. The blazing hot rays of the sun were slowly becoming moderately warm as it left the mountains.

At that moment, the stone like Jian Chen finally opened his eyes. After a full day and night of healing, the spirit he had used up was finally replenished.

Seeing the color of the sky, Jian Chen didn't hesitate for a moment and began to gather the light Saint Force. Rapidly, he began to heal his chest once more.

As the light Saint Force entered his chest, pieces of the fractured bones had begun to reattach themselves and heal. For another four hours without stopping, Jian Chen's spirit was finally used up once more.

However, after four hours of healing, Jian Chen's chest was finally fully recovered. However, Jian Chen's spirit wasn't recovered yet and affected his mobility, so Jian Chen sat back down on the grass cross legged and began to use the recuperation method to recover the lost spirit.

Although it wasn't too far from Wake City, but considering that the use of the Light Saint Force was far too conspicuous with its

dazzling glow and that healing in Wake City was too inconvenient, no one would be able to detect the Light Saint Force except for Radiant Saint Masters. However, who would be able to guarantee that there was a Radiant Saint Master within the vicinity of Wake City? Radiant Saint Masters were rare within the Tian Yuan Continent, so many people would fail to find and invite one to help themselves. Jian Chen thought that if he were to reveal his ability to use Light Saint Force like Radiant Saint Masters, then he would get no small amount of glory and would never have to worry about a shortage of monster cores. However, Jian Chen didn't want to reveal that he could mimic the Radiant Saint Master's ability to use Light Saint Force because his intuition told him that if he were to keep it a secret for now, then it would definitely help him out in the future.

After three full days of continuous healing, Jian Chen's body was finally back to full health. Upon getting up, he immediately left for the official road back to Wake City.

The official road was filled with caravans escorted by groups of armed yet blood soaked mercenaries. Although Jian Chen was a lone traveler, no one paid extra attention to him. Despite his bloody clothes from the wounds he gained, to every single mercenary within the Tian Yuan Continent, this was a very common sight to see. Practically every mercenary had seen these types of things every day.

Walking on the roadway, Jian Chen thought back to the event from three days ago, especially the beautiful girl and her naked body that had appeared right in front of him. This was a sight that had left a deep effect on Jian Chen because even in his previous life, he had never had an experience like it before. Three days ago

was the first time he had ever seen the jade like body of a woman to this extent, and this girl's body was almost as if it belonged to an Immortal.

However, when Jian Chen had thought about the lady's gigantic strength, his heart still couldn't quite believe it. The girl looked to be 18 years old, 20 years old at the oldest. The age difference between her and Jian Chen was almost non existent, but to be a Great Saint Master at this age, Jian Chen could only blush with shame at her innate talent.

Soon enough, Jian Chen entered Wake City and waited for the city guards to come and inspect him. Since he had the image of a injured and bloody survivor, there was no monetary tax to enter the city. Although the guards were greedy for money, their greed was not without morals.

Upon entering Wake City, Jian Chen didn't take a stroll and immediately headed towards an inn. Once he got a room, Jian Chen began to cultivate. Although it had been less than a month ago that he had broken through to become a Great Saint, his strength was still not strong enough to protect himself within the Tian Yuan Continent. Not only did the girl from three days ago make Jian Chen experience defeat, but she had also made him realize how much strength he needed.

After paying for the room, Jian Chen stayed there within the room for 10 days. In those 10 days, Jian Chen hadn't taken a single step out of his room and only used the monster cores in his possession to cultivate. Even for meals he had the inn waitress deliver it straight to his room.

After the 10 days had passed, Jian Chen's strength had made huge improvements. Already reaching the Middle Great Saint tier, the Saint Force within himself was now much stronger than before. Even his Saint Weapon, the Light Wind Sword, had been upgraded and became even harder than before.

With 10 days of cultivation, the Class 3 Monster Cores Jian Chen had were all but gone, leaving Jian Chen with two Class 4 Monster Cores.

Getting off the bed, Jian Chen walked towards the window to look at the sky. Because he had spent so much time cultivating, he was no longer able to distinguish what time it was, and could only rely on the positioning of the sun to get an approximate time.

Right outside, the sun was shining brightly without a cloud in the sky for miles. With the huge red flaming ball in the sky emitting strong heat rays, it signified the start of the afternoon.

“Right now, it should be time to deal with the Silver Striped Golden Snake, I really look forward to the Ten Thousand Immunity.” Jian Chen said as he observed the mass of people outside.

Chapter 100: Ten Thousand Immunity (One)

Jian Chen left the inn and went to the fair to buy a few dozen gourds to store water, as well as a cask large enough to fit a person in it. He also replenished his nearly exhausted supply of essentials for everyday life, as well as for living in the wilderness. Another 20 or so pairs of coarse clothing was purchased as well. After storing all of these within his Space Belt, Jian Chen directly left Wake City, and headed toward the wilderness.

Jian Chen arrived at a deserted grove, and looked around. After confirming there were no people present, he removed a Space Ring from his Space Belt, and retrieved the Silver Striped Golden Snake from the ring. He then removed the dozens of gourds he had just purchased one by one, and neatly placed them on the ground.

Jian Chen's heart uncontrollably leapt up to his throat when he saw the arm-thick and nearly 80 meter long Silver Striped Golden Snake in front of him. A feeling of excitement involuntarily arose from within his heart.

After staring at the Silver Striped Golden Snake for a while, Jian Chen took a deep breath to gradually calm himself down. Afterwards, he slowly walked up to the snake, his Light Wind Sword materializing in his hand.

“Pu!”

Jian Chen pierced his sword straight into the snake's scarred seven-inch area. Immediately afterwards, fresh red blood gushed

out. Without any hesitation, Jian Chen opened one of the gourds as fast as lightning, and placed the opening about as large as a child's fist underneath the snake's body. The gourd directly began to collect that constant flow of blood.

Meanwhile, the strong, pungent smell of greasy blood filled the air, and gradually began to diffuse through the air.

Smelling that continuously diffusing, strong and stinging smell of greasy blood, Jian Chen knit his brows and murmured, "This Silver Striped Golden Snake is indeed worthy of being called a rare and unique beast. I hadn't imagined that the odor of the blood would already be so thick." Jian Chen's tone seemed to be slightly concerned; he was worried that the snake's heavy odor would bring him some kind of trouble.

While Jian Chen was extremely anxious, somewhat impatient, and held much anticipation, all of the blood from the snake's body was finally collected after 2 hours. Half of the dozens of gourds that he had bought were already filled. According to Jian Chen's calculations, the total amount of blood he had collected was around 100 kilograms in weight.

After carefully sealing the blood-filled gourds, Jian Chen placed them all into his Space Belt. Afterwards, he once again stored the snake's body into his Space Belt, and immediately left the area. This Silver Striped Golden Snake's blood's odor had already been diffusing through the air for 2 hours. Although it had become quite faint, Jian Chen still wasn't certain that it wouldn't bring about any mishaps, so the sooner he left, the better.

Although Jian Chen knew that perhaps he was worrying a bit too much, for the sake of minimizing danger, he was still willing to go through such inconveniences.

Jian Chen returned to Wake City. After resting there for 2 days, and hearing of no special news, he once again left. This time, he didn't return to his original location; instead, he arrived at the exact opposite location of where he had been previously. After advancing nearly 20 miles down a path, he finally found a desolate and safe area. He then once again removed the Silver Striped Golden Snake from his belt, and began dissecting the body.

Although he could've dissected the body within the city, the Silver Striped Golden Snake was, after all, not a normal magical beast. Once its body was dissected, that strong odor of its blood would once again permeate the area. Such a unique scent of blood would definitely attract quite a few experts to investigate. With Jian Chen's current level of strength, he was still unable to go up against the many experts located in Wake City.

The dissection of the body went smoothly. Although the defense of the Silver Striped Golden Snake's outer layer of golden snake scales was extremely strong, Jian Chen's current strength had been raised by quite a lot compared to his previous level. Thus, cutting apart the snake's scales only required a small amount of strength.

Jian Chen carefully removed a thumb-sized bloodred object from the snake's stomach. When he lifted it up to his eye level to examine it closer, he couldn't help but smile and murmur to himself, "So this is the Silver Striped Golden Snake's precious

snake gall.” The color of the snake’s gall was completely different from any other snake’s. Normal snake galls had a bluish green and black color, but this Silver Striped Golden Snake’s gall was completely crimson. It looked similar to a red gem.

Jian Chen took out a small jade bottle from his Space Belt, and carefully placed the thumb-sized snake gall into the bottle. This snake gall was extremely important; if he wanted to refine the Ten Thousand Immunity pill, then he’d need quite a few snake galls. This body part’s importance was much more precious than the Silver Striped Golden Snake’s blood.

Soon after, the Silver Striped Golden Snake’s skin had been completely removed by Jian Chen. At the same time, the snake’s appearance drastically changed; it now looked like a long **.

The Silver Striped Golden Snake’s most precious parts were its blood and gall. Its other internal organs and its flesh were also worth considerable amounts, but they weren’t very useful in Jian Chen’s eyes. Afterwards, Jian Chen stored the snake’s carcass back into the Space Ring, intending to proceed with the next steps later.

After finishing up the Silver Striped Golden Snake matter, Jian Chen looked around his surroundings. He hesitated for a bit, and looked indecisive as he seemed to stand there and contemplate for a moment. Finally, Jian Chen bit down and retrieved the large cask that he had prepared earlier, and lightly placed it on the ground. He then continued to retrieve all the blood-filled gourds, and proceed to empty them into the cask.

Jian Chen now planned to refine the Ten Thousand Immunity.

This was because the Silver Striped Golden Snake's blood had too strong of an odor, making it impossible for him to refine it in a city filled with people.

Soon after, all the blood within the gourds had been poured into the large cask, the nearly 100 kilograms worth of blood filling majority of the person-tall cask. Now the strong, stinging smell of blood was emitted from the cask, and circled around the air for a long time without dispersing. Such a large amount of blood collected together made the smell even more dense, and it assaulted Jian Chen's sense of smell, making him almost unable to breathe.

Some special magical beasts' blood was completely different from a normal magical beasts'. The Silver Striped Golden Snake was an example of this.

When Jian Chen had drunk the snake's blood to detoxify himself, Jian Chen had completely ignored its extremely greasy smell since he had been completely focused on curing himself. Thus, he hadn't noticed the snake's blood had had such an intolerable heavy odor back then.